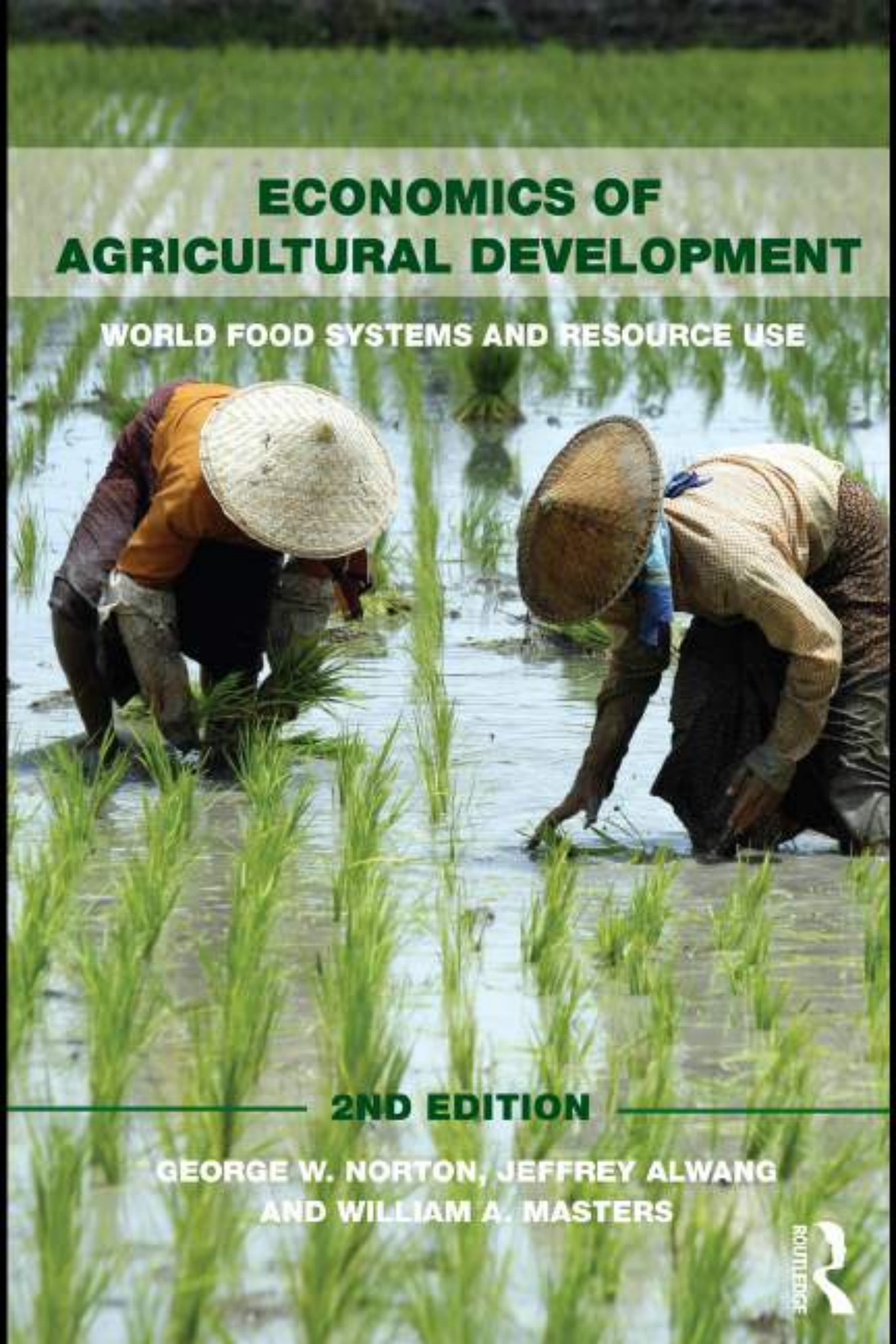
ECONOMICS OF AGRICULTURAL DEVELOPMENT

WORLD FOOD SYSTEMS AND RESOURCE USE



2ND EDITION

GEORGE W. NORTON, JEFFREY ALWANG
AND WILLIAM A. MASTERS

ROUTLEDGE

Economics of Agricultural Development

Economics of Agricultural Development examines the causes, severity, and effects of persistent poverty, rapid population growth, and malnutrition in developing countries. It discusses potential solutions to these problems, and considers the implications of globalization for agriculture, poverty, and the environment.

Areas covered in the book include:

- The sustainability of the natural resource environment
- Gender roles in relation to agriculture and resource use
- The contribution of agricultural technologies
- The importance of agricultural and macroeconomic policies as related to development and trade, and the successes and failures of such policies
- The implications for what might be done in the future to encourage more rapid agricultural and economic development

The globalization of goods, services, and capital for agriculture is fundamental to the future of developing countries and has major implications for the fight against poverty and sustainability of the environment. In recent years, agriculture has once again returned to a position of centre stage as food price volatility has led countries to re-examine their development strategies.

This new edition of the essential textbook in the field builds on the 2006 original and reflects the following developments:

- The increased impact of climate change
- Issues affecting agricultural markets such as bio-fuels, the rise in farm prices, and energy costs
- The move to higher valued agricultural products

This book will be essential reading for undergraduate students seeking to understand the economics of agricultural development and the world food system, including environmental and human consequences of agricultural development, international trade and capital flows.

This book contains a wealth of real world case studies and is now accompanied by a website that includes powerpoint lectures, a photo bank, and a large set of discussion and exam questions.

George W. Norton is Professor of Agricultural and Applied Economics at Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University, Blacksburg, Virginia, USA.

Jeffrey Alwang is Professor of Agricultural and Applied Economics at Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University, Blacksburg, Virginia, USA.

William A. Masters is Professor of Agricultural Economics at Purdue University, West Lafayette, Indiana, USA.

Economics of Agricultural Development

WORLD FOOD SYSTEMS and RESOURCE USE

SECOND EDITION

GEORGE W. NORTON
JEFFREY ALWANG
Virginia Polytechnic Institute
and State University

WILLIAM A. MASTERS
Purdue University

Routledge
LONDON AND NEW YORK

First edition published 2006
Second edition 2010
by Routledge
2 Park Square, Milton Park, Abingdon, Oxon, OX14 4RN

Simultaneously published in the USA and Canada
by Routledge
270 Madison Avenue, New York, NY 10016

Routledge is an imprint of the Taylor & Francis Group, an informa business

This edition published in the Taylor & Francis e-Library, 2010.

To purchase your own copy of this or any of Taylor & Francis or Routledge's
collection of thousands of eBooks please go to www.eBookstore.tandf.co.uk.

© 2006, 2010 George W. Norton, Jeffrey Alwang and William A. Masters

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reprinted or reproduced or utilised in any form or by any electronic, mechanical, or other means, now known or hereafter invented, including photocopying and recording, or in any information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publishers.

British Library Cataloguing in Publication Data
A catalogue record for this book is available from the British Library

Library of Congress Cataloging in Publication Data
Norton, George W.
Economics of agricultural development / by George W. Norton, Jeffrey Alwang, and William A. Masters. — 2nd ed.
p. cm.
Includes bibliographical references and index.
1. Agriculture—Economic aspects. I. Alwang, Jeffrey R. II. Masters, William A. III. Title.
HD1415.N67 2010
338.1—dc22
2009043168

ISBN 0-203-85275-3 Master e-book ISBN

ISBN10: 0-415-49264-5(hbk)
ISBN10: 0-415-49424-9(pbk)
ISBN10: 0-203-85275-3(ebk)

ISBN13: 978-0-415-49264-5(hbk)
ISBN13: 978-0-415-49424-3(pbk)
ISBN13: 978-0-203-85275-0(ebk)

Contents

Preface vii

Part 1. Dimensions of World Food and Development Problems 1
1 — Introduction 3
2 — Poverty, Hunger, and Malnutrition 25
3 — Economics of Food Demand 47
4 — Population 69

Part 2. Development Theories and the Role of Agriculture 87
5 — Economic Transformation and Growth 89
6 — Development Theory and Growth Strategies 112

Part 3. Agricultural Systems and Resource Use 129
7 — Agriculture in Traditional Societies 131
8 — Agricultural Systems and Their Determinants 146
9 — Resource Use and Sustainability 161
10 — Human Resources, Family Structure, and Gender Roles 185

Part 4. Getting Agriculture Moving 205
11 — Theories and Strategies for Agricultural Development 207
12 — Research, Extension, and Education 227
13 — Land and Labor Markets 260
14 — Input and Credit Markets 281
15 — Pricing Policies and Marketing Systems 301

Part 5. Agricultural Development in an Interdependent World 325
16 — Agriculture and International Trade 327
17 — Trade Policies, Negotiations, and Agreements 349
18 — Macroeconomic Policies and Agricultural Development 365
19 — Capital Flows, Foreign Assistance, and Food Aid 393
20 — Lessons and Perspectives 415

Glossary of Selected Terms 429
Authors Cited 435
Works Cited 439
Subject Index 450

Preface

Persistent poverty, rapid population growth, and malnutrition in developing countries are among the most serious issues facing the world today. *Economics of Agricultural Development* examines the causes, severity, and effects of these problems. It identifies potential solutions, and considers the implications of globalization for agriculture, poverty, and the environment. It identifies linkages in the world food system, and stresses how agricultural and economic situations in poor countries affect industrialized nations and vice versa. It focuses on the role that agriculture can play in improving economic and nutritional well-being and how that role might be enhanced. It explores causes and implications of agricultural commodity price volatility.

Much has been learned about the roles of technology, education, international trade and capital flows, agricultural and macroeconomic policies, and rural infrastructure in stimulating agricultural and economic development. In some cases, the same factors can contribute to economic growth and lead to price and income instability or environmental risk. These lessons and other issues are examined in the book using basic tools of economic analysis. The need is stressed for improved information flows to help guide institutional change in light of social, cultural, and political disruptions that occur in the development process.

The challenge in studying the economics of agricultural development is to build a broad view of the problem, and to bring economic theory to bear on specific challenges faced by the rural sector and on means for utilizing agricultural surpluses to further overall economic development. The goal of this book is to help students and other interested practitioners gain an understanding of the agricultural development problem, including the environmental and human consequences of different development paths, and the influence of international trade and capital flows. It is designed to help students develop skills that will enhance their capability to analyze world food and development problems.

This book interprets for undergraduates the economics of development and trade, including the importance of extending economic theory to account for institutions, imperfect information, and the willingness of people to exploit others and to act collectively. This extension provides important insights for development policy and helps explain why some countries develop while others are left behind. The role of the government in promoting broad-based development is explored. The book also covers topics related to sustainability of the environment, gender roles in relation to agriculture and resource use, and the importance of macroeconomic policies as related to development and trade.

This new edition of the book addresses the causes and implications of recent sharp commodity price increases. It contains added discussion of economic issues related to biofuels and climate change and how they affect agriculture in developing countries.

INTENDED AUDIENCE

Economics of Agricultural Development is designed as a comprehensive text for the first course on the economics of world food issues and agricultural development. The book is aimed at undergraduate students, with the only prerequisite a course in introductory economics. Students in undergraduate courses that address world food and agricultural development represent a wide variety of majors. Economic jargon is kept to a minimum and explained where necessary, and the book sequentially builds a base of economic concepts that are used in later chapters to analyze specific development problems. A second audience for the book is those who work for public and private international development organizations.

ORGANIZATION of the BOOK

Agricultural development is important for rural welfare and for overall economic development. Part One of the book considers the many dimensions of the world food – income – population problem in both a human and an economic context. After the severity and dimensions of the problem have been established, Part Two examines the economic transformation experienced by countries as they develop, sources of economic growth, and theories of economic development, including the role of agriculture in those theories. Part Three provides students with an overview of traditional agriculture, agricultural systems and their determinants in developing countries, with particular attention to issues such as environmental sustainability and gender roles. Part Four then identifies agricultural development theories and the technical and

institutional elements required for improving the agricultural sector. It stresses the need to build on and modify current agricultural development theories. Finally, Part Five considers the importance of the international environment, including trade and trade policies, macroeconomic policies, capital flows, and foreign assistance, including food aid. The concluding chapter integrates various development components addressed in the book and discusses future prospects for agricultural development.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

This edition of the book has benefited from the contributions of numerous individuals, including feedback from students in classes at Virginia Tech and Purdue. We thank Laura McCann and Laurian Unnevehr for reviewing an earlier draft as well as proposed revisions. The encouragement and assistance of our colleagues at Virginia Tech and Purdue are gratefully acknowledged. We especially thank Brad Mills, David Orden, Dan Taylor, S.K. DeDatta, Anya McGuirk, Herb Stoevener, Jerry Shively, Sally Thompson, and Wally Tyner. The book has benefited greatly from discussions and interactions on development issues over many years with Phil Pardey, Stan Wood, Paul B. Siegel, Terry Roe, Bill Easter, Dan Sisler, Brady Deaton, Mesfin Bezuneh, and numerous graduate students.

We thank Robert Langham and other editors at Routledge Press for their assistance, and we especially want to thank Mary Holliman of Pocahontas Press in Blacksburg, Virginia, for her invaluable editorial and production assistance. We also thank Daren McGarry, Steve Aultman, Jessica Bayer, Jacob Ricker-Gilbert, and Adam Sparger with assistance on figures and illustrations.

George Norton
Jeffrey Alwang
Will Masters

PART 1

Dimensions of World Food and Development Problems

Rural family in Colombia.

CHAPTER 1

Introduction

> Most hunger is caused by a failure to gain access to the locally available food or to the means to produce food directly.
>
> — C. Peter Timmer, Walter P. Falcon, and Scott R. Pearson[1]

This Chapter

1 Examines the basic dimensions of the world food situation
2 Discusses the meaning of economic development
3 Considers changes that occur during agricultural and economic development

OVERVIEW of the WORLD FOOD PROBLEM

One of the most urgent needs in the world today is to reduce the pervasive problems of hunger and poverty in developing countries. Despite many efforts and some successes, millions of people remain ill-fed, poorly housed, under-employed, and afflicted by a variety of illnesses. These people regularly suffer the pain of watching loved ones die prematurely, often from preventable causes. In many countries, the natural resource base is also being degraded, with potentially serious implications for the livelihoods of future generations.

Why do these problems persist, how severe are they, and what are their causes? What does the globalization of goods, services, and capital mean for agriculture, poverty, and environment around the world? And, how does the situation in poor countries feed back on industrialized nations, and vice versa? An understanding of the fundamental causes of the many problems in poorer countries is essential if solutions are to be recognized and implemented. What role does agriculture play and how might it be enhanced? What can rich countries do to help? How do the policies in developed countries affect developing

[1] C. Peter Timmer, Walter P. Falcon, and Scott R. Pearson, *Food Policy Analysis* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1983), p. 7.

countries? These are some of the questions addressed in this book. Globalization will continue, and a key issue is how to manage it to the betterment of developing and developed countries alike.

Much has been learned over the past several years about the roles of technology, education, international trade and capital flows, agricultural and macroeconomic policies, and rural infrastructure in stimulating agricultural and economic development. In some cases, these same factors can be a two-edged sword: they contribute to economic growth on the one hand, but lead to price and income instability or environmental risk on the other. These lessons and other potential solutions to development problems are examined herein from an economic perspective. The need is stressed for improved information flows to help guide institutional change in light of social, cultural, and political disruptions that occur in the development process.

World Food and Income Situation

Are people hungry because the world does not produce enough food? No. In the aggregate, the world produces a surplus of food. If the world's food supply were evenly divided among the world's population, each person would receive substantially more than the minimum amount of nutrients required for survival. The world is not on the brink of starvation. Population has roughly doubled over the past 40 years, and food production has grown even faster.

If total food supplies are plentiful, why do people die every day from hunger-related causes? At its most basic level, hunger is a poverty problem. Only the poor go hungry. They go hungry because they cannot afford food or cannot produce enough of it themselves. The very poorest groups tend to include: families of the unemployed or underemployed landless laborers; the elderly, handicapped, and orphans; and persons experiencing temporary misfortune due to weather, agricultural pests, or political upheaval. Thus, hunger is for some people a chronic problem and for others a periodic or temporary problem. Many of the poorest live in rural areas.

Hunger is an individual problem related to the distribution of food and income within countries and a national and international problem related to the geographic distribution of food, income, and population. Roughly one-fifth of the world's population (about one billion people) lives on less than $1 per day (about one-half lives on less than $2 per day). These people are found primarily in Asia and Africa. The largest number of poor and hungry live in Asia, although severe hunger and poverty are found in Sub-Saharan Africa and in parts of Latin America. Good strides have been made in reducing global poverty; over the

Many farm workers in Asia earn between one and two dollars per workday.

past 30 years, the proportion of the world's population living on less than $1 per day has been cut by more than half and is now less than 20 percent. However, more remains to be done to alleviate poverty-related problems.

While hunger and poverty are found in every region of the world, Sub-Saharan Africa is the only major region where per-capita food production has failed to at least trend upward for the past 30 years. As Figure 1-1 shows, per capita food production in Africa has stagnated since 1980 and had experienced a downward trend for several years before that time. Latin America and particularly Asia have experienced relatively steady increases. The result has been significant progress in reducing hunger and poverty in the latter two regions, while per-capita calorie availability remains below minimum nutritional standards in many Sub-Saharan countries. Low agricultural productivity (farm output divided by farm inputs), wide variations in yields due to natural, economic, and political causes, and rapid population growth have combined to create a precarious food situation in these countries.

Annual variation in food production is a serious problem, particularly in Sub-Saharan Africa (see Figure 1-1). This variation has caused periodic famines in individual countries, particularly when production problems have been compounded by political upheaval or wars that

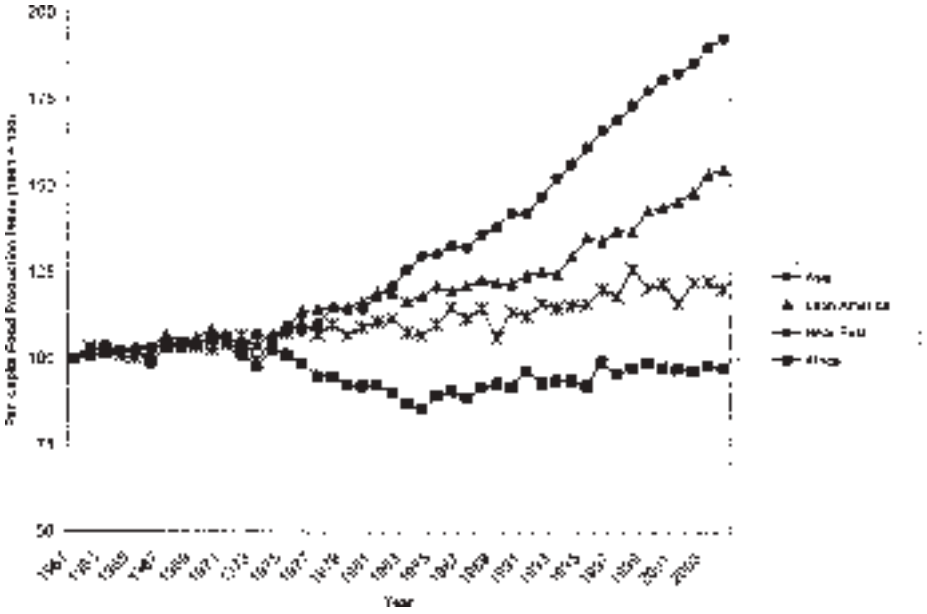


Figure 1-1. Index of per capita food production.
(*Source*: FAOSTAT data, 2005.)

have hindered international relief efforts. Production variability causes wide price swings that reduce food security for millions who are on the margin of being able to purchase food. If the world is to eliminate hunger, it must distinguish among solutions needed for short-term famine relief, those needed to reduce commodity price instability (or its effects), and those needed to reduce long-term or chronic poverty problems.

Food Prices

For many years, for most people in the world, the real price of food fell relative to the prices of other things. The international prices (in nominal or "current" dollars) of maize, rice, and wheat — the world's major food grains — are shown in Figure 1-2. Despite peaks in 1974, 1981, 1996, and 2008, the average prices of all three grains have fluctuated without strong trends for several years. The prices of most other things have risen much more steadily with inflation, so for most people the *relative* (or "constant") price of food has slightly fallen, with exceptions during the peak years. This reduction in the real price of food is both good and bad, because prices affect economic growth and social welfare in a contradictory fashion. Lower food prices benefit consumers and stimulate industrial growth but can lower agricultural producer

incomes and reduce employment of landless workers. To the extent that lower prices reflect lower production costs, impacts on producers may be mitigated. Future food-price trends will depend on the relative importance of *demand* shifts, resulting primarily from changes in population, income, and non-food uses for farm products (such as bio-fuels) compared to *supply* shifts, resulting from a variety of forces, particularly new technologies and climate changes.

Instability in local and world food prices, however, is a serious problem affecting food security and hunger in developing countries. The three grains shown in Figure 1-2 have exhibited sizable year-to-year price variations. This instability was most severe during the 1970s and most recently. Food price fluctuations directly affect the well being of the poor, who spend a high proportion of their income on food. Governments are finding that food price instability increases human suffering and also threatens political stability.

As shown in Figure 1-2, grain prices were higher than normal in 2007–2008. The higher prices were due to a combination of factors that shifted supply and demand, as well as actions by market speculators. Supply factors included such items as adverse weather conditions

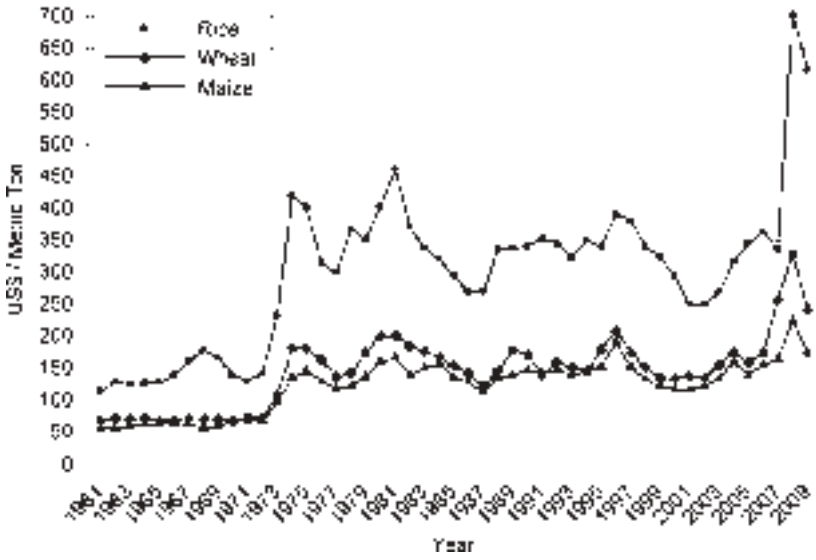


Figure 1-2. World prices of major grains in current dollars. (*Source*: FAOSTAT 2009, for years through 2006 and IMF International Financial Statistics 2009, for years 2007–09.)

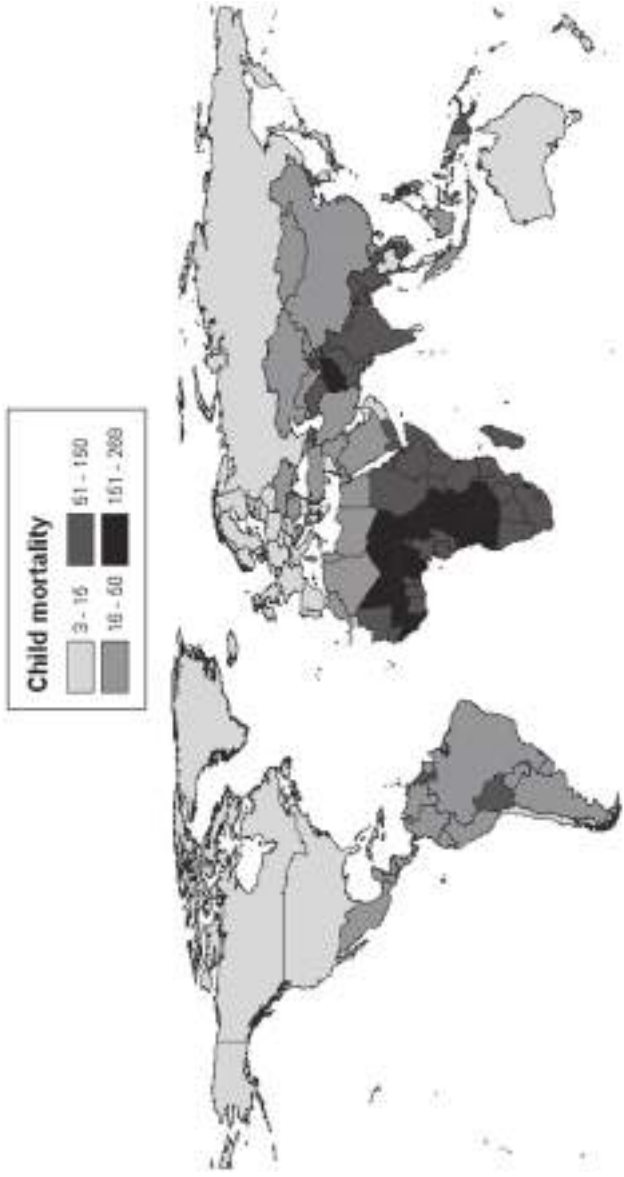
and higher fuel and fertilizer costs, while demand factors included items such as increased demand for grains for bio-fuel use, continued population and income growth in many developing countries, changes in currency values, and policy changes in countries that increased their demand for imported food. Also, speculative investments in commodity markets increased, driving up commodity prices more than basic supply and demand factors alone would have dictated. As the global economy turned down in 2008, speculators eventually reduced these investments, fuel prices dropped, and income growth slowed. Grain supplies also increased, and food prices retreated substantially from their highs of early 2008.

Malnutrition

Hunger is most visible to people in developed countries when a drought or other disaster results in images in the news of children with bloated bellies and bony limbs enduring the pain of extreme hunger. Disturbing as such images are, in a sense they mislead. The less conspicuous but more pernicious problem, in terms of people suffering and dying, is chronic malnutrition. While accurate figures of the number of malnourished in the world are not available, and even good estimates depend on the definition used, a conservative estimate is that roughly 860 million people suffer from chronic or severe malnutrition associated with food deprivation. More than ten million people, many of them young children, die each year from causes related to inadequate food consumption. Increasing per-capita food production has allowed more of the world's population to eat better. But for those in the lower income groups, the situation remains difficult.

Health

People born in developing countries live, on average, 14 years less (in Sub-Saharan Africa, 27 years less) than those born in developed countries. Health problems, often associated with poverty, are responsible for most of the differences in life expectancies. Mortality rates for children under age five are particularly high, often 10–20 times higher than in developed countries (see Figure 1-3). Though countries with high rates of infant mortality are found in all regions, Sub-Saharan African countries are particularly afflicted. The band of high infant mortality stretching from the Atlantic coast across Africa to Somalia on the Indian Ocean covers some of the poorest and most undernourished populations in the world.



Fiigure 1-3. Under-five mortality rates (per 1000 live births).
(*Source*: World Health Organization Statistical Information System, 2006.)

Poverty affects health by limiting people's ability to purchase food, housing, medical services, and even soap and water. Inadequate public sanitation and high prevalence of communicable diseases are also closely linked with poverty. A major health problem, particularly among children, is diarrhea, usually caused by poor water quality. According to the World Bank, 5 to 10 million children die each year from causes related to diarrhea. Respiratory diseases account for an additional 4 to 5 million deaths, and malaria another million. Basic health services are almost totally lacking in many areas; on average, ten times as many people per doctor and per nurse are found in low-income countries as in developed countries.

A major health problem that continues to grow rapidly in the developing world is acquired auto-immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS). The disease is particularly difficult to contain in many African countries because of the ease of its heterosexual spread, lack of education about the disease, limited use of protective birth-control devices, and in some cases absence of government commitment to address the problem. Estimates are that roughly a quarter of the adult populations in certain countries, such as Botswana and Swaziland, are HIV positive. Effects are felt in lost productivity and increased poverty, in addition to its effects on direct human suffering. As serious as the problem currently is in Africa, the region likely to be devastated most by AIDS in the future is Asia. According to the World Health Organization, an estimated 33 million people worldwide were living with HIV/AIDS in 2007.

Population Growth

How important is population growth to the food-poverty-population problem? It is very important, and will continue to be so at least for the next 40–50 years. Population is growing less than 1 percent per year in developed economies, but 2 percent per year in developing countries excluding China, and 3 percent or more in many Sub-Saharan African countries. These higher growth rates place pressure on available food supplies and on the environment in many low-income countries. Population growth and food production are closely linked, and changing either in a major way takes time, as discussed in Chapter 4. It is clear that continual increases in food production are needed, because regardless of how successful are efforts to control population growth, world population will not stabilize for many years. Rapid urbanization is also occurring as populations continue to grow.

Children in Honduras.

Globalization

Food and economic systems in less-developed countries are affected by the international economic environment far more today than they were in years past. Trade and other economic policies abroad and at home, international capital flows, migration, and oil price shocks have combined to increase the instability of and opportunities for improving the food and economic security of developing countries.

International trade in agricultural products (as with other products) has grown rapidly since the 1970s, building on improvements in transportation and information systems. As exports and imports of farm products constitute a higher proportion of agricultural production and consumption, effects of domestic agricultural policies aimed at influencing the agricultural sector are altered. World prices become more important to farmers than they were previously, and possibilities for maintaining a nation's food security at the aggregate level are improved, although price volatility remains an issue. Production and policy changes abroad also tend to have a great effect on domestic agriculture as international trade grows. While the need for national food production self-sufficiency has been reduced, the need to be price competitive with other countries has grown, as has the need to participate in international negotiations to alter the policy environment.

International capital (money) markets, through which currencies flow from country to country in response to differences in interest rates and other factors, have become as important as trade to the food and

economic systems in less-developed countries. The volume of international financial transactions far exceeds the international flows of goods and services. Capital flows affect the values of national currencies in foreign exchange markets. The foreign exchange rate, or the value of one country's currency in terms of another country's currency, is an important determinant of the price a nation receives for exports or pays for imports. Speculation in financial markets has led to rapid inflows and outflows of capital in some countries, resulting sharp changes in asset values and incomes.

Many less-developed countries also have serious foreign debt problems. Many countries have reduced their rate of government spending in efforts to service this debt, and this decrease in turn has lowered the availability of pubic services, creating further hardships for the poor. The need for foreign exchange to repay external debts has also increased the importance of exports for less-developed countries, forcing some countries to reexamine their trade and exchange-rate policies. At the same time, new technologies have been changing the possibilities that countries have for producing and trading particular products.

Environmental Degradation

As populations grow, environmental problems become more severe. Deforestation, farming of marginal lands, overgrazing, and misuse of pesticides have contributed to soil erosion, desertification, poisoning of water supplies, and climate change. The global climate has become gradually warmer and less stable, while water has become scarcer. Environmental problems exist in every region of the world. Some degradation is intentional, but most is the unintended result of people and governments seeking means of solving immediate food and economic crises, often at the cost of long-term damage to the environment. Some of this damage may compromise the ability of a country to raise incomes in the long run. When people are hungry, it is hard to tell them to save their resources for the future, and environmental conservation represents a form of savings. However, many potential solutions exist that are consistent with both short-term increases in food production and long-term goals of simultaneously sustaining or improving environmental quality while raising incomes.

Risk and Uncertainty

Most of the factors mentioned above are associated with increased exposure to risk and uncertainty. Fluctuating prices, exchange rate instability, certain crop pests, and rapidly changing weather patterns

Slum close to riverbank in Katmandu, Nepal.

represent risk factors. Recent research has shown that risks and risk management imply real costs that may compromise long-run improvements in well being. Risk also lowers welfare in the short run. For example, Hurricane Mitch struck the Central American coastal region during October 1998, causing massive losses in productive capacity and washing out roads, houses, and entire villages. In Honduras alone, it killed more than 8,000 people and injured more than 12,000. Deforestation in hillside areas contributed to the hurricane's damage as landslides and flooding washed out low-lying areas. In December 2004, a large earthquake off the coast of Indonesia caused a tsunami that washed ashore in several countries, especially in Indonesia, Sri Lanka, India, and Thailand, killing more than 228,000 people.

Risk is not necessarily bad. Innovation and entrepreneurship are risky. It is the way that risks are managed that most influences economic growth. Risk management needs to be conducted in an efficient manner; the proper balance must be found between managing risks and pursuing other goals.

The preceding overview provides brief highlights of some of the dimensions of the food-income-population problem. These and other problems are discussed in more depth in subsequent chapters, and alternative solutions are suggested. First, however, it is important to consider what we mean when we talk about development.

MEANING of DEVELOPMENT

The term *development* means a change over time, typically involving growth or expansion. *Economic* development involves changes in people's standard of living. For most of human history there was little such change, but over the past 300 years there has been a rapid and (so far) sustained increase in almost every kind of human activity. Growth occurred first and has been sustained the longest in Northwest Europe and North America, but similar kinds of expansion have occurred all around the world.

Development is a process with many economic and social dimensions. For most observers, *successful* economic development requires, as a minimum, rising per-capita incomes, eradication of absolute poverty, and reduction in inequality over the long term. The process is a dynamic one, including not only changes in the structure and level of economic activity, but also increased opportunities for individual choice and for improved self-esteem.

Development is often a painful process. Adjusting to new circumstances is always difficult: as Mark Twain famously wrote, "I'm all for progress — it's change I can't stand." There is often dramatic social upheaval with traditional ways of life being displaced, existing social norms being challenged, and increasing pressures for institutional and political reform. The physical and cultural landscape of a country can change radically during economic development. And at the individual level, the standard of living for the poorest people in a society does sometimes decline, even as average real incomes increase. More often, the fruits of improvement are unequally distributed. By any measure, poverty and deprivation remain widespread, despite the astonishing improvements in living standards experienced by many all across the globe.

As economic activity continues to expand, there is continuous concern with the constraints imposed by natural resources and environmental factors. The World Commission on Environment and Development has defined sustainable development as "development that meets the needs of the present without compromising the ability of future generations to meet their own needs."[2] Thus, the term "development" encompasses not only an economic growth component, but distributional components, both for the current population and for future generations.

[2] World Commission on Environment and Development, *Our Common Future* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1987), p. 43.

Measures of Development

Although development is difficult to measure, it is often necessary to do so in order to assess the impacts of particular programs, to establish criteria for foreign assistance, and for other purposes. Because of its several dimensions, single indicators of development can be misleading. Measures are needed that are consistent with the objective of raising the standard of living broadly across the population. Average per-capita income is frequently used as a measure (see Figure 1-4). Is it a good measure?

Average per capita income is not a perfect measure of living standards for several reasons, but finding an alternative indicator that can incorporate each dimension of development is impossible. Because development is multidimensional, collapsing it into a single index measure requires placing weights on different dimensions. Average per-capita income is an inadequate measure even of the economic dimensions because it misses the important distributional elements of development and is a crude measure of people's well-being.

Alternative multidimensional development indicators have been suggested. One of the oldest is a level-of-living index proposed by M.K. Bennett that weights 19 indicators for which data were available in 1951.[3] Examples of indicators include caloric intake per capita, infant mortality rates, number of physicians per 1000 of total population, and years of schooling. A more recent index is the Human Development Index[4] (HDI), which weights life expectancy, education, and income. Weighting schemes are subjective, however, and average per-capita income is highly correlated with many of the indicators. Consequently, average per-capita income, measured as gross national product (GNP) or gross domestic product (GDP) per capita is often employed as a first approximation; then measures such as income distribution, literacy rates, life expectancy, and child mortality are examined separately or as part of an index. Even these supplementary indicators can be misleading due to regional disparities within countries.

Some studies have called for the GNP income measure itself to be modified to account for depreciation or appreciation of natural resource-based assets, particularly forests. This modification may be possible once natural resource accounting procedures are further refined.

[3] See M. K. Bennett, "International Disposition in Consumption Levels," *American Economic Review*, vol. 41, September 1951, pp. 632–49.

[4] United Nations Development Program, *Human Development Report* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2007), p. 356.

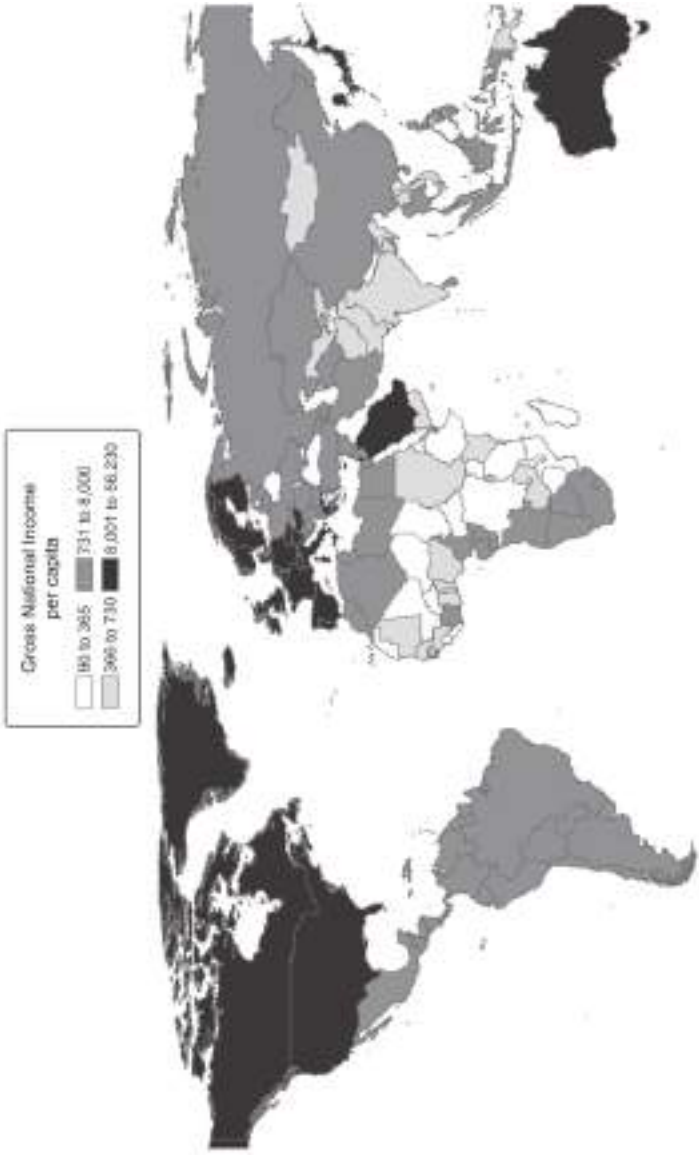


Figure 1-4. GNI per capita, 2004 (Atlas Method).
(*Source*: World Bank, *World Development Indicators* Online Database.)

BOX 1-1.
POVERTY and INEQUALITY

Poverty is generally defined as the failure to achieve certain minimum standards of living. By its very nature, poverty refers not just to *averages*, but to *distributions*. Poverty is not, however, synonymous with inequality; countries with perfect equality could contain all rich or all poor people. Measurement of poverty requires three steps: determining an appropriate measure or indicator, deciding on its minimum level, and counting the number or percentage of people falling below it. Alternatively, a measure of degree or intensity of poverty would indicate the amount by which people fall below the poverty line.

While poverty refers to some level or position with respect to a measure such as income, inequality refers to the distribution of that measure among a population. For example, evidence from 21 developing countries indicates that, on average, 6 percent of household income is received by the poorest 20 percent of the households, whereas 48 percent of household income is received by the richest 20 percent. In some countries the extremes are even more dramatic. It is possible for poverty to decrease in a country during the development process, but for inequality to increase, at least for a period of time.

Incomes and Development

Poverty and low incomes are most frequently associated with underdevelopment, while growing per-capita incomes should indicate increasing levels of development. As discussed above, increasing average incomes may not necessarily mean more development, because the distribution of this income often determines whether poverty and inequality are diminished as the mean grows. Some of the relationships between poverty and inequality are discussed in Box 1-1.

Numerous measures of inequality and the extent of poverty exist. For example, the Human Poverty Index (HPI) measures the extent of deprivation with respect to life expectancy, education, and income.[5] If, as is argued above, the meaning of development contains some element of poverty reduction or increased equality of income distribution, then clearly the incomes of the poor and destitute should be raised during the development process.

Policies undertaken to promote development have diverse effects on the incomes of the poor. Some people benefit, but often some do not,

[5] United Nations Development Program, *Human Development Report* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan Press, 2007), p. 357.

and, at times, incomes fall for certain population groups. It is important to consider the winners and losers in the development process. Income distributions, and changes in them, are indicators of the impact of development policies on different groups in society.

Values and Development

Value judgments or premises about what is or is not desirable are inextricably related to development economics. Concerns for economic and social equality, poverty eradication, and the need to improve health and education all derive from subjective beliefs about what is good and what is not. Solutions to specific problems often involve tradeoffs, and decisions about public resource allocations always involve tradeoffs. Governments make such tradeoffs every day, as most government actions are costly to some people even as they benefit others. Economics can be a powerful tool for evaluating these tradeoffs, providing insights into the costs and benefits of different actions, winners and losers, and longer-run consequences of savings, investment, and consumption decisions. Economics is, however, less well-suited for making value decisions.

Even if people share the same set of beliefs and values, they may attach different weights to the individual beliefs and values within that set. Because there is no correct set of weights, people may not agree about appropriate solutions to development problems, even if the suggested solutions appear conceptually sound in terms of leading to their intended impacts.

Most policy suggestions would result in both gainers and losers. In some cases, the gainers could compensate the losers, but sometimes they could not, and often they do not. Because affected groups have differing political strengths within society, economic and social development policies cannot be separated from the political process. These realities must be considered if development policies are to succeed.

ROLE of AGRICULTURE

Many alternative development paths or strategies exist. The strategy followed by an individual country at a particular point in time is, or at least should be, influenced in part by its resource endowments and stage of development. Some countries with vast oil and mineral resources have generated capital for development by exporting those resources. Others have emphasized cash-crop exports such as coffee, cocoa, and tea. Some have focused on industrial exports, while others have stressed increases in basic food production. The optimal development path will

vary from country to country, but the choice of an inappropriate path, given the existing resource endowments and stage of development, can result in long-term stagnation of the economy.

Numerous examples can be found of countries choosing the wrong development path and paying the price. Argentina, a country well-endowed with land resources, pursued government policies in the 1940s and 1950s that stressed industrialization and virtually ignored agriculture. The result was that agricultural exports, previously an important component of economic growth, stagnated in the 1950s, and foreign exchange shortages prevented the imports of capital goods needed for industrialization. Economic growth slowed dramatically as a result. India is another country whose potential for agriculture-driven growth was subverted by a disproportionate emphasis on industrialization in the 1950s and 1960s.

Agriculture is not very productive in most low-income countries. Early in the development process much of the population is employed in agriculture, and a high percentage of the national income is derived from that sector[6] (see Table 1-1). As development proceeds, population grows and per-capita income increases. As incomes grow, more food is demanded; either agricultural production or imports must increase. Because agriculture commands so many of the resources in most low-income countries, few funds are available for importing food or anything else unless agricultural output grows.

The capacity of the agricultural sector to employ an expanding labor force is limited. As incomes continue to rise, the demand for nonfood commodities grows as well. Therefore, economic development requires a structural transformation of the economy involving relative expansion of nonagricultural sectors. The agricultural sector must contribute food, labor, and capital to that expansion. It also provides a market for nonagricultural goods.

This economic transformation is illustrated in Table 1-1. Agriculture accounts for a large percentage of total income, and an even larger percentage of total employment for the lower-income countries. The contribution of agriculture to national incomes declines from 30 to 50 percent for the lower-income countries, to 15 to 20 percent for the

[6]A warning about measurement is appropriate: in most countries it is difficult to measure the number of people employed in agriculture. Multiple job holdings, seasonal labor use in agriculture, and unpaid household labor all complicate the measurement problem. Often, data on the number employed in agriculture are obtained by (generally high-quality) census estimates of the rural population. Even in rural areas, many people are employed outside agriculture.

Table 1-1. Relationship among Per-Capita National Income, the Proportion of National Income in Agriculture, and the Proportion of the Labor Force in Agriculture, Selected Countries, 2006

Country	Per capita income (in PPP dollars)[1]	Agriculture GDP as a percentage of total GDP	Percentage of active labor force in agriculture	
			Male	Female
Ethiopia	581	47	84	76
Uganda	848	32	60	77
Mali	1004	37	50	30
Bangladesh	1068	20	50	59
Moldova	2,190	18	41	40
Philippines	2,956	14	45	25
Indonesia	3,209	13	43	41
Colombia	5,867	12	32	8
Ecuador	6,737	7	11	4
Thailand	7,061	11	44	41
Brazil	8,474	5	25	16
Argentina	10,815	8	2	1
Mexico	11,387	4	21	5
South Korea	21,273	3	7	9
Italy	27,750	2	5	3
Greece	29,261	3	12	14
Japan	30,290	2	4	5
France	30,591	2	5	2
Australia	34,160	3	5	3
Canada	34,972	2	4	2
United States	41,812	2	2	1

Source: World Bank, World Development Indicators, 2008.

[1] PPP stands for purchasing power parity and means that the incomes are converted to dollars, taking into account cost-of-living differences between the countries.

middle-income range, and down to 5 percent or below for the highest income countries.

The initial size and low productivity of agriculture in most developing countries suggests an opportunity for raising national income through agricultural development. Because of the initial size of, and low per-capita income in the agricultural sector, there is real scope for improving the distribution of income and enhancing the welfare of a major segment of the population through agricultural development.

One of the keys to agricultural development is to improve information flows. In primitive societies, economic activities are local and information is basically available to all. Inappropriate activities are constrained by social and cultural norms. As development begins to proceed and economies become more complex, information needs increase but traditional forms of information transmission are incapable of meeting these needs. Modern information systems are slow to develop, creating inequalities in access to new information. Those with greater access than others can take advantage of this situation to further their own welfare, often at the expense of overall agricultural and economic development.

Some changes required to foster broad-based and sustainable development require institutional changes and capital investments. Capital investments necessitate savings. Such savings are channeled into private and public investment, the latter to build the infrastructure needed for development. Saving requires striking a balance between present and future levels of living because it requires abstention from current consumption. Means must be sought to reduce this potential short-run versus long-run conflict during the development process. However, certain types of investments necessary for development, such as education, provide both short- and long-run benefits, as do investments in technologies and employment-intensive industries.

Improving Agriculture

How can agriculture be improved to facilitate its role in providing food and contributing to overall development? There are still areas of the world, particularly in parts of Latin America and Africa, where land suited for agricultural production is not being farmed. Most increases in agricultural production will have to come, however, from more intensive use of land currently being farmed. Such intensive use will require improved technologies generated through research as well as improved irrigation systems, roads, market infrastructure, and other investments. It will require education and incentives created through changes in institutions such as land tenure systems, input and credit policies, and pricing policies (see Box 1-2).

Agriculture and Employment Interactions

Agricultural development can provide food, labor, and capital to support increased employment in industry and can stimulate demand in rural areas for employment-intensive consumer goods. Because of their comparative advantage in labor-intensive production, many developing countries will need to import capital-intensive goods, such as steel

BOX 1-2.
HISTORICAL PERSPECTIVE on AGRICULTURAL DEVELOPMENT

The historical progression of agricultural development can be broadly broken into four distinct periods, marked by three "revolutions" in production technology and social institutions.

First, from the time that we first appeared on earth, human beings hunted and gathered their food. Hunter-gatherer societies typically lived in small groups, experienced little population growth.

Then, more than 10,000 years ago, a combination of climate changes and other factors created conditions for the development of settled agriculture. In the Middle East and elsewhere, people began to collect and cultivate the seeds of plants that eventually became modern barley, wheat, and rye. This development is known as the *first agricultural revolution*, and permitted a slow but significant increase in human population density.

More recently, a few hundred years ago, rising population density and opportunities for trade led to a *second agricultural revolution*. In Northwestern Europe and elsewhere, farmers developed crop rotations and livestock management systems that permitted rapid growth in output per person, fueling the *industrial revolution* and the eventual mechanization of many important tasks.

Finally, in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, scientific breeding, chemical fertilizer, and other innovations allowed rapid increases in output per unit of area. The spread of these biological technologies to developing countries, known as the *green revolution*, has been a powerful engine of economic growth and poverty alleviation, allowing low-income people to produce more food at lower cost than ever before.

These historical trends played out at different speeds and in different ways across the globe. A few people in the poorest countries still devote substantial energy to hunter-gatherer activities, and many millions of farmers still cultivate the same seeds in the same ways as their ancestors. Because of population growth, these techniques and institutional arrangements yield less and less output over time. The development and spread of higher-productivity systems to suit these people's needs is among the major humanitarian challenges of our time.

and fertilizer, and export labor-intensive consumer goods and certain types of agricultural goods. Countries that do not match an employment-oriented industrial policy with their agricultural development policy will fail to realize the potential income and employment benefits of agricultural development.

SUMMARY

Some of the basic dimensions of the world food-poverty-population problem were examined. The aggregate world food situation was reviewed, and questions such as who the hungry are, and why they are hungry even though the world produces a surplus of food, were addressed. The significance of population growth and a series of forces in the global economy that influence developing countries were stressed.

The meaning and measures of development were discussed and importance of development problems. The desirability of suggested solutions depends on value judgments. While alternative development strategies can be followed, agriculture has an important role to play in overall development in most developing countries. Development will require a complex set of improved technologies, education, and institutions, and an employment-oriented industrial policy.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Agricultural productivity
Development
Enhanced information flows
Environmental degradation
Food-poverty-population problem
Food price instability
Foreign exchange rates
Globalization
Health problems
Institutions
International capital markets
International trade
Measures of development
Population growth
Structural transformation of the economy
Sustainability
Technology

Looking Ahead

In order to visualize more clearly the relationships among food supplies, food demand, population growth, and nutrition, it is important to examine facts, scientific opinion, and economic theory. We make this examination in the remaining chapters of Part One in this book. We turn first in Chapter 2 to the causes and potential solutions to hunger and malnutrition problems.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1. Are people hungry because the world does not produce enough food?
2. Has food production in developing countries kept pace with population growth there?
3. Is malnutrition more widespread today than in the past?
4. Why did food prices rise so dramatically in 2008?

5 What are some factors that will influence the price of food over the next 10 to 20 years?
6 Is there any hope of bringing more land into production to help increase food production?
7 Why is agricultural development particularly important in less-developed countries?
8 Approximately what proportion of the world's population lives on per-capita incomes of less than $2 per day?
9 What is development? To what extent are values important when discussing development issues?
10 Is average per-capita income a good measure of level of living?
11 Why is most of the labor force engaged in agriculture in many less-developed countries?
12 Does economic development require expansion of the nonagricultural sector in low-income countries?
13 What is the conflict between increasing near- versus long-term levels of living in developing countries?
14 What are the major health problems in developing countries and what are their primary causes?
15 How fast is population growing in developing countries?
16 Why has international agricultural trade become more important over the past 30 years?
17 Why have international capital markets become more important to developing countries over the past 30 years?
18 Why might low food prices be both good and bad?
19 Why has environmental degradation become an increasing problem in developing countries?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Eicher, Carl K., and John M. Staatz, *International Agricultural Development* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1998), especially pp. 3–53.
Food and Agriculture Organization of the United Nations, *State of Food and Agriculture 2008* (Rome: FAO, 2008) (and various other years).
Runge, C. Ford, Benjamin Senauer, Philip G. Pardey, and Mark W. Rosegrant, *Ending Hunger in Our Lifetime: Food Security and Globalization* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 2003).
Todaro, Michael P. *Economic Development* (New York: Addison Wesley, 2008), especially Chapters 1, 2, and 3.
United Nations Development Programme, *Human Development Report 2007/2008* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2007).
World Bank, *World Development Report* 2008 (New York: Oxford University Press); see earlier volumes as well.

CHAPTER 2

Poverty, Hunger, and Malnutrition

> For hunger is a curious thing: at first it is with you all the time, waking and sleeping and in your dreams, and your belly cries out insistently, and there is a gnawing and a pain as if your very vitals were being devoured, and you must stop it at any cost, and you buy a moment's respite even while you know and fear the sequel. Then the pain is no longer sharp but dull, and this too is with you always, so that you think of food many times a day and each time a terrible sickness assails you, and because you know this you try to avoid the thought, but you cannot, it is with you. Then that too is gone, all pain, all desire, only a great emptiness is left, like the sky, like a well in drought, and it is now that the strength drains from your limbs, and you try to rise and find that you cannot, or to swallow water and your throat is powerless, and both the swallow and the effort of retaining the liquid taxes you to the uttermost.
>
> — Kamala Markandaya[1]

This Chapter

1 Describes the world food situation
2 Examines different forms of poverty, hunger and malnutrition: their magnitudes and consequences, and how they are measured
3 Identifies principal causes of and potential solutions to problems with poverty, hunger, and malnutrition in developing countries

THE WORLD FOOD SITUATION

World Food Demand and Supply

World food consumption and production have each grown about 2.2 percent per annum since 1970, while in developing countries consumption has grown about 3.7 percent and production 3.5 percent. Cereals

[1] Kamala Markandaya, *Nectar in a Sieve* (New York: New American Library, 1954), p. 91.

are the most important sources of food and, since the mid-1960s, world cereal production has risen by roughly one billion tons per year. It is likely that an additional billion tons in production per year will be needed by 2030 to meet food needs of a world population expanding in numbers and in income. It is also likely that cereal imports by developing countries will increase from about 10 percent of consumption to about 15 percent.

While the overall numbers and projections suggest gradual improvement in reducing malnutrition in the world, there are still several countries in which per-capita food consumption has declined and is not likely to increase enough to significantly reduce the number of undernourished. Even in countries with growing average food consumption, some groups may not see their consumption levels increase: household food consumption is closely related to household incomes, and the most disadvantaged are afflicted by low and uncertain levels of income. In addition, the rate of growth in agricultural output for the world as a whole has slowed since the 1980s, and the use of cereals and sugar to produce bio-fuel products has created competition for these products for food. When food supplies are short, prices rise, creating severe problems for those who spend a high proportion of their limited income on food. The effects of the food price increase in 2007–2008 are a good example, as they are estimated to have caused an increase in the number of people malnourished in the world from 800 million to 860 million. A best-case scenario for the world over the next 30 years would seem to point to a reduction in severely malnourished to about 400–500 million people, but for populations in many countries the struggle for food will continue. Therefore we turn now to how poverty and access to food manifest themselves in terms of hunger, malnutrition, and, in some cases, famine.

POVERTY

Poverty has many faces and is one of the major challenges facing the development community. Poverty is widely understood to be an inability to meet basic needs, and the poor tend to be hungry, are without adequate shelter, and have limited access to health care. The poor lack opportunity, and their powerlessness often lead to hopelessness and despair. To most people reading this book, poverty is an invisible and abstract problem, somewhere out there. We seldom think about it, and when we do we often don't know what to think or how to take action against it. Trends since the early 1980s point to a decrease in global poverty, but stark challenges remain; in 2005, an estimated 1.4 billion

people — about one fourth of the world's population — lived in extreme poverty and efforts to reduce poverty must be constantly refined.

Measuring Poverty

Since poverty is multidimensional, efforts to measure it can be complicated by attention to its different dimensions. Two broad types of measurement schemes exist: monetary and non-monetary. Monetary measures consolidate the different dimensions into a single unit of measure — money. Their strengths include the ability to make comparisons in a common unit, a non-arbitrary measurement scheme, and ability to quantify the extent, depth and severity of poverty (see box 2-1). However, monetary approaches often fail to capture dimensions of poverty that may be especially important and intractable, such as social exclusion and political powerlessness.

Non-monetary measures include qualitative assessments and indices that combine different dimensions such as the Human Development Index (HDI) and Human Poverty Index (HPI) described in Chapter 1. These indices often face the criticism that the weights used are arbitrary and measures vary significantly when the weights are changed.

The different approaches complement each other, and their combination has allowed a deeper understanding of poverty. For example, participatory poverty assessments that engage in discussions with groups of poor people about their conditions and the unique challenges they face often accompany monetary assessments, and the combination can help in understanding how policies can be formulated to reduce poverty.

Vulnerability: Transitory and Chronic Poverty

Poverty is not a constant state for many developing-country households. Weather, pests, diseases, and policies cause fluctuations in income that translate into movement in and out of poverty — households are vulnerable to becoming poor. This in-and-out-of poverty situation is important because separate policies may be needed to address transitory compared to chronic poverty. Evidence shows that transitory poverty — households who move in and out of poverty over time — accounts for a substantial portion of overall poverty. As a result, means of protecting people from transitory income shortfalls may substantially improve the global poverty picture. Formal and informal insurance schemes, social safety nets, and other means of reducing or managing risks can help achieve this aim. Rural public work programs — such as

BOX 2-1.
MONETARY MEASUREMENT of POVERTY[1]

Three primary challenges in measuring poverty are: (i) deciding what to measure, (ii) identifying a value, below which a household is deemed to be poor, and (iii) adding it up for the population. Poverty involves an inability to control sufficient resources to meet a minimum level of well being, and analysts use household income or consumption expenditure to measure it. Consumption is generally preferred because income, particularly in rural areas, is seasonal and variable, while consumption is smoother and often easier to measure. The poverty line is the value of income or expenditures on a daily, monthly or annual basis below which a person is deemed to be poor. This poverty line can be determined many ways. In the United States, the poverty line was created in 1963 using the minimum cost of achieving an adequate diet based on U.S. Department of Agriculture food plans. Non-food expenditures were accounted for by observing that poor households generally spend about a third of their total budget on food: the food poverty line was multiplied by 3 to obtain the total poverty line. This line has been updated over time by adjusting for changes in the cost of living. A commonly used international poverty line is the World Bank's use of $1 per person per day (in 1993 prices) to reflect extreme poverty (this number was recently revised to be $1.25 in 2005 prices) and $2 per day (2005 prices) to reflect moderate poverty.

With a household survey, incomes or expenditures can be compared to the poverty line: households with values below the line are poor. Policy makers are interested not only in which households are poor, but also in where the poor are located, what they do, and how poverty has changed over time. Monetary indices of poverty are used to address these concerns, and the most commonly used poverty index, called the Foster, Greer, Thorbecke (FGT) Index,[2] is one that reflects the prevalence (proportion of the total population that is poor), depth (the degree of shortfall below the poverty line) and severity of poverty (the degree of inequality among the poor). This index gives policy makers a nuanced view of the total poverty picture: for example, a policy may increase the depth of poverty among some while reducing the total proportion of the population that is poor. According to the most recent estimates, 40 percent of the population in South Asia was poor in 2005 compared to 51 percent in Sub-Saharan Africa. In contrast, the poverty severity measures were 3 percent for South Asia compared to over 10 percent for Sub-Saharan Africa, indicating a far more serious problem in poverty severity in Sub-Saharan Africa than in South Asia.

[1] For more information, see Martin Ravallion, "Poverty comparisons: A guide to concepts and methods," Living Standards Measurement Study Working Paper, no. 88 (Washington, D.C.: World Bank, 1992).

[2] J. Foster, J. Greer, and E. Thorbecke, "A Class of Decomposable Poverty Measures", *Econometrica*, Volume 52 (1984), pp. 761–66.

dam-building, irrigation and water supply schemes, road construction and maintenance programs — are examples of social safety nets that may reduce vulnerability to poverty and build infrastructure for agricultural development.

Chronic poverty is often caused by very different factors: households do not have access to enough human, physical, natural, and other assets to earn sufficient incomes for minimum levels of well-being. Poverty traps caused by insufficient assets, severely degraded natural resources, and other factors, are difficult to escape and often require long-term investments in asset building, access to new factors of production, and improved institutions.

Agricultural Development and the Poor

One of the most common misconceptions about poverty is that it is largely an urban problem. Pictures of teeming slums with inadequate sanitation and rotting infrastructure help bolster this perception. In contrast, rural residents are thought to live in relatively spacious conditions and to be able to rely on own-production of foods in times of dire need. In fact, on a global level, the rural poor make up more than three-fourths of the total poor, and rural poverty is twice as prevalent as urban poverty.[2] Rural poverty is a major problem and, as we will see throughout this book, agricultural development can play a major role in its reduction, but agricultural development can also alleviate urban poverty.

Agricultural technology has direct impacts on the rural poor by increasing incomes of farmers, many of whom may be poor. Care must be taken during development and subsequent release of new technologies to ensure that they are accessible to poor producers, but evidence shows that in many cases poor producers benefit directly. Indirect benefits to the poor from growth in agriculture come from two primary sources: increased demand for labor and increased supply of food, causing food prices to drop. The latter benefit can be substantial and is an important reason why global poverty fell from the early 1980s until recently. Food price declines have led to higher levels of living even for

[2] The prevalence of global rural poverty was estimated in 2005 to be 29.7 percent compared to a 13.2 percent poverty rate in urban areas of developing countries. While rural poverty has declined relative to urban poverty due to urbanization, 75.4 percent of the developing world's poor are found in rural areas. Source: Martin Ravallion, Shaohua Chen, and Prem Sangraula, 2007, "New Evidence on the Urbanization of Global Poverty," Policy Research Working Paper forthcoming, World Bank.

people who do not depend directly on agriculture. When global food markets tighten as they did recently, poverty rises due to the indirect effect of higher food prices.

HUNGER, MALNUTRITION, and FAMINE

Hunger is a silent crisis in the world. In times of famine, it can tear at the heartstrings as media attention focuses on its dramatic effects. In fact, the most extreme type of hunger is severe calorie and protein undernutrition during a famine. However, more pervasive is chronic under-nutrition and malnutrition associated with poverty, illness, ignorance, maldistribution of food within the family, and seasonal fluctuations in access to food. We begin our discussion of hunger with the contrast between famines and chronic malnutrition.

Famines

Famine is marked by an acute decline in access to food that occurs in a definable area and has a finite duration. This lack of access to food usually results from crop failures, often in successive years, due to drought, flood, insect infestation, or war. During a famine, food may actually be present in the affected area, but its price is so high that only the wealthy can afford it. Food distribution systems may break down so that food cannot reach those who need it.

Famines have occurred throughout history. In recent years, their prevalence has been greatest in Sub-Saharan Africa, but famines also have occurred in North Korea periodically since 1995, in Kampuchea (formerly Cambodia) in 1979, Bangladesh in 1974, India in 1966 to 1967, and China in 1959 to 1961. The latter was the worst famine of the 20th century and resulted in an estimated mortality of at least 16 million people.

Famine is the extreme on the hunger scale because it causes extreme loss of life and concurrent social and economic chaos over a relatively short period of time. As access to food falls, people begin by borrowing money and then selling their assets to acquire money to purchase foods. Subsistence farmers sell their seed stocks, livestock, plows, and even land. Landless laborers and other poor groups lose their jobs, or face steeply higher prices for food at constant wages. As the famine intensifies, whole families and villages migrate in search of relief. The telltale signs of acute malnutrition and, eventually, sickness and death appear (see Box 2-2).

Fortunately, progress is being made against famine. Although large variations occur in annual food production in individual countries and world population continues to grow, the frequency and intensity

BOX 2-2.
NATURAL DISASTER and FAMINE in BANGLADESH[1]

From June to September 1974, severe flooding in the Brahmaputra River in Bangladesh led to large-scale losses of the dry-season rice crop and created pessimism about the prospects for the transplanted spring crop. The price of rice doubled in fewer than three months during and after the floods. Two months after this sudden upturn in rice prices, unclaimed dead bodies began to be collected in increasing numbers from the streets of Dacca, the capital city. Similar collections were reported throughout the countryside. The government of Bangladesh officially declared a famine in September 1974. Estimates of the final death toll vary widely, but most agree that more than 1 million people died of starvation or related causes during and after the famine.

Insufficient food stocks clearly hindered the government's efforts to provide relief. Inadequate relief stocks should not, however, be confused as a cause of the famine; the evidence clearly shows that in 1974 adequate food grains were available in Bangladesh to avoid famine. This same evidence shows that the districts most affected by the famine even had increased availability of food per person compared to prior years.

What, then, caused the famine? Landless laborers and farmers with less than half an acre of land were most severely affected by the famine. These groups, whose only true asset was their labor power, found that the value of their labor declined greatly relative to the price of rice. Despite available food in local markets, they were unable to purchase it. The flood did not immediately affect food supply since the lost crop would not have been harvested until the next year anyway. It did, however, greatly lower employment opportunities. Lower wages combined with higher rice prices were the root causes of the 1974 Bangladesh famine.

[1] Most of this material is drawn from Amartya K. Sen, *Poverty and Famines: An Essay on Entitlement and Deprivation* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1981).

of famines has decreased due to improved information and transportation networks, increased food production and reserves, and dedicated relief organizations. Much of the starvation we see during famines now occurs in areas where transportation systems are deficient and where political conflict thwarts relief efforts. The recent North Korean famine was due to a combination of natural disasters, economic collapse, and lack of political will to alleviate the problem.

Chronic Hunger and Malnutrition

As devastating as famines are, they account for only a small fraction of hunger-related deaths. Famines can be attacked in a relatively short period of time if political conflict in the affected country does not

hamper relief efforts. Chronic hunger and malnutrition affect a much greater number of people and are more difficult to combat.

Although no accurate figures on the prevalence of malnutrition exist, the World Health Organization (WHO) estimates that a half-billion people suffer from protein and calorie deficiencies and perhaps an equal number suffer from malnutrition caused by inadequate intakes of micronutrients, principally iron, vitamin A, and iodine. Thus, roughly 15–20 percent of the world's population suffers from some form of malnutrition. Malnutrition does not affect all segments of the population equally. Preschool children and pregnant and nursing women are particularly vulnerable to its dangers.

Serious malnutrition in developing countries reflects primarily under-nourishment — a shortage of food — not an imbalance between calories and protein. The availability of calories per capita by country is illustrated in Figure 2-1. Many of the countries with very low per-capita calorie availability are found in sub-Saharan Africa. A close, but not perfect, correspondence exists between low calorie availability and the low-income countries identified in the previous chapter. The major nutritional problem was once believed to be the shortage of protein. Although dietary protein is important, many nutritionists now believe that when commonly consumed cereal-based diets meet energy (calorie) requirements, it is likely that most protein needs will also be satisfied, for most people older than about two years of age. Thus, for everyone except infants, the greatest concern is the total quantity of food available to eat, and this quantity can most readily be measured by total dietary energy in terms of calories per day. In settings where overall energy intake meets minimum needs, any remaining protein or micronutrient deficiencies can often be improved with rather small investments to improve the quality of the diet.

Table 2-1: Estimated Number of People Affected by Preventable Malnutrition Worldwide

Deficiency	Morbidity due to Malnutrition	Estimated Prevalence of Morbidity	Group most affected
Protein and energy	Underweight	150,000,000	Children
Protein and energy	Stunted growth	182,000,000	Children
Iron	Anemia	2,000,000,000	Every age and sex
Vitamin A	Blindness	250,000 - 500,000	Every age and sex
Iodine	Brain damage	50,000,000	Every age and sex

Source: World Health Organization, 2003.

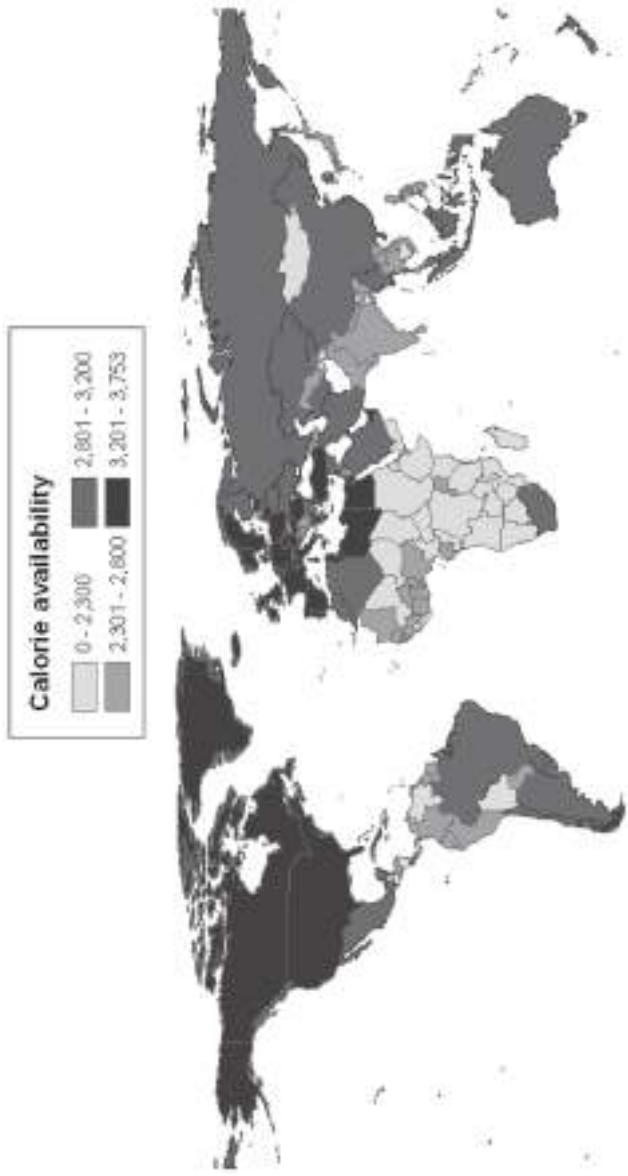


Figure 2-1. Daily calorie availability per capita, 2003. (*Source*: FAOSTAT data.)

Nevertheless, areas can be found with adequate calorie intake but deficient protein or micronutrient intake. Regions where diets are based on staples such as cassava or sugar rather than cereals are more likely to be deficient in protein even if calories are adequate. Iodine deficiency is common in regions far from the sea, for example parts of the Andes in South America. Iron deficiency is a particularly serious problem among women of childbearing age all over the world, and vitamin A deficiency is common in several countries.

Consequences of Hunger and Malnutrition

Stunted growth, reduced physical and mental activity, muscle wasting, increased vulnerability to infections and other diseases, and, in severe cases, death are the most common consequences of calorie deficiencies. Death most frequently results from dehydration caused by diarrhea, whose severity is closely linked to malnutrition. Chronic protein malnutrition results in stunted growth, skin rash, edema, and change of hair color. A diet relatively high in calories but low in protein can result in an illness known as kwashiorkor, while a diet low in both calories and protein can result in an illness known as marasmus. People can live about a month with kwashiorkor, 3 months with marasmus; 7–10 million people die each year from the two diseases.

Iron deficiency anemia affects muscle function and worker productivity. Vitamin A deficiency is a leading cause of childhood blindness and often results in death due to reduced disease resistance. Iodine deficiencies cause goiter and cretinism.

There is little doubt that hunger and malnutrition result in severe physical and mental distress even for those who survive the infections and diseases. Malnutrition can affect the ability of a person to work and earn a decent livelihood, as mental development, educational achievement, and physical productivity are reduced. People with smaller bodies because of inadequate childhood nutrition are paid less in agricultural jobs in many countries. Lower earnings perpetuate the problem across generations, leading to a vicious cycle of malnutrition and poverty.

Measuring Hunger and Malnutrition

Measuring the extent of hunger and malnutrition in the world is difficult Disagreement surrounds definitions of adequate caloric and protein requirements while data on morbidity and mortality reflect the combined effects of sickness and malnutrition.

Woman and child in Ethiopia
(photo by Mesfin Bezuneh).

Nutritional assessments are usually attempted through food balance sheets, dietary surveys, anthropometric surveys, clinical examinations, and administrative records. Food balance sheets place agricultural output, stocks, and imports on the supply side and seed for next year's crops, exports, animal feed, and wastage on the demand side. Demand is subtracted from supply to derive an estimate of the balance of food left for human consumption. That amount left can be balanced against the Food and Agricultural Organization of the United Nations' (FAO) tables of nutritional requirements to estimate the adequacy of the diet. This method provides rough estimates at best, due to difficulties in estimating agricultural production and wastage in developing countries.

Food balance sheets provide only a picture of average food availability. Malnutrition, like poverty, is better measured if the distribution of food intake or of other indicators is also taken into account. Average national food availability can be adequate, while malnutrition is common in certain areas, or among particular population groups. Even within families, some members may be malnourished while

others are not. To measure malnutrition accurately, information on households or individuals is required.

Household and individual information can be obtained from dietary or expenditure surveys and from clinical or field measurements of height, weight, body fat, and blood tests. These methods are expensive and seldom administered on a consistent and widespread basis for an entire country. They can be effective, however, in estimating malnutrition among population subgroups. Since preschool children are most vulnerable to nutritional deficiencies, random surveys to measure either their food intakes or anthropometry (body measurements) can provide a good picture of the extent of malnutrition. Another procedure for estimating the extent of malnutrition is to utilize existing data in hospital, health service, and school records. Unfortunately, these statistics can be biased because the records for rural areas are scarce, the poor are the least likely to have sought medical attention, and the quality of the information in the records is uneven. For example, many countries in Latin America record the heights, weights, and ages of first-year elementary school children. Unfortunately, many members of the poorest populations groups do not attend school. Because of these biases, estimates of malnutrition among school-aged children generally understate the true problem. One reason why malnutrition is misunderstood is that its measurement is so difficult.

CAUSES of POVERTY, HUNGER and MALNUTRITION

A variety of factors contribute to poverty, hunger and malnutrition, but inadequate income is certainly the most important underlying cause. The World Bank estimates that redistributing just 2 percent of the world's output would eliminate most poverty and malnutrition. But such redistribution would be feasible only if those who now go hungry had some way to obtain that food, or something to offer in exchange. If people, for whatever reason, produce too few goods and services, they lack income to buy food and they go hungry. Even in times of famine, decreased purchasing power rather than absolute food shortages is often the major problem, as food may be available in nearby regions. Incomes in the affected area have declined so that people cannot afford to buy food from unaffected areas.

Figure 2-2 contains a schematic diagram of the determinants of household well-being and individual nutritional status. Access to productive assets such as land, labor, natural resources, and the policy regime (prices and other factors) determine household income and well-being. Income, including the value of own production and in-kind transfers determine how much food can be purchased or consumed by

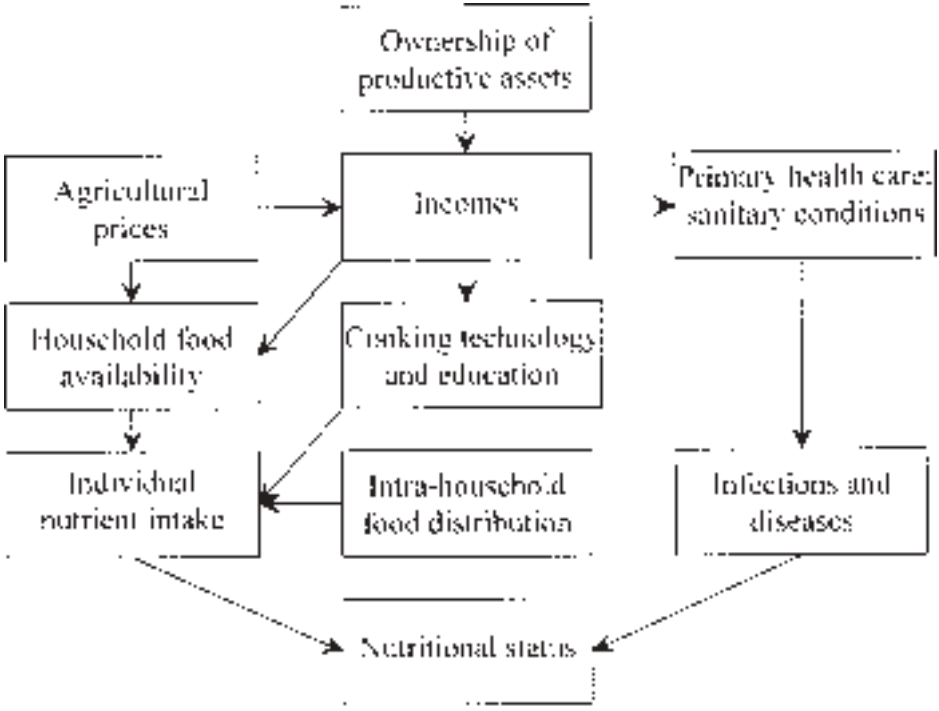


Figure 2-2. Determinants of household well-being and individual nutritional status.

the family. Total food purchases and consumption do not, however, tell the entire story. Health status and family food preparation, along with how food is distributed among members of the family, help determine how food available to a family is related to individual nutritional status.

Health and Malnutrition

Poverty's interaction with malnutrition is often compounded by infectious diseases and parasites that reduce appetites, cause malabsorption of food, or result in nutrient wastage due to fever and other metabolic processes. Health problems and malnutrition exhibit a synergistic relationship: infections and parasites lead to malnutrition while malnutrition can impair the immune system, thus increasing the risk of infection and the severity of the illness.[3] Measles, parasites, intestinal

[3] See Joanne Leslie, "Interactions of Malnutrition and Diarrhea: A Review of Research,: in J. Price Gittinger, Joanne Leslie, and Caroline Hoisington, eds., *Food Policy: Interacting Supply, Distribution, and Consumption* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1987), pp. 355–70 for additional discussion.

infections, and numerous other health problems are prevalent in developing countries. Many of these health and sanitation problems lead to diarrhea, which in turn can lead to dehydration and death. Health is determined by, among other things, household sanitary conditions. These in turn are influenced by family assets and income, and by government programs. There is room for optimism related to many childhood diseases. The World Health Organization reports that, because of sustained efforts to vaccinate children, the majority of the world's children under one year old are now vaccinated against six common childhood diseases. However, the last twenty-five years have seen HIV-AIDS become an escalating problem, first in Africa and increasingly in Asia. Malaria also remains a serious problem in many countries, especially in Africa where 14 countries report over 10 percent of their populations infected.[4]

Poor Nutritional Practices

Ignorance of good nutritional practices, maldistribution of food within the family, and excessive demands on women's time can all contribute to malnutrition and perpetuate poverty. The results of studies that have examined each of these factors provide conflicting evidence as to their importance. Each factor is undoubtedly significant in some areas of the world but not in others. For example, in parts of Northern India and Bangladesh, evidence indicates that adult males receive a disproportionate share of food in the family compared to young females, but this is not universally the case.[5] Problems that appear to be related to ignorance, and are in fact discriminatory, are sometimes related to culture and often to poverty.

Some evidence shows that whether the male or female controls income within a family helps determine how food is distributed. There also is strong evidence that increased educational opportunities for women are linked to improved nutritional practices and more equitable distribution within the family.

Seasonal and Cyclical Hunger

As with poverty, many people in developing countries move in and out a state of malnutrition. There are hungry seasons, hungry years, and hungry parts of the life cycle. A given individual may or may not survive these periods and frequently experiences lasting physical, mental, and emotional impacts even if he or she does survive.

[4] UNDP, *Human Development Report 2005* (New York: Hoechstetter, 2005).

[5] See Michael Lipton, "Variable Access to Food," in Gittinger, Leslie, and Hoisington, eds., *Food Policy*, pp. 385–92.

Hungry seasons occur because of agricultural cycles. In the weeks or months preceding a harvest, food can be in short supply. This normal seasonality can be exacerbated if crops in a particular year are short or households are unable to effectively store food or income. In certain seasons of the year, particularly the rainy seasons, disease and infection are more common. Likewise, droughts, floods, and insect infestations happen in some years but not in others. Young children are vulnerable, in part due to dangers associated with diarrhea. Pregnant and lactating women experience extra nutritional demands on their bodies while the elderly suffer disproportionately as well, particularly if they lack the support of their children.

SOLUTIONS to POVERTY, HUNGER and MALNUTRITION PROBLEMS

Solutions to hunger and malnutrition problems depend on the types and causes, but alleviation of poverty is needed for a long-term solution. Famine relief strategies differ from solutions to chronic hunger and malnutrition, but even in famines, the poor are most likely to be afflicted. Unfortunately there is no magic bullet to the solution of poverty. A concerted effort across many fronts is required.

Raising Incomes

Lifting vulnerable people out of poverty is central to any long-term strategy to alleviate malnutrition in the world. For subsistence farmers, this strategy implies raising productivity, increasing access to land, or creating opportunities to migrate to off-farm employment. For the population in general, it implies a need for increased employment opportunities combined with higher productivity per person. The latter requires growth in jobs and in capital per job in the non-farm sector. Enhanced education, an investment in human capital, will also increase productivity and incomes. Equal access to jobs and expanded economic opportunities in impoverished regions can also help reduce poverty. Economic growth without increased employment for the poorest segments of the population will do little to reduce hunger. Programs to increase employment and earnings opportunities for women are particularly important, partly because these opportunities help accelerate the transition to lower birth rates (for reasons discussed in Chapter 4).

Agricultural Production

Agricultural productivity is particularly important for the incomes and nutritional status of the poor, because in most developing countries the

poorest people have no choice but to be farmers, and they feed themselves and their families using their own labor and available land. Increased productivity for those farmers not only raises their incomes and purchasing power, but can also lower the price of food for those who must buy it to feed their families, making it possible for the poor to purchase larger quantities. Hence, methods for increasing food production are a major focus of this book. Increased use of purchased inputs, improved marketing and credit institutions, improved agricultural policies, better education, effective agricultural research, and investment in infrastructure such as roads, storage, and irrigation systems are particularly important.

Safety Nets

As noted above, much poverty is transitory and caused by fluctuations in income. These fluctuations, in turn, can have dramatic impacts on nutrition, and they can lead to longer-term poverty because households often invoke harmful coping mechanisms to deal with them. Safety net programs, such as cash and in-kind transfers, public works programs, conditional cash transfers, and fee waivers for health and education, can distribute wealth to the most needy and provide insurance against risks. By protecting vulnerable farmers against the adverse consequences of risk, safety nets allow them to make better investment decisions and adopt new technologies and production practices (such as new seeds and fertilizers) that increase mean incomes. Safety nets need to be properly targeted and efficiently administered to avoid waste, but much has been learned in recent years about their design and implementation. Many countries have now successfully implemented them.[6]

Food Intervention Programs

Food price subsidies, supplementary feeding programs, and food fortification can each help reduce nutritional deficiencies. Few developing countries have come close to eliminating malnutrition without some combination of these practices. However, these programs alone cannot solve problems of chronic malnutrition.

General food price subsidies were used in Sri Lanka for several years and helped relieve malnutrition and extend life expectancy to a remarkable degree. However, food price subsidies are expensive, and

[6] See Margaret Grosh, Carlo del Ninno, Emil Tesliuc, and Azedine Ouerghi, *For Protection and Promotion: The design and implementation of effective safety nets* (Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2008).

even Sri Lanka decided to cut back its general subsidy, and instead to target specific groups. A study by the International Food Policy Research Institute (IFPRI) of the Sri Lankan food stamp scheme indicated that the targeted subsidies did reduce program costs substantially, but had mixed results in reaching the poor.[7] Food price subsidy schemes sometimes lower prices, thereby reducing incentives for domestic food production.

Several countries have instituted supplementary feeding programs for vulnerable groups such as children and pregnant and nursing mothers. In some cases these programs provide food to be consumed in a specific location such as in schools or health centers, while in others food may be consumed at home. In either case, while total family food consumption rises, that of the food recipient usually grows by less than the total donation. Some food is shared with family members. The evidence on supplementary feeding programs indicates that they often are associated with measurable improvements in nutritional status, but they tend to be expensive for the benefits received. Administration of these projects can be very difficult. In some cases, these programs have been assisted with food aid from other countries as discussed below.

Another food intervention program involves fortification by adding specific nutrients during processing. The most successful example is iodine fortification of salt to prevent goiter. Vitamin A also has proven relatively inexpensive to add to foods such as tea, sugar, margarine, monosodium glutamate, and cereal products. Attempts have been made to fortify food with iron to prevent anemia, but reducing iron deficiency anemia has proven to be a complex problem. In general, the effectiveness of adding nutrients to food is reduced by the fact that the poor buy few processed foods, there is often cultural resistance to the fortified product, and the cost of fortification is prohibitive. In many cases, the "fortified" food has been shown to have no more nutrients than unfortified foods; quality control can be prohibitively expensive in developing countries. Recent success in incorporating vitamin A and iron into rice through genetic modification provides another avenue for reducing these micro-nutrient problems.

Health Improvements

Efforts to improve sanitation, reduce parasite infections, and prevent dehydration caused by diarrhea can reduce malnutrition and

[7] Neville Edirisinghe, "The Food Stamp Scheme in Sri Lanka: Costs, Benefits, and Options for Modification," International Food Policy Research Institute, Research Report No. 58, Washington, D.C., March 1987, pp. 1–85.

mortality substantially. For example, oral rehydration therapy, involving the use of water, salt, and sugar in specified proportions to replace fluid lost during diarrhea, can significantly reduce diarrhea-related deaths. Investments in sanitation services, such as potable water and latrines, when combined with effective education programs, can improve nutritional status by reducing diarrhea. Better health services such as immunization programs can reduce the incidence and intensity of diseases that contribute to malnutrition.

Political, Social, and Educational Changes

Political stability can help alleviate both famine conditions and chronic hunger. The famine in Ethiopia in 1983 and 1984 was exacerbated by political upheaval that hampered relief efforts. The recent famine in North Korea also has political roots. Because programs to curb chronic hunger and malnutrition require long-term commitments, they are necessarily rendered less effective by political instability. Responsible political action can improve income distribution in a country, thereby reducing poverty and malnutrition.

Social, cultural, and educational factors also come into play. For example, declining rates of breastfeeding in some countries have contributed to malnutrition as substitutes can be less nutritionally complete, are often watered down, and in some cases are even unsanitary. In other cases, breastfeeding may continue too long without the addition of needed solid foods. While social and cultural factors change slowly, and economic factors influence decisions, education can help. In fact, few consumption practices are totally unaffected by education. Nutrition education programs, especially when combined with income-generating projects or efforts to increase a family's access to nutrients, such as home gardening, have been shown to lead to improved nutritional status.

International Actions

International actions can help alleviate poverty, famine, and chronic malnutrition. Because increased incomes are so important to improved nutrition, opening of markets in more developed countries, and debt relief, are actions that can help, especially in the long run. Foreign assistance can provide short-run relief and, when properly designed, facilitate long-run development.

Reduced barriers by developed countries to imports from developing countries will enable low-income nations to gain greater access to world markets. The foreign exchange earned can be used for development efforts and food imports when needed.

Rural Health Center in Colombia.

Debt relief is a dire need in many countries, particularly where past governments were not held accountable for how loans were spent, so that the funds were not invested productively. When bad debts arise, it is usually in the long-run best interests of both lender and borrower to share some of the burden of adjustment, to reduce expectation of loan repayment in line with the actual productivity of the loan. For more details on this important topic, see Chapter 19.

Foreign assistance includes food aid as well as technical and financial assistance. Gifts and loans of food at low interest rates can help solve part of the hunger problem if the food assistance is properly administered. Food aid can relive short-term famines and be used in supplementary feeding programs and in other activities, such as food for work programs, to help generate wealth in developing countries. Much more important for the long run, financial and technical assistance can help developing countries expand their capital bases and improve methods for producing food and other products, allowing them to import or develop the new technologies they need to break out of poverty.

SUMMARY

In this chapter, the types and consequences of poverty, hunger, and malnutrition were examined. We now have much better information on the distribution and extent of poverty. Even though it is difficult to measure accurately the extent of hunger and malnutrition in the world,

it is known that chronic malnutrition affects more people than do famines. Malnutrition results in reduced physical and mental activity, stunted growth, blindness, anemia, goiter, cretinism, mental anguish, and death.

The causes of hunger are many, but virtually all these causes are related to poverty. Infections, diseases and parasites, poor nutritional practices, and seasonal variability in food supplies all contribute to the severity of malnutrition. Solutions to hunger and malnutrition include raising incomes; increasing agricultural production in developing countries; food intervention programs; improving health systems; political, social, and educational changes; and a series of international activities such as food aid and other foreign assistance, debt relief, opening of foreign markets, and price stabilization.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Anthropometry
Chronic malnutrition
Debt relief
Dietary surveys
Famine
Food aid
Food balance sheets
Food fortification
Food price subsidies
Foreign assistance
Kwashiorkor, marasmus, goiter, anemia, and cretinism
Maldistribution of food
Oral rehydration therapy
Political upheaval
Poverty
Price stabilization
Protein and calorie deficiency
Safety nets
Seasonal and cyclical hunger
Supplementary feeding programs
Transitory poverty
Vitamin and mineral deficiency
Vulnerability

Looking Ahead

Hunger and malnutrition imply a need for food but not necessarily a demand for food unless that need is backed by purchasing power. Food demand is influenced by income, prices, population, and tastes and preferences. In the next chapter, we will examine tools that can help measure or project the extent to which various demand factors affect food consumption. We will explore how demand interacts with supply to determine prices. The tools discussed are the first of a set of theories and methods presented in this book that can improve your ability to analyze and not just observe food and development problems and policies.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1. What are the causes of transitory poverty? What can be done to alleviate the problem?
2. Why is it important to have information on the depth and severity of poverty in addition to the poverty prevalence?
3. Has poverty gone down globally over time?
4. Is famine more widespread today than in the past?
5. Is protein deficiency a more severe problem in developing countries today than is calorie deficiency? Why or why not?
6. If people in the United States moved to a diet in which they consumed more grain and less meat, would there be more food for people in poor countries of the world? Why or why not?
7. What are the principal causes and consequences of hunger?
8. How do we measure the adequacy of food availability in a country?
9. What are some solutions to hunger and malnutrition problems?
10. How might safety net programs contribute to long-term development?
11. Why and how does political upheaval contribute to famine?
12. What are the major interactions between health and nutritional problems?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Flores, Rafael, and Stuart Gillespie, *Health and Nutrition: Emerging and Reemerging Issues in Developing Countries*, IFPRI 2020 Vision, Focus 5, February 2001 (Available at website: http://www.ifpri.org/index1.htm).

Foster, Phillips, and Howard D. Leathers, *The World Food Problem* (Boulder, Colorado: Lynne Reinner Publishers, 1999).

Grosh, Margaret, Carlo del Ninno, Emil Tesliuc, and Azedine Ouerghi, *For Protection and Promotion: The design and implementation of effective safety nets* (Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2008).

Mellor, John W., and Sarah Gavian, "Famine, Causes, Prevention, and Relief," *Science*, vol. 235 (January 1987), pp. 539–45.

Pinstrup-Andersen, Per, and Rajul Pandya-Lorch, *The Unfinished Agenda: Perspectives on Overcoming Hunger, Poverty, and Environmental Degradation* (International Food Policy Research Institute, Washington, D.C., 2001), especially Parts 1 and 2 (Available at IFPRI website: http://www.ifpri.org/index1.htm).

Sen, Amartya K., *Poverty and Famines: An Essay on Entitlement and Deprivation* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1981).

Siegel, Paul B., and Jeffrey Alwang, An Asset Based Approach to Social Risk Management. SP Discussion Series 9926, Human Development Network, Social Protection Unit, the World Bank, Washington, October 1999, 67 pp. UN Standing Committee on Nutrition, *Fifth Report on the World Food Situation: Nutrition for Improved Development Outcomes* (New York: United Nations, 2004), 143 pp.

UNDP, *Human Development Report 2007–2008* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan Press, 2007).

World Health Organization, *World Health Report 2005, Make Every Mother and Child Count* (Geneva: WHO Press, 205), 252 pp.

CHAPTER 3

Economics of Food Demand

> Rather than a race between food and population, the food equation should be viewed as a dynamic balance… between food supply and demand. — J. W. Mellor. and B. F. Johnston[1]

THIS CHAPTER

1 Discusses the concept of effective demand and the relative importance of income, population, preferences, and prices in determining the demand for food as development occurs
2 Explains the importance of income elasticities and price elasticities of demand for projecting consumption patterns and for development planning
3 Describes how supply interacts with demand over time to determine price levels and trends

EFFECTIVE DEMAND for FOOD

The need for food and the effective demand for food are related but distinct concepts. Food needs correspond to the nutrient consumption required to maintain normal physical and mental growth in children and to sustain healthy bodies and normal levels of activity in adults. The effective demand (often just called demand) for food is the amount of food people are willing to buy at different prices and income levels, given their needs and preferences.

In this chapter, we consider the means for analyzing food demand changes resulting from income and price changes. The goal is to help you predict the likely impacts of a change in either factor on consumption. Later, we'll see how these food demand pressures interact with

[1] John W. Mellor and Bruce F. Johnston, "The World Food Equation: Interrelations among Development, Employment, and Food Consumption," *Journal of Economic Literature*, vol. 22 (June 1984), p. 533.

feed and bio-fuel demand and with supply conditions to determine changes in economic well-being.

Determinants of Food Demand

The quantity demanded of food, or of any commodity, is influenced by two major factors: its price, relative to all other goods, and consumers' incomes, relative to all prices. In order to isolate each effect, economists use a thought-experiment in which we imagine a change in only one variable at a time, and trace out the resulting change in another.

When considering the effect of a change in price on quantity consumed, we expect a higher price to cause a lower quantity consumed and vice versa. This inverse relationship between price and quantity consumed is often called the *law of demand*, and is illustrated on a graph using a market *demand curve* (Fig. 3-1). The slope and location of the

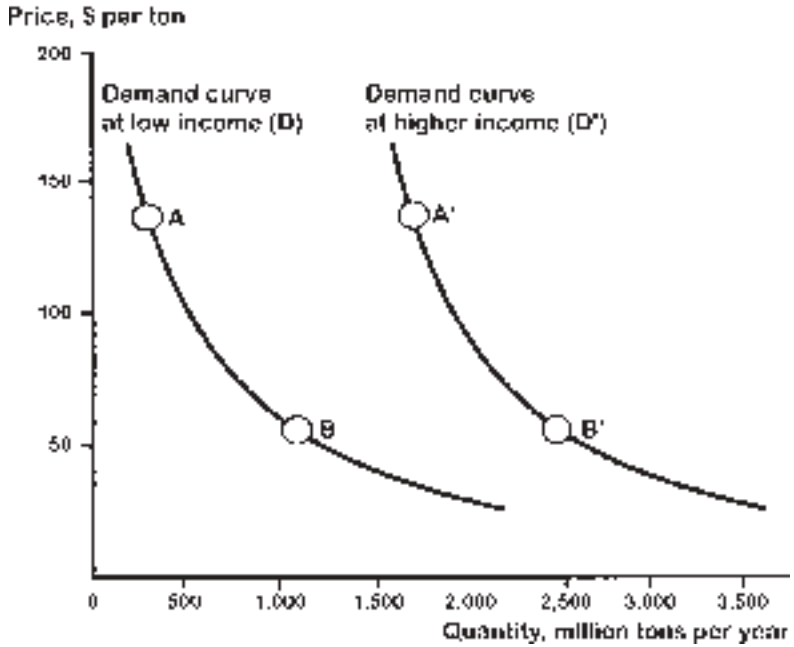


Figure 3-1. Hypothetical demand curves for a commodity. A reduction in the price of the commodity, all other things being equal, will cause a movement along a demand curve, say from point A to point B, and an increase in quantity demanded. Changes in the determinants of demand — population, income, prices of other goods, and preferences — can cause a shift in demand, say from point A on demand curve D to point A' on demand curve D'.

market demand curve are determined primarily by income per person, the number of people, and the distribution of income among those people, prices of other goods, and other factors such as consumer preferences and consumption technologies. Changes in any of these factors cause the demand curve to shift, as shown by the shift from curve D to curve D′ in Figure 3-1. Such a shift might be caused by a rise in income, which increases the quantity demanded at a given price. Alternatively, the shift might be caused by population growth at a constant per-capita income. This income effect on demand varies by commodity. Because the influence of income on food demand is not constant across countries, within countries, or by commodity, it is important to have a measure of the sensitivity of demand for food and for particular goods to changes in income. The measure used is called the *income elasticity of demand*.

Income Elasticities of Demand

The *income elasticity of demand* is defined as the percentage by which the quantity demanded of a commodity will change for a one percent change in income, other things remaining constant.[2] For example, when per-capita income increases by 1 percent, if quantity demanded of a commodity increases by 0.3 percent, its income elasticity of demand is 0.3. Typically, for a very low-income country, the elasticity of demand for food as a whole is around 0.8 while for a very high-income country it is around 0.1. This difference in income elasticities means that changes to income have a much larger relative impact on food demand in low-income countries than in high-income countries.

By necessity, poor people have no choice but to spend the bulk of their income on food — at times as much as 80 percent — and when their incomes rise they spend a high proportion of that increase on more food. Eventually, however, further increases in income tend to be spent on other things. This change in the proportion of the family's budget spent on food, or *Engel's law*, says that as income increases, people spend a smaller proportion of their total income on food. This process is reflected in Fig. 3-2, which shows the percentage of total income spent on food for a number of countries with different levels of per-capita income. The distinct downward slope associated with Engel's law would be similar if the graph were constructed for individuals within

[2] If we define n to be the income elasticity of demand for a good, Q to be the change in quantity demanded for that good, and I to be a change in income, then: $n = \frac{\%\Delta Q}{\%\Delta I} = \left[\frac{\Delta Q / Q}{\Delta I / I}\right] = \left[\frac{\Delta Q}{\Delta I}\right]\left[\frac{I}{Q}\right]$

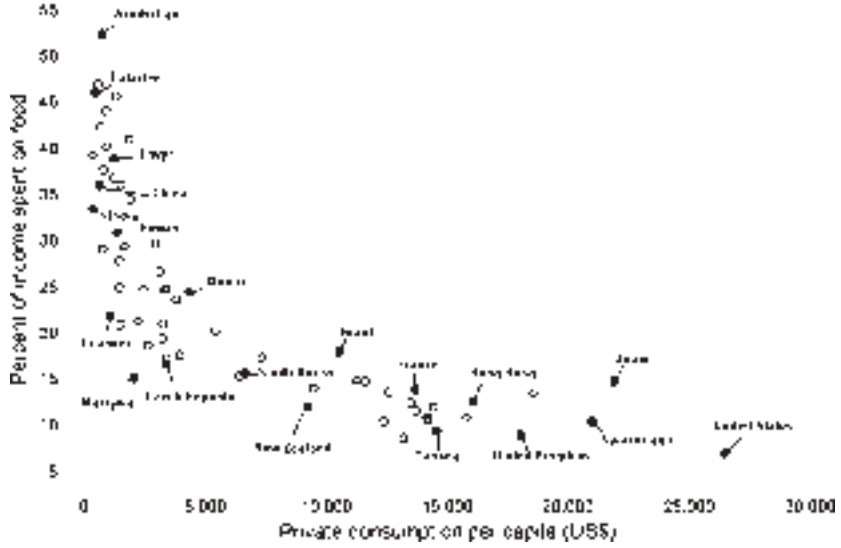


Figure 3-2. Relationship between private consumption and percentage of income spent on food, most countries. (*Source*: World Bank Indicators on-line database, 2005, and USDA/ERS, 2008.)

a country, where richer people spend a smaller fraction of their income on food.

Engel's law reflects, in part, the limited capacity of the human stomach, but note that total expenditures on food generally continue to rise with income, even as the proportion of the budget spent on food declines. Rising incomes lead people to consume more total calories, and also to consume more expensive foods. These foods are often more highly processed (for example, as people switch to bread instead of porridge) and include more animal products (meat, dairy, eggs and fish) as well as more fruits and vegetables. The transition in consumption from a few inexpensive starchy staples such as cassava, rice, or corn to this greater variety of more expensive foods is known as *Bennett's law*, named after the same M.K. Bennett mentioned in Chapter 1. But note that when consumers switch from starchy staples to animal products, demand for animal feed can rise very fast: consumers may reduce their direct consumption of cereal grains as food, while increasing their total usage of cereal grains as animal feed.

Diversification and improvement of the diet with rising incomes implies that income elasticities vary by commodity, and by income level. To show patterns of demand among some of the poorest people in the

Table 3-1. Selected Income Elasticities of Demand for Agricultural Commodities in Sub-Saharan Africa

Region	Wheat	Rice	Maize	Millet	Roots and tubers	Pulses
The Sahel	0.92	0.93	0.46	0.15	— 0.04	— 0.14
West	0.87	0.65	0.15	0.09	0.12	0.42
Central	0.55	0.93	0.66	0.28	— 0.21	0.14
Eastern	0.51	0.58	0.28	0.01	0.29	0.02
Southern	1.46	0.56	0.35	0.17	— 0.15	— 0.002

Source: Cheryl Christensen et al., *Food Problems and Prospects in Sub-Saharan Africa: The Decade of the 1980's,* U.S. Department of Agriculture, Economic Research Service, Foreign Agricultural Research Report No. 186 (Washington, D.C., August 1981).

Table 3-2. Selected Income Elasticities of Demand for Cereals and Livestock Products in Various Counties

Country	Cereals	Beef	Pork	Poultry	Cow's milk	Eggs
Brazil	0.15	0.58	0.29	0.64	0.45	0.55
Egypt	0.04	0.80	0.70	1.30	1.00	0.70
India	0.25	1.20	0.80	1.50	0.80	1.00
lndonesia	0.29	1.50	0.80	1.50	0.20	1.20
Kenya	0.35	1.00	0.70	1.20	0.59	1.30
South Korea	0.09	0.80	0.73	1.00	0.49	0.80
Malaysia	0.14	0.49	0.41	0.87	0.57	0.73
Mexico	-0.10	0.59	0.49	0.93	0.68	0.59
Nigeria	0.17	1.20	1.00	1.00	1.20	1.20
Philippines	0.22	1.20	0.93	1.00	1.50	1.00
Thailand	0.06	0.56	0.47	0.50	0.80	0.50
Turkey	-0.05	0.80	0.50	1.20	0.80	0.80

Source: J. S. Sarma, *Cereal Feed Use in the Third World: Past Trends and Protections to 2000*, International Food Policy Research Institute, Research Report No. 57 (Washington, DC., December 1986), p. 64.

world, Table 3-1 provides examples of estimated income elasticities in various regions of Sub-Saharan Africa for a range of commodities. Estimated income elasticities of demand for other countries and commodities are presented in Table 3-2. Note that income elasticities for animal products are higher than for food grains and root crops. Wheat and rice income elasticities tend to be higher than those of coarse grains, while roots and tubers have consistently small elasticities. The substantial variation in income elasticities across countries reflects differences in

income and in preferences for foods. For example, the income elasticity of demand for beef is low in Latin America compared to Africa, partly because initial levels of beef consumption are high in Latin America.

Most of the estimated income elasticities in Tables 3-1 and 3-2 range between 0 and 1. These goods are called *normal* goods. Goods with income elasticities greater than 1 are called *superior* and represent foods that can be thought of as luxuries in the diet in a particular country. If the income elasticity is less than 0, the goods are called *inferior,* because consumption of them actually declines as income increases.

The fact that income elasticities vary by commodity means that increases in income will result in an asymmetrical expansion in demand for different commodities. Demand for some commodities will expand by a greater percentage than that for others. Depending on the nature of supply, asymmetric expansion of demand can cause different pressures on commodity prices. These changes in commodity prices can influence which crops producers grow and can help determine the direction of development.

Price Elasticities of Demand

So far we've focused on per-capita income as the major determinant of food consumption per person, but quantity demanded also responds to price changes. That price response was represented by movements along the demand curve in Figure 3-1, such as movement from point A at a high price to point B with a relatively low price and a higher quantity demanded. The degree of response in demand from a change in price is measured by the (own) *price elasticity of demand,* defined as the percentage change in quantity demanded of a commodity given a one percent change in its price, other things remaining unchanged.[3] For example, an own-price elasticity of *-0.5* means that with a 1 percent change in price, the quantity demanded will change in the opposite direction by 0.5 percent. Own-price elasticities are typically negative, reflecting the negative slope of the demand curve. If the own-price elasticity of demand is greater (in absolute value) than one, the demand is said to be *elastic*. If it is equal to one, it is said to be *unit-elastic*. If it is less than

[3] If we define *E* to be the price elasticity of demand for a good, "Q to be the change in quantity consumed, and "P to be the change in its price, then:

$$E = \frac{\%\Delta Q}{\%\Delta P} = \frac{(\Delta Q/Q)}{(\Delta P/P)} = \frac{\Delta Q}{\Delta P}\cdot\frac{P}{Q}$$

Potatoes in Ecuador.

one, it is said to be *inelastic*. In a demand curve such as shown in Figure 3-I, an elastic demand has a relatively flat slope, as small price changes lead to large quantity changes.

Price elasticities of demand are useful for projecting demand changes that might result from policies that manipulate prices or from supply shifts. *Cross-price elasticities,* which represent the percentage change in quantity consumed of one commodity for a one percent change in the price of another commodity, holding all else equal, also are important.[4] If the cross-price elasticity of demand is greater than zero, the two commodities are said to be *substitutes.* If the cross-price elasticity is zero, the commodities are unrelated, and if it is less than zero they are called *complements.*

When the price of a commodity changes, the change in relative prices causes most consumers to adjust the composition of the commodity bundle they purchase so that they buy less of the good that increased in price. This substitution is known as the *substitution effect.* Also, if the price of a commodity increases, the real purchasing power of a given amount of income is reduced, causing demand to change because of an *income effect.* In most cases, this income effect is a second

[4] If we let E_{12} = the cross price elasticity for commodity 1 as the price of commodity 2 changes, DQ_1 = the change in the quantity demanded of commodity 1, as DP_2 = the change in price of commodity 2, then: $E_{12} = \frac{\%\Delta Q_1}{\%\Delta P_2} = \left(\frac{\Delta Q_1}{\Delta P_2}\right)\left(\frac{P_2}{Q_1}\right)$

factor that reduces demand for the commodity experiencing the price increase.[5] For inferior goods, however — commodities such as potatoes and cassava — the income effect may work in the opposite direction and partially offset the reduced consumption induced by the relative price increase.

A price increase for a good will increase consumption of substitutes, and decrease consumption of complements. Part of these consumption changes are caused by changes in relative prices and part of them are due to income effects. Because the income elasticity of demand for food is large for low-income consumers and because they spend a high proportion of their income on food, low-income consumers often make larger adjustments in their commodity purchases than do high-income consumers when prices change.

Obtaining Elasticity Estimates

The effects of the changes in consumer behavior discussed above have important implications for food policies and nutrition in less-developed countries, so food-policy analysts often need updated local estimates of the sizes of the income elasticities, own-price elasticities, and cross-price elasticities of demand for various commodities. For example, if a policymaker wants to project domestic food demand and the increased production or imports needed to meet that demand, the income elasticity of demand for food is one of the pieces of information needed. If an estimate of the effect on the calorie and protein intakes of the poor resulting from a decrease in the price of rice is needed, it is important to have the own-price elasticity of demand for rice and the cross-price elasticities of demand between rice and other major foods in the country, disaggregated by income group.

How are elasticity estimates obtained? There are several approaches, and the appropriate procedure to use depends on the data available and the questions being asked. One type of estimate uses national aggregate data on consumption, production, trade, and prices. Often these data are published by international sources for several countries. If data are available on the same factors for several countries or for several regions in one country for one period of time, they are called *cross-sectional data.* If data are available for the same factors for

[5] If the consumer is also a producer of the good, which is often the case in rural areas of developing countries, this income effect can be positive. Commodity price increases can actually raise disposable income by increasing farm profits. This profit effect can be important when examining price responses among agricultural households that both consume and produce goods.

one country for several years, they are called *time-series data.* Often we have combined cross-sectional and time-series data, that is, time-series data for the same factors for a number of countries at the aggregate level. These aggregate data are not very useful for studying short-term consumption behavior for commodities within countries because tastes and preferences vary by country. However, the data may be helpful in making long-term projections.

Sometimes, household-level, cross-sectional data are obtained by sampling many households to obtain information on income, expenditures on different commodities, prices paid, and educational levels and other demographic characteristics.[6] Occasionally the data are collected over time as well, although not often because of the cost involved. If one is interested in microeconomic issues associated with consumer behavior for different income groups, these household-level data are preferred.

Data (aggregate or household-level) are usually analyzed graphically and then in a statistical or *econometric* (statistical model which incorporates economic theory) model containing a set of demand equations.[7] These equations include variables representing the factors mentioned above. Elasticities are calculated from the estimated coefficients. These elasticities can be used for a variety of policy and planning purposes. Sometimes when data do not exist in one country or at a period in time, studies from other countries or at a different period of time are used. Elasticities from other studies may not be ideal, but they are frequently used.

Some countries have serious deficiencies in aggregate and household-level data. Often these data are unreliable or even nonexistent. Policy analysts who have little time or money to collect new data and estimate a model sometimes rely on relationships from economic theory to obtain rough approximations of missing elasticities. For example, there is a useful working assumption (called the homogeneity condition) that the sum of the own-price elasticity, the income elasticity, and the cross-price elasticities of demand for a commodity is equal to zero.[8]

[6] Collecting household data is a difficult and costly undertaking. For an excellent overview of topics in household data collection, see Joachim von Braun and Detlev Puetz, *Data Needs for Food Policy in Developing Countries* (Washington, D.C.: International Food Policy Research Institute, 1993).

[7] See Angus Deaton, *The Analysis of Household Surveys* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1997), especially Ch. 1, for an advanced treatment of types of data and their uses for policy analysis.

[8] That is, for the i[th] commodity out of T commodities, $E_i + \eta_i + \sum_{j=1}^{t} E_{ij} = 0$.

Typically, the sum of the cross-price elasticities for a commodity is greater than zero and the own-price elasticity is negative. Therefore, the absolute value of the own-price elasticity is usually larger than the income elasticity of demand. One may have an estimate of the income elasticity of demand but not the own-price elasticity. The homogeneity condition can be used to obtain a rough estimate of the size of the price elasticity of demand given that income elasticity and assumptions about cross-price elasticities. The homogeneity condition is just one example of the use of demand theory. The main points are that data availability and quality limit the potential for economic analysis, but a variety of techniques can often be exploited to interpret the available data in useful ways.

USING CONSUMPTION PARAMETERS for POLICY and PLANNING

The purpose of obtaining income and price elasticities is to assist with policy analyses and planning. A variety of questions can be answered with the help of these elasticities. For example, what will happen to the consumption of rice, wheat, sugar, or meat when income rises? What will happen to the aggregate demand for food? How will the demand change for different commodities as absolute and relative prices change? What will be the effects of price and income policies on the poor? The answers to these questions help policymakers anticipate future demand changes and production needs, and provide information for designing price and income policies (see Box 3-1).

Income-Induced Changes in the Mix of Commodities Demanded

For commodities with high income elasticities, demand can grow very rapidly when income rises. Anticipating income growth, policymakers may want to support research or use other means for encouraging increased production of those commodities. Otherwise, prices will rise or imports increase in response to demand growth.

Many highly income-elastic commodities, such as milk and vegetables, have high nutritional value. However, some goods with relatively high nutritional value have low income elasticities.[9] If a government wants to increase consumption of a good with a low income

[9] Elasticities reflect people's preferences for different attributes of the good, including taste, convenience and nutritional value. A low value for an elasticity in not necessarily "bad"; it reflects consumer choices given income, preferences, prices, and information about the good.

BOX 3-1.
IMPACTS of RICE PRICE POLICY on the POOR in THAILAND

Angus Deaton used household-level data from Thailand to examine how policies affecting the price of rice would affect households in rural and urban areas and at different levels of income. Because rural households are both producers and consumers of rice, increased prices may or may not benefit them. They will gain as producers, but lose as consumers (all urban rice consumers will lose as a result of higher rice prices). The key to the analysis is to determine the "net benefit ratio" or the difference between the value of production and the value of consumption divided by total household expenditures. This ratio varies by total household income, and the analysis shows that middle income producers will benefit most from rice price increases. High-income rural households benefit very little from high prices (they earn their incomes outside agriculture or do not produce much rice). Very low income rural households benefit by relatively small amounts, because their marketed surplus is low. Compared to plantation-type products (such as sugar and bananas), where product price increases benefit larger-scale producers, rice price policy has its strongest impact on the middle of the income distribution in rural areas of Thailand. The study shows that the impacts of price policy depend on the commodity in question and the socioeconomic conditions of producer and consumer groups.

Source: Angus Deaton, *The Analysis of Household Surveys* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1997), pp. 187–90.

elasticity, it may have to resort to educational or subsidy programs. Educational programs help change people's perceptions about physical (nutrient) needs and the amount of these needs the food provides. These programs essentially lower the costs associated with acquiring information about nutrient needs and food nutrient content.

At the world level, differences in income elasticities by commodity imply that as per-capita income grows over time, a relative shift will occur in demand toward agricultural commodities with high income elasticities. Many of these are high protein foods such as livestock products. One can also expect the grains fed to livestock, such as corn, to increase in demand relative to food grains such as rice. These types of changes have already been occurring over the past several years.

Another impact of these patterns of income elasticities is that the average income elasticity of demand for food grains will decrease as development occurs. Small income elasticities are associated with small price elasticities of demand. With lower price elasticities, increased

Cattle in Colombia.

production of food grains would put sharp downward pressure on their prices. Lower prices should help poor consumers who continue to spend large shares of their budget on grains, but may force many of the farmers producing these grains to switch to other commodities or leave agriculture.

Changes in Aggregate Food Demand as Development Proceeds[10]

The demand for food is influenced by population, per-capita income, prices, and preferences. As development proceeds, the two primary factors shifting the demand for food outward are increases in population and in per-capita income. These two major forces are captured by the simple relation $D = p + ng$, where D = rate of growth in the demand for food, p = rate of population growth, n = income elasticity of demand for food, and g = rate of increase in per-capita income.

In the above equation, population influences food demand in two ways. First, as presented by the term p, it causes a proportional increase in demand. However, per-capita income equals total income divided by population. Therefore, the net effect of population growth will not be a proportional increase in demand, because population growth may slow the rate of per-capita income growth.

[10] Material in this section draws on John W. Mellor, *Economics of Agricultural Development* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University, 1966), pp. 73–9.

At the extreme, if income does not expand at all with increased population, the drop in per-capita income will almost completely nullify the direct effect of population growth. For example, developing countries often experience a population growth rate of 3 percent per year during the early stages of development. The income elasticity of demand for food may be as high as 0.9. If total income remains constant, then per-capita income will decline by 3 percent and the rate of growth of demand will be D = 3 + 0.9(-3) = 0.3.[11]

On the other hand, if per-capita income is growing at 3 percent per year while population is also growing at 2.5 percent (rates that are not uncommon in middle-income developing countries), even if the income elasticity of demand for food drops to 0.7, the rate of growth in demand for food would be 4.6 percent per year. Few countries have been able to maintain such a rate of growth in agricultural production over time. Thus, food imports may be needed to meet growing demands.

These examples ignore the fact that income growth in most less-developed countries is heavily dependent on agricultural output. If agricultural output fails to grow, per-capita income will grow very slowly. As development proceeds, the proportion of employment and of total national income derived from agriculture shrinks. Even so, total per-capita income still may be affected by the rate of growth of agricultural production because agriculture provides food, capital, and a market for non-agricultural products. These issues will be more fully discussed in subsequent chapters.

The determinants of food demand are interrelated; but as development proceeds, certain patterns tend to hold for some of these factors (see Table 3-3). As incomes increase, population growth rates generally increase slightly at first as death rates decline. For a number of reasons discussed in the next chapter, population growth rates eventually fall as income continues to grow. The rate of per-capita income growth is frequently highest in the middle-income countries, and the income elasticity of demand for food declines continually as income grows. The result is that the rate of growth in food demand is highest for middle-income countries. These are the countries that are most likely to need food imports. Data indicate that middle-income countries frequently exhibit the largest increase in per-capita income and food imports even though they also experience the largest increases in agricultural production.

[11] The negative consequences of such a scenario should be obvious: total demand will increase by 0.3 percent but *per capita* demand will decline by 2.7 percent.

Table 3-3. Comparison of Growth of Demand for Agricultural Goods, Hypothetical Cases

Levels of Development	Rate of population growth	Rate of per capita income growth	Income elasticity of demand	Rate of growth of demand
Very low income	2.5	0	1.0	2.5
Low income	3.0	1.0	0.9	3.9
Medium income	2.5	4.0	0.7	5.3
High income	2.0	4.0	0.5	4.0
Very high income	1.0	3.0	0.2	1.3

Adapted from John W. Mellor, *Economics of Agricultural Development* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1966), p. 78.

DEMAND for FARM PRODUCTS for NON-FOOD or FEED USES

Many agricultural products are used not only for food and feed, but for industrial purposes such as starch, fiber, and energy. In recent years, foods crops such as maize, soybeans, and sugarcane have increasingly been diverted to production of bio-fuels such as ethanol and bio-diesel. As the demand for these energy products grows, it competes directly with the demand for food and feed, driving up the overall demand (and prices) for farm products as growth in supply has not been able to keep up with growth in overall demand, and the supply of agricultural products for food and feed is diverted to bio-fuels.

Demand for bio-fuels has grown because the demand for energy has risen due to population and income growth around the world, while energy — primarily oil and gas — supplies have not grown as rapidly, thus driving up the price of energy products. Technology to produce ethanol and biodiesel has improved over time, so that the net energy balance (energy used to produce as compared to energy obtained from a gallon of bio-fuel) has become more favorable, reducing the cost of supplying bio-fuels. Governments, led by the United States and Brazil, have also subsidized research on and production of bio-fuels.

At any given time, speculators are also in the market, driving prices up or down as they make bets on the future supply and demand situations for energy products. Due to speculation and uncertainty, prices may rise above or drop below the level that fundamental supply and demand factors would dictate they should be. However, prices

eventually adjust (and remove over-adjustment) as new information becomes available. A good example is the price patterns for maize, rice, soybeans, and other basic cereals in 2007–2008. Grain prices rose sharply in those years after being relatively constant for several years. Fundamental demand forces — such as increased population and incomes in several countries and increased demand for bio-fuels — combined with supply factors such as slow growth in productivity, higher input costs, and poor weather in major producing countries to drive up grain prices. However, prices were driven even higher than they would have been otherwise for several months due to speculation. In the section below, we examine further how demand and supply factors interact to determine price.

INTERACTIONS between DEMAND and SUPPLY

If markets operate freely with numerous buyers and sellers, supply interacts with demand to determine the quantity supplied and demanded as well as the price. Market supply is defined as the amounts of a product offered for sale in a market at each specified price during a specified period of time (see Fig. 3-3).

A given supply curve assumes that the following factors are held constant: (1) technology of production (the way the good is produced), (2) prices of inputs used in production, (3) prices of products that may be substituted in production, and (4) number of sellers in the market. Changes in these factors can cause the supply curve to shift inward or outward. For food as a whole, changes in technology are a major factor causing shifts in supply over time. A new technology that lowers the cost of production will shift the supply curve downward to the right (such as from supply curve 1 to supply curve 2 in Fig. 3-3).

Price and Policy Implications

The rate of growth or decline in agricultural prices over time depends in large part on the net effects of supply and demand shifts (see Figure 3-4). Because of outward shifts of the demand curve caused by population and income growth, it is unlikely that agricultural prices will experience major declines resulting from supply growth in a country during the early stages of development.[12] If the supply curve for food shifts out very little, population- and income-driven demand growth could

[12] However, there may be substantial local or regional variation (see Box 3-2), and agricultural prices in a country may go up or down as well, due to changes in supply and demand in international markets.

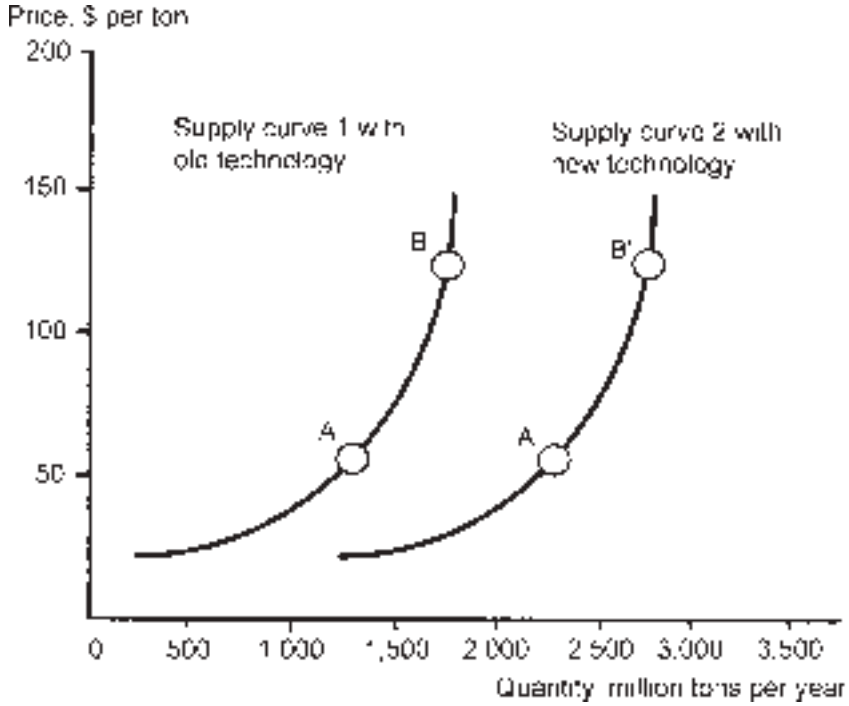


Figure 3-3. Hypothetical supply curve for a commodity. An increase in the price of the commodity, all other things being equal, will cause a movement along a supply curve, say from point A to point B, and an increase in quantity supplied. Changes in the determinants of supply — technology, input prices, other output prices, number of sellers — can cause a shift in the supply curve, say from A along supply curve I to A' along supply curve 2, or vice versa if there is a worsening of productivity.

lead to price increases, especially if a country has isolated its markets from world markets. However, these increases are likely to be small because of the close relationship between agricultural production growth and income growth during early stages of development. As noted earlier, it is difficult to get large increases in income, and therefore effective demand, without corresponding increases in agricultural production.

Other important determinants of the effect of supply and demand shifts on agricultural prices are the elasticities of supply and demand. The more elastic the supply curve (roughly the flatter it is in Figure 3-4), the less prices will change as demands grow. Open economies (those where imports and exports are common) tend to be characterized by

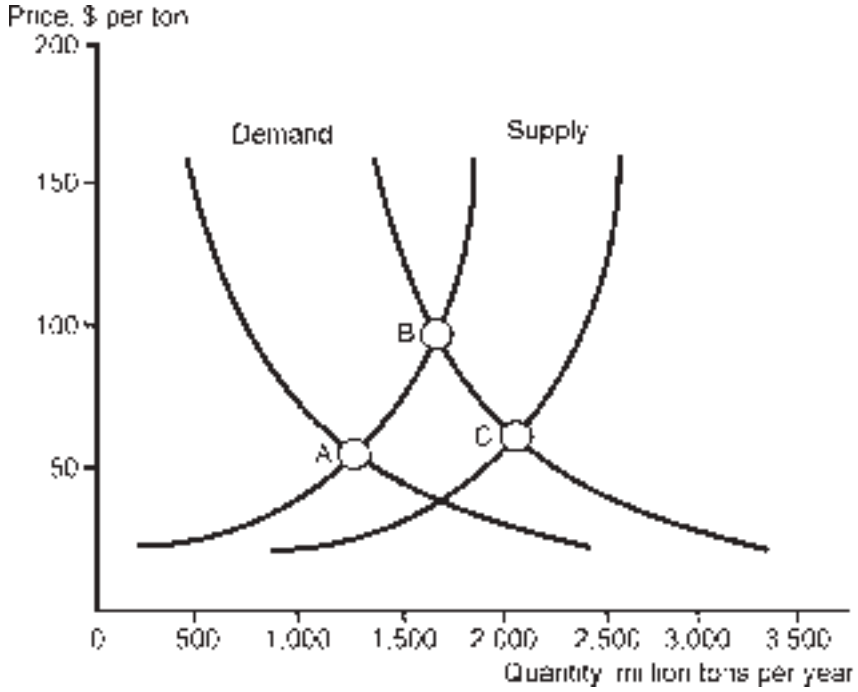


Figure 3-4. Hypothetical supply and demand curves for a commodity. Changes in determinants of demand — for example, income and population — can cause a shift in demand while changes in the determinants of supply — for example, technology — can cause a shift in supply. When both are shifting, whether the net effect is a price increase or decrease (whether A is higher or lower than C) depends on the relative size of shifts of supply and demand and the slopes of the curves.

more-elastic commodity supplies. One means of minimizing demand-induced price increases is to permit food imports. Another is to increase the responsiveness of the food production sector. However, open economies are also susceptible to sizable price swings if changes in supply and demand occur elsewhere in the world. These implications are examined in greater detail in Chapters 16 and 17.

The expected relative stability in food prices during the early stages of development (except as prices are affected by short-run phenomena such as weather or by international forces) implies a need to place emphasis on policies to shift out the agricultural supply curve and to raise incomes rather than on pricing policies. Thus, the focus of public investment needs to be where the return is highest, whether it is inside or outside agriculture. Because it is difficult to increase incomes of the

BOX 3-2.
MARKETS and REGIONAL PRICE VARIATION

Developing countries are often characterized by poor transportation systems, sparsely populated areas, or isolated pockets of high population densities and limited means of knowing what economic conditions exist in these isolated regions. Because of these factors, regional food markets tend to be isolated and independent. Prices can vary widely from region to region, with little relationship to average national prices and quantities, or to those prices prevailing in markets in large cities. In addition, local prices tend to be more variable than national prices since, with few market participants, changes in behavior by small numbers of participants can affect prices.

The consequences of these market problems can be high regional food prices and less ability to meet consumption needs for given incomes. High price variability causes uncertainty to producers and consumers of the products. These factors worsen national welfare, and can cause isolated pockets of poverty. Increases in national supply will do little to improve such situations.

Regional supply differences caused by high marketing costs due to poor transportation systems can only be lowered by improvements in infrastructure and market information. Poor information causes these differences when costs associated with gathering price and demand information impairs the effectiveness of the marketing system. Measures to enhance information flows include collection and dissemination of market-related information and telecommunications systems to transmit the information.

poor without increasing employment, the country may need to focus investments on labor-intensive commodities and industries.

As development proceeds, incomes grow, and demand shifts outward, the possibilities for rapid increases in food prices arise even in countries experiencing rapid growth in agricultural production. The reasons for this were discussed earlier and illustrated in Table 3-3. Middle-income countries experiencing rapid rates of income growth are likely to need increased agricultural imports.

Eventually, when high income levels are reached, income elasticities of demand for food and population growth rates become smaller. These small income elasticities relieve the upward pressure on food prices but create the potential for food surpluses and low farm prices. Policies at this stage tend to be concerned with easing the cost of adjusting large portions of the labor force out of agriculture, directing producers into those commodities for which the country has a relative advantage in world markets, and stabilizing domestic farm prices, which

tend to be more heavily influenced by swings in international prices now than they were in the past.

The existence of structural changes in the market for agricultural goods over time suggests a strong need to tailor development policies to each country's stage of development. It also suggests a need for each country to consider the stages of development of other countries in the world and changes in energy markets when making projections about future demands for agricultural products.

SUMMARY

The effective demand for food is determined by the physical and psychological need for food combined with the ability to pay for it. Demand is influenced by prices, population, income and preferences. The level of per-capita income is a major determinant of food demand in low-income countries. The income elasticity of demand for food varies systematically by income level, by commodity, and by places and socioeconomic groups within a country. The income elasticity of demand for food declines as development proceeds, and shifts in consumption occur away from starchy staples toward higher-protein foods. Own- and cross-price elasticities of demand are useful for projecting demand changes. Several procedures are available for obtaining income and price elasticities. Middle-income developing countries generally experience the most rapid rates of growth in demand for food. Changes in energy markets have added an additional factor to consider when projecting food price changes.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Aggregate versus household data
Bennett's law and why it holds
Bio-fuels
Contradictory role of agricultural prices
Cross-price elasticity of demand
Cross-sectional versus time-series data
Econometric model
Effective demand
Elastic versus inelastic demands
Engel's law and why it holds
Factors that shift the demand curve
Factors that shift the supply curve
Homogeneity condition and its use
Income effect
Income elasticity of demand
Law of demand
Major determinants of long-run price trends
Normal, superior, and inferior goods
One-price elasticity of demand
State of development
Substitutes of complements
Substitution effect
Supply
Use of aggregate versus house hold-level data

Looking Ahead

Rapid population growth over the past few years has dramatically increased the world's population and made the task of raising per capita income and reducing hunger in some countries more difficult. Population growth is influenced by many factors, and several policies have been tried or suggested for controlling it. In the next chapter, you will learn about population growth, including implications for food consumption and natural resource use. You will examine population projections and policies for the future.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1 As incomes increase, do people spend greater, smaller, or the same proportion of their income on food?

2 Distinguish between an income elasticity of demand and a cross-price elasticity of demand.

3 What tends to happen to the income elasticity of demand for food as the per-capita income of a nation increases? Why?

4 To estimate the effect on the calorie and protein intake of a population resulting from a decrease in the price of rice, why is it important to know something about the cross-price elasticities of demand between rice and other major foods in the country?

5 Assume the price elasticity of demand for eggs in India is –0.75. By what percentage would the price of eggs have to change to increase egg consumption by IS percent?

6 Do you expect the price of food in the world to be higher or lower 10 years from now? To answer this question, draw a graph with supply and demand curves and show how you expect the curves to change over time and why.

7 If population is growing at 2.6 percent per year, the income elasticity of demand for food is 0.6, and per-capita income is growing at 4 percent per year, what would be the growth in demand for food per year, assuming prices remain constant?

8 What tends to happen to the mix of foods consumed as per-capita income in a country increases? Why?

9 If agricultural development is successful at increasing the level of per-capita food production in several less-developed countries over the next 10 years, why might these same countries become less self-sufficient in food (have to import more food than before) during that period of time?

10 Assume you have the following cross-price elasticities for a particular country:

Commodity	Cross-price elasticity
Rice and beans	– 0.35
Rice and wheat	0.40
Rice and chicken	– 0.10
Rice and milk	– 0.05
Rice and other goods	0

a You are a planner for the country represented above and you want to raise the consumption of rice by 6 percent to improve calorie intake of the population. The income elasticity of demand for rice is 0.4. Use the information above and the homogeneity condition to determine the necessary percentage change in the price of rice.

b If rice consumption increases by 6 percent, what else besides the calories obtained from rice would you need to consider when assessing the impact on calorie consumption?

11 What distinguishes the need for food from the effective demand for food?

12 Which of the following factors shift primarily the demand curve and which factors shift primarily the supply curve: per capita income changes; new technologies; population growth; tastes and preferences; prices of inputs used in production; prices of other goods consumed; prices of substitute goods in production?

13 Why is there a close relationship between agricultural production growth and a nation's income growth during the early stages of development?

14 Even if agricultural production increases rapidly, why is it unlikely that countries in early stages of development will experience major price decreases as a result?

15 Why do middle-income countries experiencing rapid rates of growth in food production often need food imports, while very poor countries that are experiencing slower rates of food production growth do not?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Foster, Phillips, and Howard Leathers, *The World Food Problem* (Boulder, Colo.: Lynne Rienner, 1999), Chapter 8.

Mellor, John W., *Economics of Agricultural Development* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1966), Chapter 4.

Runge, C. Ford, C. Benjamin Senauer, Philip G. Pardey, and Mark W. Rosegrant, *Ending Hunger in Our Lifetime* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 2003) pp. 39–56.

von Braun, Joachim, *Rising Food Prices: What Should be Done?* IFPRI Policy Brief, April 2008. http://www.ifpri.org/pubs/bp/bp001.pdf.

CHAPTER 4

Population

> When poverty is tied to rapid population growth rates (as it generally is), the risk of widespread hunger is *ever present.*
>
> — Runge, Senauer, Pardey, and Rosegrant[1]

THIS CHAPTER

1 Presents basic facts about the distribution of the world's population, the rate of population growth, and the consequences of rapid population growth.
2 Explains the determinants of population growth and policies that can affect that growth.
3 Examines causes and implications of migration from rural to urban areas

BASIC FACTS about POPULATION GROWTH

The human race dates back about 3 million years. During more than 99 percent of this time there was virtually zero population growth. Average life expectancy was 20 to *25* years, and world population probably never exceeded 10 million people. After agriculture replaced hunting and gathering of food, around 6,000 to 8,000 B.C., population began to grow more quickly because larger numbers of people could be supported by food production. By the year 1 A.D., there were about 300 million people and, by 1650, 500 million.

Population began to grow more rapidly during the industrial revolution in the eighteenth century and really accelerated after World War II when populations in developing countries began to grow dramatically. World population reached 1 billion around 1800,

[1] C. Ford Runge, Benjamin Senauer, Philip G. Pardey, and Mark W. Rosegrant, *Ending Hunger in Our Lifetime: Food Security and Globalization* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 2003), p. 21.

2 billion in 1930, and 3 billion in 1960. It grew to 4 billion in 1975, 5 billion in 1986, 6 billion in 1999, 6.5 billion in 2006, and will exceed 7 billion around 2013 based on projected future growth rates (see Figure 4-1). The rate of population growth in the world peaked at 2.0 percent per year in 1965 and has declined since then to its current (2009) rate of about 1.2 percent. However, population itself will continue to grow for many years since the future number of parents will be much larger than the current number because of the rapid population growth in the recent past.

Distribution of the World Population

The world's population is distributed unevenly across the globe, reflecting the degree to which each location attracted migrants and was able to sustain growth in its local population over time. The earliest human ancestors lived in Sub-Saharan Africa, and migrated from there to other regions. By far the greatest accumulation of population has occurred in Asia, which holds over 60 percent of the world's population and has the highest population densities. Large populations

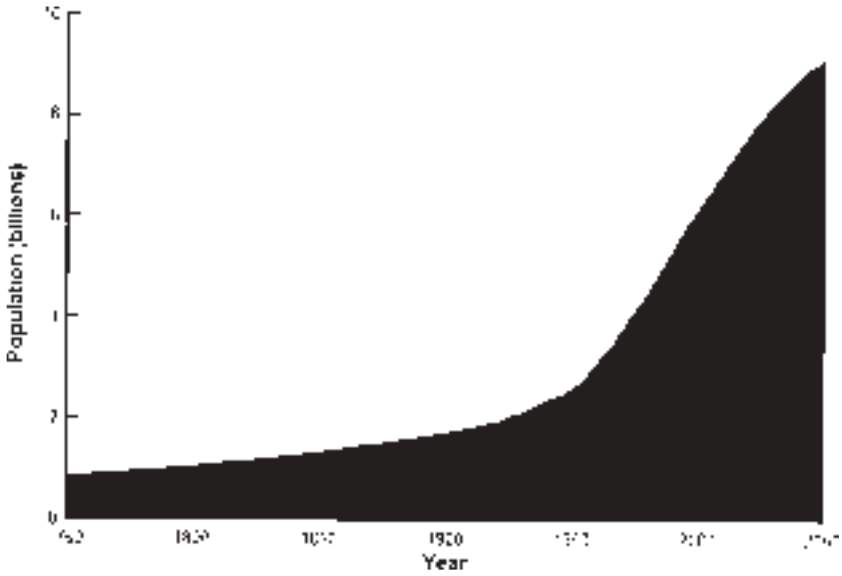


Figure 4.1. Past and projected world population, 1750 to 2150, medium estimate. (*Source*: Population Division of the Department of Economic and Social Affairs of the United Nations Secretariat, *World Population Prospects: The 2004 Revision.*)

are also found across Europe, along the coasts of North and South America, and within Africa.

The current size and density of the ten most populous countries are shown in Table 4.1. The list is dominated by China and India, but several other Asian countries have large populations and also have very high density, with more than 100 people per square kilometer. These countries account for the bulk of historical population growth. Today, population growth in Asia and elsewhere has slowed, and the fastest growing countries are mainly in Sub-Saharan Africa (Table 4-2). The ten fastest growing countries are all in Africa, with annual rates of population increase at or above 3.0 percent per year. Such rapid growth is almost unprecedented in human history. It is occurring in the world's poorest places, where purchasing power per capita is below a dollar a day, and it is often occurring in places where rapid population growth is a fairly recent phenomenon. At the other end of the spectrum, the slowest-growing countries and presented in Table 4.2. Some of these countries are actually losing population. Countries that have negative population growth rates are mainly the former socialist countries of Eastern Europe, but also include some high income countries in Europe (Germany and Portugal).

Table 4-1. The World's Most Populous Nations

Nation	Mid-2008 population (millions)	Population density (people/kilometer)
China	1,325	139
India	1,149	350
United States	305	32
Indonesia	240	126
Brazil	195	23
Pakistan	173	217
Nigeria	148	64
Bangladesh	147	1,023
Russia	142	8
Japan	128	338
Total (10 nations)	3952	
Total (world)	6705	49

*Source: P*opulation Reference Bureau, Inc., 2008 World Population Data Sheet.

Table 4.2. Population Growth Rates in the World's Fastest and Slowest Growing Nations (with 7 Million or More Population)

Fastest growing nations	Annual growth rate (percentage, 2008)	Mid-2008 population (millions)
Mali	3.3	12.7
Malawi	3.2	13.6
Yemen	3.2	22.2
Niger	3.1	14.7
Uganda	3.1	29.2
Dem Rep. of the Congo	3.1	66.5
Benin	3.0	9.3
Burkina Faso	3.0	15.2
Burundi	3.0	8.9
Guinea	2.9	10.3
Slowest growing nations	**Annual growth rate (percentage, 2008)**	**Mid-2008 population (millions)**
Ukraine	– 0.6	46.2
Bulgaria	– 0.5	7.6
Hungary	– 0.4	10.0
Serbia	– 0.4	7.4
Russia	– 0.3	141.9
Belarus	– 0.3	9.7
Romania	– 0.2	21.5
Germany	– 0.2	82.2
Portugal	– 0.0	10.6
Poland	0.0	38.1

*Source: P*opulation Reference Bureau, Inc., 2008 World Population Data Sheet.

Consequences of Rapid Population Growth

Rapid population growth is a problem for most developing countries mainly because it changes the age composition of the country, with a larger fraction of the population being children. Population growth mainly takes the form of a rising number of children and young people, which imposes a strain on the natural resource base, increases pressures for jobs, reduces food production gains per capita, contributes to pollution, and strains the capacity of schools and other social services. While it would be an over-simplification to say that population growth is the root cause of natural resource problems, unemployment, and so forth, it certainly intensifies these problems.

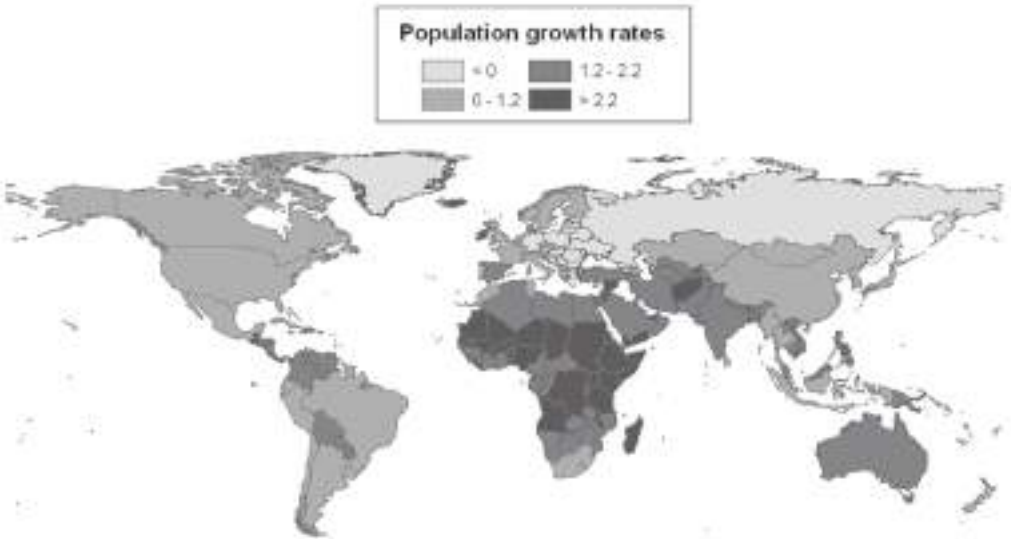


Figure 4-2: Population growth rates (percent), 2007. (*Source*: World Bank: World Development Indicators on-line database.)

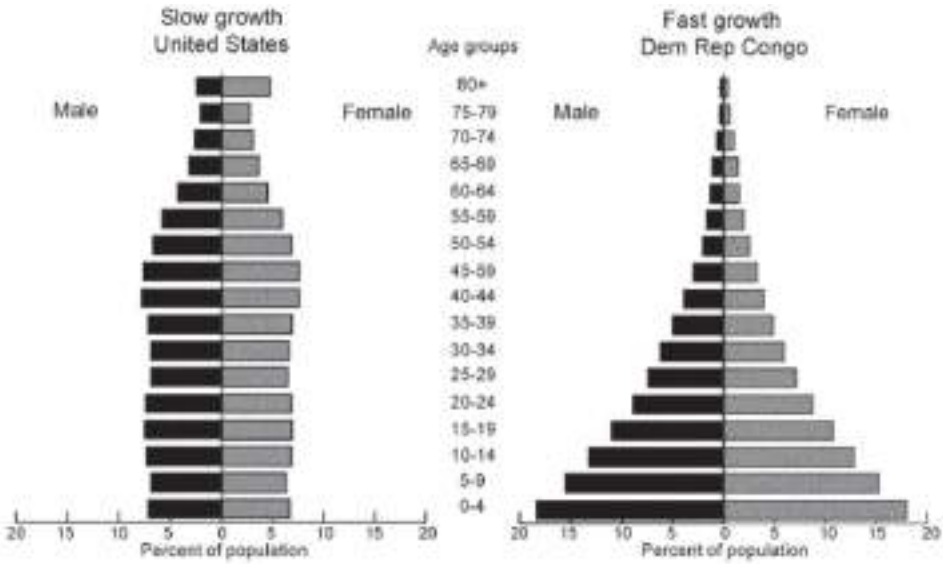


Figure 4-3. Population Profiles, Growth, and Momentum: The age distribution of the people in a country has a major impact on the future rate of growth of its population. The population pyramid is a tool that demographers use to describe this distribution. Shown above are two population pyramids, reflecting differing rates of current and future population growth. The broad base on the Congo pyramid means that there is population growth "momentum" which will cause population to grow, even if fertility, or the number of children that each family has, slows immediately to replacement levels. As the large number of people in the younger age groups in Congo reach child-bearing age, the number of births will rise dramatically, even if the number of births per couple falls. The United States has a relatively even age distribution, and is unlikely to experience a large increase in population. (*Source*: U.S. Census Bureau, 2005.)

Differences in age structure associated with different rates of population growth are illustrated in figure 4-3. Those with rapid growth have large numbers of very young children relative to working-aged people. This high dependency causes increased current consumption and reduced savings and investment. The impacts of rapid population growth on schooling can be particularly important. Since about 25 percent of the people in developing countries are of school age, compared to 15 percent in typical developed countries, equal amounts of budget outlay for education translate either to low expenditures per pupil or low enrollment rates. Inadequate investments in either physical or human capital will hurt the long-run possibilities for development.

The argument that most countries need more population to provide labor and markets is not very compelling, given the abundance of unskilled labor relative to capital in many countries and the fact that increased consumption of manufactured goods is heavily dependent on per-capita income growth.

Hunger, famine, and poverty were serious problems long before population began its rapid rise. However, the population explosion has made it difficult for some countries to invest and has magnified the lack of social justice in others.

CAUSES of FERTILITY CHANGE and POPULATION GROWTH

Population growth occurs for the world as a whole when births exceed deaths.[2] Years ago, births and deaths were both high, on the order of 40 to 50 every year per 1000 people in the population. About half of the deaths occurred before age ten, and death rates fluctuated from year to year with contagious diseases and with variations in food supplies. During this time, population fluctuated but did not grow rapidly for any sustained period of time.

Sustained population growth began in Europe and other now-industrialized regions during the eighteenth century, with a slow but steady decline in the death rate. Technological and economic progress resulted in improved nutrition and health, which reduced infant deaths and extended life expectancy well before scientists or medical doctors understood what caused disease or knew how to cure people once they fell ill. Population growth accelerated as death rates fell with no change in the birth rate for about one hundred years, until the late nineteenth century, when birth rates began to fall as women delayed marriage and had fewer children (see Figure 4-4). Birth and death rates declined in tandem until the 1950s, when death rates stabilized and the total population growth rate slowed. It took roughly 200 years for the now-industrialized countries to transition from high birth and death rates in the early eighteenth century to low birth and death rates in late twentieth century. During this period, births exceeded deaths by about 10 per 1,000 people, for a population growth rate on the order of 1 percent per year.

In contrast, today's less-developed countries experienced no significant decline in mortality until the twentieth century, when their death rates declined more rapidly than they ever had in the now-developed countries. This precipitous drop in the death rate was not due to slow

[2] Population in individual countries also depends on immigration and emigration.

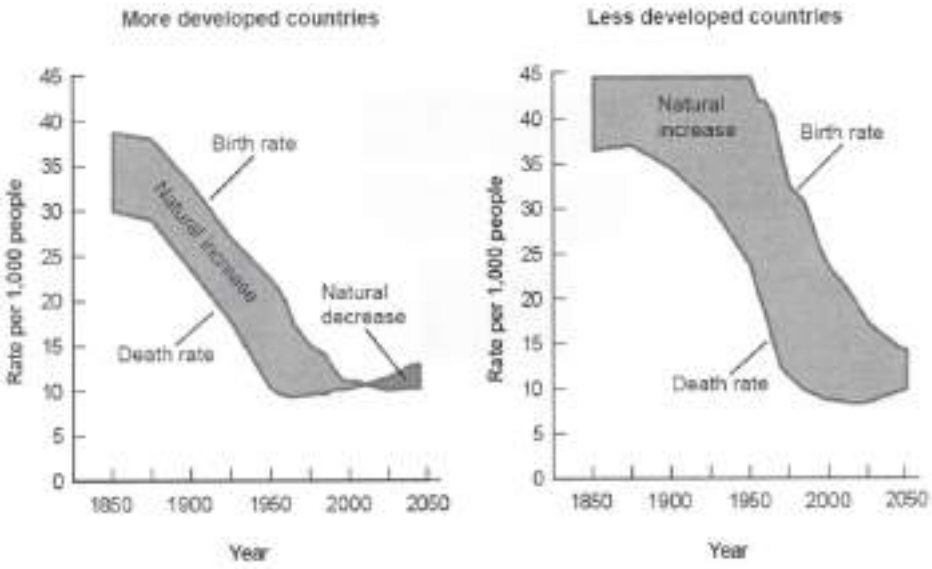


Figure 4-4. Population growth through natural increase, 1850–2050. (*Source*: World Bank, *World Development Report 1980*, New York: Oxford University Press, 1980, p.64;and UN Population Division, World Population Prospects: 2004 Revision Population Database.)

improvements in nutrition and wealth, but to the sudden introduction of technological improvements developed through scientific research. Once scientists and doctors understood the causes of disease and the principles of nutrition, especially after World War Il, countries rapidly deployed the new antibiotics, immunizations, and insecticides to control disease-bearing insects. They invested heavily in sanitation and maternal and child health programs. After the decline in death rates, it took several decades for birth rates to begin falling — but by then the gap between deaths and births was on the order of 20 per 1,000 people, or 2 percent per year, and in many countries it was over 3 percent per year.

In summary, population growth has been much faster in today's low-income countries than it ever was in today's high-income countries for one reason: the low-income countries' death rates fell faster, due to the sudden introduction of life-saving technologies. It is hard to imagine any serious observer wishing that those techniques had *not* been introduced, since they saved millions of lives and made possible much of the population we have today — but the speed of introduction made it relatively difficult for those countries to raise their per-capita incomes, until the transition to lower birth rates could be completed.

The historical *demographic transition* shown in Figure 4-4 has repeated itself in country after country. Each has a different timing and speed of transition, but all began with high birth and death rates and a relatively stable population size, then a decline in the death rate that initiates population growth. For those countries that have completed the demographic transition, a decline in the birth rate has followed, closing the gap between birth and death rates and stabilizing the population size at a new higher level.

The fact that this demographic transition has been observed in many countries in the past does not, of course, guarantee that it will be observed in the future. If population growth outstrips society's resources, death rates could rise again, and indeed in much of Africa they already have, due to the ravages of HIV/AIDS as well as continued high levels of child malnutrition and disease. To understand where and when the demographic transition can be completed without rising death rates, we need to examine the causes of fertility (birth rate) changes and consider policies that might influence those changes.

Causes of Fertility Changes

Family size is largely determined by parental motivation, and this motivation reflects rational, and in many cases, economic decisions. Tastes, religion, culture, and social norms all play a role; yet evidence suggests that differences in economic factors as well as family planning, education, and access to birth control play the major roles. Female education is particularly important in reducing family size.

People receive pleasure and emotional satisfaction from children. Thus there is a consumption benefit from having children, and in poor societies there may be little competition from other consumption goods. It costs time and money to raise children, but these costs (both out of pocket and in terms of earnings foregone while caring for children) may be relatively low, especially in rural areas.

Children are also an investment. This investment value increases the benefits associated with having children. They frequently work during childhood. In rural areas they gather firewood, collect water, work in the field, move livestock, and do other chores. In urban areas, a child's ability to contribute work to the family is more limited; however, income opportunities exist for very young children in urban areas of most less-developed countries (LDCs). An important source of urban employment of children is the "informal sector," often in petty trading and services. When older children leave home, especially if they go to the city, they may send cash back home. Children also provide

Child weeding onions in the Philippines.

security during old age. Most less-developed countries have no social security system. These benefits from additional children raise the number of desired children in less-developed countries, especially among poor families. In many countries, child mortality is high, so that extra births may be necessary to ensure that the desired number children survive. All these factors increase birth rates.

As people obtain more education and earn more money, they delay marriage and have fewer children. Parents have more options, and come to prefer keeping their children in school rather than earning income from children's work. An increase in per-capita income is inherently a rise in the value of time. A rise in the value of time, particularly if women have expanded employment opportunities outside the household, creates strong incentives to have fewer children and to invest more in the health and education of each child.

Thus, poverty and high fertility are mutually reinforcing. Social and economic factors such as income, literacy, and life expectancy account for as much as 60 percent of the variation in fertility changes among developing countries. The strength of family-planning programs also accounts for a significant share.

Birth rates do not decline immediately when incomes begin to increase. Expectations about desired family size may take years to evolve,

and in any case they will change at different rates for different social groups. Within each country, people with fewer opportunities — especially fewer opportunities for women — will often continue to have higher birth rates than other groups, further slowing the transition. And of course the speed of reduction in birth rates depends on the availability of effective family-planning techniques. To reduce fertility, households must both want to reduce their total family size, and be able to control the number and timing of births through effective contraception.

Policies That Influence Population Growth

Virtually everyone favors public and private actions to reduce death rates, but measures to reduce birth rates are more controversial. The controversy arises because some question the cost-effectiveness of family planning programs and others find efforts to control fertility in conflict with their strongly held values and beliefs. Family-planning programs in at least one country appear to have been coercive, and some argue that more people are needed to provide labor and domestic markets.

Those who call for public actions to help curb birth rates argue that public costs (schools, hospitals, pollution, etc.) associated with large families exceed social benefits. Therefore society has a right to at least inform its citizens of ways to control births. Evidence from countries that have had strong family-planning programs, such as Colombia and Indonesia, shows that these programs can be effective.[3]

China combined educational programs, social pressure, and economic incentives to reduce rates of birth. These were effective, but many people consider China's family planning program too strong; they particularly object to the use of abortion to control family size. These critics can point to less-coercive educational programs that appear to have been equally effective in Sri Lanka, in parts of India, and in other countries.

Measures to improve income growth and distribution, develop social insurance and pension programs, and expand education and employment opportunities for women are all likely to help reduce birth rates. These efforts take time, however, which is why the policy debate often centers on family planning issues. Increased populations make all these programs more expensive and difficult to implement, so that current investments in family planning will save money in the long

[3] World Bank, *World Development Report 1984*, p. 9.

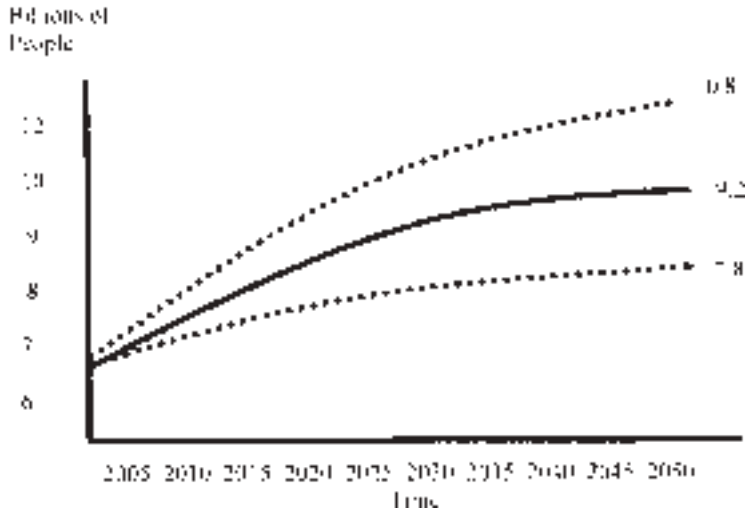


Figure 4-5. Future population projections (*Source*: United Nations, World Population Prospects, The 2006 Revision).

run. Most people in developing countries consider the fertility rates in their countries too high, and only a few consider them too low.[4]

Future Population Projections

The United Nations has projected that by the year 2050 world population will have grown to around 9 billion people.[5] Projections vary, however, from 7.8 billion to 10.8 billion, due to the uncertainty in factors affecting the projections (see Figure 4.5). Most of the growth will be concentrated in the developing countries. Future population projections are uncertain because they depend on income increases, educational improvements, family planning programs, and the future progression of the AIDS epidemic that are hard to predict. If present trends in growth rates continue, however, the middle estimate appears the most likely.

URBANIZATION

Regardless of the total increase in population, it is clear that urbanization will continue at a rapid pace and that, by the year 2050, the world will be substantially more urban. While total population in developing

[4] The Hunger Project, *Ending Hunger: An Idea Whose Time Has Come* (New York: Praeger, 1985), p. 30.

[5] United Nations, *World Population Prospects; the 2002 Revision* (New York: United Nations, 2003).

countries grew roughly 2 percent annually from 1993 to 2008, urban population grew at an annual rate of more than 3 percent. Natural population increases in urban areas account for about 60 percent of this growth rate, and another 8 to 15 percent is attributable to reclassification of rural areas to urban areas. At least 25 percent of the rapid growth in urban areas is caused by migration from rural to urban areas. Because a large proportion of the migrants are of child-bearing age, a sizable part of the "natural increase" in urban populations also can be attributed to recent migrants. The percentage of urban population growth due to migration is highest in those countries in the early stages of development.

Causes of Rural-to-Urban Migration

Rural-to-urban migration is, in a broad sense, a natural reflection of the economic transformation from agriculture to industry that economies undergo during the development process. As we discuss in Chapter 5, the process of industrialization increases the demand for labor in the manufacturing and service sectors. In the early stages of development, much of this labor must come from the rural areas.

By and large, people move to urban areas because they expect increased economic opportunities in terms of both employment earnings and access to goods or services produced by others. Landlessness and rural poverty, natural calamities, lack of educational opportunities, unequal public services provision, and other factors come into play as well. Although living costs are higher in urban areas, migrants are searching for a better level of living; they are pushed out of rural areas by poverty and desperation, and pulled to the cities by hope and opportunity.

The vast majority of people who migrate to cities perceive that the benefits of the move exceed its costs (these costs include foregone rural income and the cost of the move), or they would not make the move. Migrants tend to be young, disproportionately single, and better educated than the average of those left behind. The first two of these characteristics tend to lower the costs of the move, while the third raises the benefits. Better-educated people can expect higher returns from their education (wages) in urban areas. Most migrants to large cities in developing countries have relatives or friends already living there, a fact that tends to lower the cost of the move.

Rural-to-urban migration has been persistent despite rising unemployment rates in urban areas. The likely reasons for this persistence are that workers consider both rural-urban wage differentials and the

Many of the migrants in Dhaka Bangladesh seek work as bicycle rickshaw drivers.

probability of obtaining a job (which is often much less than 100 percent) and still perceive that they will be made better off by moving. Many of these migrants realize it is unlikely that they will obtain a high-paying or "formal" job immediately, but they are willing to work in low-paying jobs such as selling goods on street corners, "watching over" parked cars, or doing other jobs in the "informal" sector. For some of these migrants, these high-paying jobs may come only to their children, and then only if the children receive a better education than their parents had.

The importance of educational opportunities and other public services cannot be overlooked as reasons for rural-to-urban migration. In many countries, an urban political bias has created a large disparity between the levels of services, including quality of public education, in rural and urban areas. Furthermore, and perhaps more important, the political bias extends to economic policies such as pricing policies. Food prices are often kept artificially low (through policies discussed later in this book). This policy helps urban consumers but discourages investment in food production and lowers incomes in rural areas. These distortions help explain some of the attractions of cities.

Consequences of Rural-to-Urban Migration

Urbanization per se is not a problem. There are economies of scale resulting from the concentration of suppliers and consumers for industry

BOX 4-1.
MEXICO CITY: AN EXAMPLE OF RAPID URBAN GROWTH

The situation in Mexico City, whose population more than tripled over the past 25 years, is an example of some of the strains imposed by rapid urbanization. The growth of Mexico City outstripped the growth in the availability of services. The city opened an ultramodern subway system in 1969, began large-scale construction of housing in the early 1970s, and inaugurated a deep-drainage sewer system that was hailed as an engineering marvel in 1975. Now, however, the subway and other transportation systems are hopelessly overloaded. Thirty percent of the families in the city live in single rooms, and fully 40 percent of houses lack sewerage. Congestion and air pollution are severe, water is pumped into the city from as far away as 50 miles; rainwater and sewage are pumped out. The sewer system is so overtaxed that sewers back up and overflow into the streets during downpours. The city's garbage dumps are overflowing, and thousands earn their livelihood by picking garbage at the public dump.

Rural-to-urban migration continues in spite of these problems, with about 400,000 rural Mexicans moving to Mexico City each year. The hope of a better life provides a strong pull. While roughly 23 percent of the country's population lives in the city, 40 percent of the GDP is produced there, and more than one-third of the factory and commercial jobs is located in the capital. Rural Mexico is very poor, with high rates of malnutrition, low literacy, and poor services even compared to the capital.

and public services. Innovative and knowledge-intensive industries are more likely to form and prosper in high population-density areas. The problem arises when cities become "too large, too quickly," often because rural-to-urban migration increases the urban population at a rate faster than industry, schools, sewage systems, and so forth, can expand. The result is substandard housing, poor sanitation, and lack of other services for recent migrants (see Box 4-1). While migrants have been shown to be assets to the cities, the shanty towns that surround almost all large cities in less-developed countries attest to the growing disparities that occur within cities if urbanization occurs too rapidly. Many people live in absolute squalor, often without sewage systems and sometimes in garbage dumps. The fact that people are willing to live in these areas highlights the poverty and lack of opportunity in rural areas.

Evidence suggests that farm output has not been affected greatly by the loss of migrants and their labor to urban markets. In most low-income countries, the number of farmers keeps rising despite rural-urban migration, because the total population is growing faster than cities can expand. And migrants help sustain their relatives on the farm,

when they remit money back to rural areas. However, some rural areas have suffered because the brightest and most educated workers have migrated.

Governments have employed many approaches to the task of slowing down rural-to-urban migration. Some countries are restricting migration, implementing resettlement schemes, and providing services to smaller towns and cities. It appears, however, that unless the urban bias in economic policies is removed and economic development proceeds to the point where living conditions improve in rural areas, rural-to-urban migration will continue in many countries at a very fast rate.

SUMMARY

The current world population of more than 6.7 billion is growing at an annual rate of 1.2 percent, an extremely high rate by historical standards. The developing world is experiencing a population explosion caused by rapid decline in death rates due to improved health and nutrition. While birth rates have begun to decline due to higher incomes, family planning, education, and other factors, world population is likely to continue to grow for more than a century. Effective measures to control population growth should consider the economics of fertility and how different economic and social policies affect childbearing decisions. Rural-to-urban migration is proceeding at a rapid rate in many developing countries as migrants seek to achieve higher standards of living. Rapid urbanization has caused a strain on public services, pollution, and other problems.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Birth rates and death rates
Causes of fertility changes
Causes of rural-to-urban migration
Characteristics of migrants
Consequences of rapid population growth
Demographic transition
Family planning
Population density
Population distribution
Population growth
Rural-to-urban migration
Urban political bias
Why death rates decline

Looking Ahead

This chapter concludes our overview of several dimensions of the world food- income-population problem. Hunger and development problems are both severe and complex. We move now to a set of two chapters, which examine economic theories that have been used in attempts to identify the heart of the development process. We begin in the next

chapter with a discussion of important factors related to production growth. Subsequent chapters then incorporate these factors into development theories.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1 Has population increased at a fairly constant rate since prehistoric times?
2 What is the current world population and how fast is it growing? When will it stop growing?
3 At present growth rates, how long will it take to add 1 billion people to the world population?
4 Why is population increasing more rapidly today in LDCs than it did during early stages of development in Europe and the United States?
5 What are the major determinants of birth rates in LDCs?
6 What are the impacts of rapid population growth?
7 What policies can be used to help reduce population growth?
8 Are population growth rates more likely to increase or decrease over the next 15 years?
9 Which are the fastest and slowest growing countries in the world (in terms of population)?
10 What proportion of the world's population lives in Asia?
11 Why are we seeing rapid rural-to-urban migration in many developing countries?
12 What are the consequences of rapid rural-to-urban migration?
13 Describe the characteristics of the most common type of migrant.
14 How can high fertility be viewed as a consequence of poverty as well as a cause of it?
15 Describe the demographic transition that tends to occur as development takes place and why it occurs.

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Gelbard, Arlene, Carl Haub, and Mary M. Kent, "World Population Beyond Six Billion", *Population Bulletin*, Volume 54, No.1, Population Reference Bureau, March 1999.

Population Reference Bureau, http://www.prb.org/

Population Reference Bureau, http://www.prb.org/Publications/Datasheets/2008/2008wpds.aspx

United Nations, Department of Economic and Social Affairs, Population Division. World Population Prospects: The 2006 Revision, Highlights, Working Paper No. ESA/P/WP.202, 2007.

PART 2

Development Theories and the Role of Agriculture

Rice in Peru.

CHAPTER 5

Economic Transformation and Growth

> Economic growth depends ultimately on the impact of productive resources and the efficiency with which they are used.
>
> — Angus Maddison[1]

This Chapter

1 Describes the economic transformation that occurs with economic development, involving a decline in the size of agriculture relative to non-agricultural activities.
2 Introduces the concept of a production function and the law of diminishing returns.
3 Identifies potential sources of economic growth.

THE ECONOMIC TRANSFORMATION

Economic growth is almost always accompanied by an *economic transformation* from agriculture into other activities. As the economy expands, the agricultural sector grows more slowly than manufacturing and services, and agriculture accounts for a declining fraction of employment, output, and consumer expenditures. The transformation from farm to non-farm activities as incomes rise applies to regions, countries, and the world as a whole. It is among the most dependable relationships in the world economy, and has major effects on peoples' lives. This chapter explores its causes and its consequences, both within agriculture and for society as a whole.

The tendency for richer countries to derive a smaller share of their income from agriculture is shown in Figure 5-1, and their tendency to have

[1] Angus Maddison, *Economic Progress and Policy in Developing Countries* (New York: W. W. Norton and Co., 1970), p. 34.

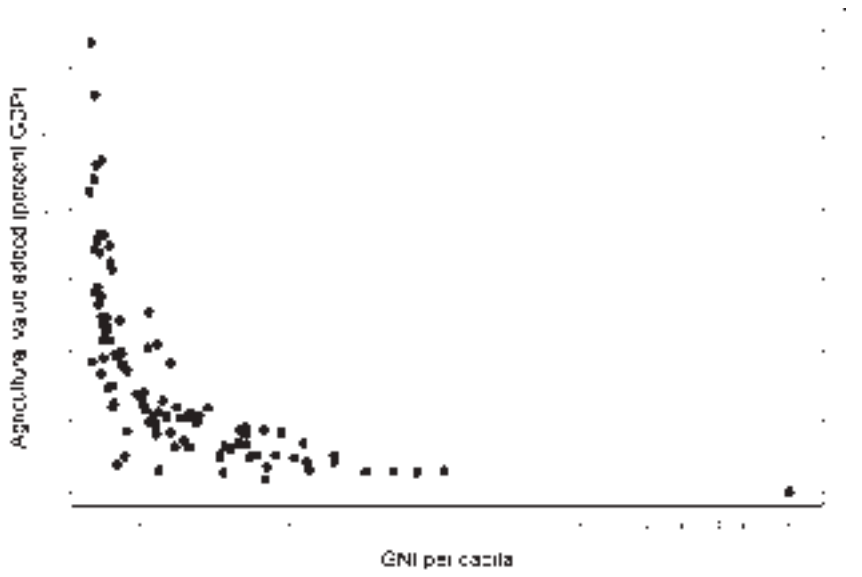


Figure 5-1. Agriculture's share of total output and Gross National Income, 2007. (*Source*: World Bank: World Development Indicators on-line database.)

a smaller share of total employment in agriculture is shown in Fig. 5-2. These two figures show remarkable similarity and an interesting difference. The similarity is the clear downward trend. All poor countries derive a significant share of their income from agriculture, while all rich countries derive only a small fraction from it. Note that agriculture never disappears entirely in the rich countries, and there is wide variation in its share among the poorest countries. A key difference between the two figures is that, in poor countries, agriculture accounts for a larger fraction of employment than of output. Roughly speaking, countries below $1,000 per year in per-capita income have 40-90 percent of the workforce engaged in agriculture, and these people earn 20–50 percent of their country's total income. In other words, within poor countries, on average each farmer earns roughly half of what non-farmers earn.

Causes of the Economic Transformation

In low-income countries, labor productivity is low and people, out of necessity, spend a high proportion of their income on food. Labor and small amounts of land are their primary assets, and many have no choice but to devote at least some of their labor to farming, to feed themselves and their family. Many low-income farmers are actually

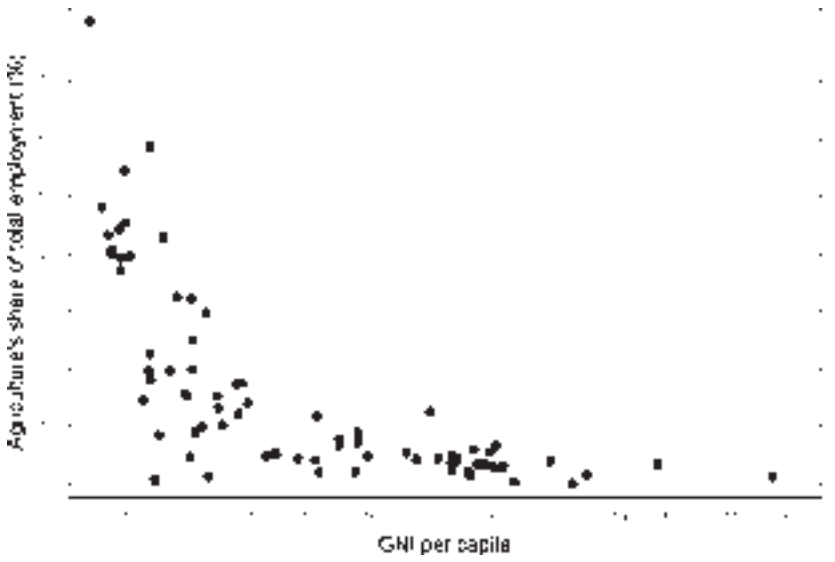


Figure 5-2. Agriculture's share of total employment and Gross National Income, 2005. (*Source*: World Bank: World Development Indicators on-line database.)

net food buyers, using small amounts of non-farm income or the sale of high-valued crops and livestock to supplement the basic foods they grow on the farm. To emerge from poverty, these semi-subsistence farmers must improve their productivity either on the farm or in non-farm activities.

As the productivity of labor and other factors increases, four major factors drive the transformation from farm to non-farm activities. The first factor is that incomes rise due to the productivity increase, causing a gradual shift in demand from food to non-food items. This consumption shift occurs primarily because the income elasticity of demand for food is less than 1.0 and tends to decline as income grows. Declining income elasticities mean that for each percentage increase in income, progressively lower proportions are spent on food (see Engel's Law in Chapter 3). These changes in demands for agricultural and non-agricultural products imply that, as development proceeds, relatively more labor inputs and other resources are devoted to non-agricultural activities.

The second factor driving the transformation is that at any given income level, the quantity of food demanded changes relatively little when its price changes. In other words the price elasticity of demand

for food is low, less than 1.0 in absolute value, and it may be even smaller at higher levels of income. This "price-inelastic" aspect of food demand means that, if agricultural productivity grows, prices received by farmers will fall by a higher percentage than the quantity demanded rises, creating incentives to remove resources from farming and transfer them to non-farm activities.

These two "demand-side" drivers cannot explain the transition in settings where farmers are selling their produce at prices that are determined in a world market. In those cases, prices received by farmers depend little on local demand, so there must be "supply-side" explanations for the transformation as well.

A third, supply-side, factor driving transformation is specialization. Even if the mix of activities in the economy remains the same, during economic growth the availability of capital and market opportunities allows people to expand production of what they do best, and then trade with others for the products they want to consume. Thus farmers produce less of their own food, clothes, furniture, and so forth, and an increasing share of these kinds of activities is re-classified from "agriculture" to "industry."

Another supply-side factor that could drive transformation is the fact that land supply is fixed, while other forms of capital can expand. As people accumulate savings from year to year, they find fewer and fewer opportunities to add resources to their farms, and so prefer to invest their savings in non-farm enterprises. For example, the farmer who already has good buildings, fencing, livestock, and equipment will tend to invest her savings in something else, such as a retail trade or services.

Does Agriculture Actually Shrink?

The fact that having higher incomes leads to a smaller fraction of output and employment in agriculture does not mean that the absolute size of the farm sector declines. Indeed, as countries get richer, the level of farm production and consumer expenditure on farm goods usually keeps rising, and in countries with rapid farm productivity growth, output in the sector can grow as fast as non-farm output. As agricultural productivity and incomes grow, labor is gradually transferred from work on farms to work in other enterprises. Some of this work occurs in the same rural areas where the farms themselves are located — people find employment in small-scale manufacturing, in value-added processing of agricultural products, in transport and services, etc. Others, as noted in Chapter 4, migrate to cities and find work in the formal and informal sectors.

In most countries, the land area available for farm use is roughly constant over time, so any change in the number of farm workers translates directly into a change in number of acres available per worker. One might expect economic development to influence the number of people working on each farm, and it does, but in an unexpected way. Across countries and over time, the number of workers on each farm stays close to the number of workers in the family. Family farming dominates the sector, and so the number of workers per farm varies with family size, which tends to decline as the economy grows. Thus poor countries may have five to eight workers per farm while rich countries may have only one or two, but that is mainly because of the declining number of workers per family. Furthermore, at every level of income, many family members work only part-time on the farm, and hire themselves out for off-farm work. A few do hired farm work, but hired workers are less common in agriculture than in other sectors.

Family workers dominate farming for many reasons, but perhaps the primary reason is that many field operations are difficult to supervise and monitor, and are therefore done better by self-motivated workers. For example, a farm owner would have great difficulty ensuring that a hired

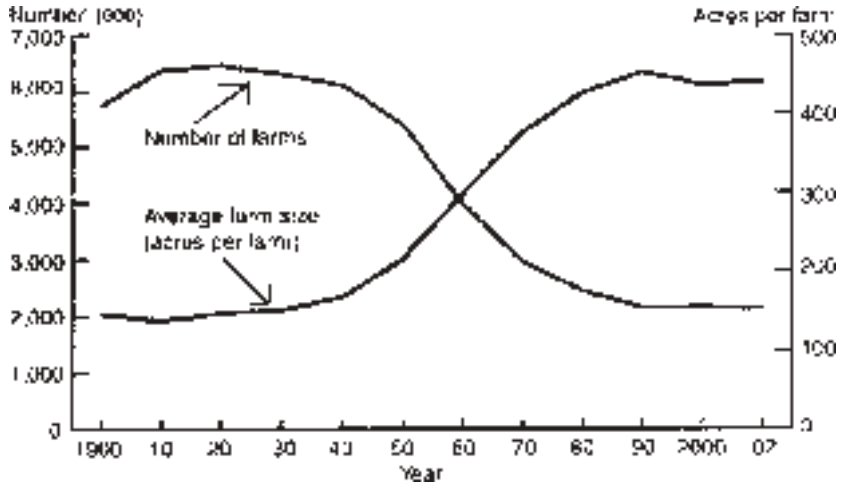


Figure 5-3. Number and average size of farms in the United States, 1900–2002. (*Source*: Carolyn Dimitri, Anne Effland, and Neilson Conklin, 2005, *The 20th Century Transformation of U.S. Agriculture and Farm Policy* [Washington, D.C.: Economic Research Service, USDA].)

worker plows, plants, or fertilizes appropriately, because these operations are dispersed across the field and many other factors intervene to determine that field's eventual yield.

Since family farming dominates the sector, any change in the number of farm families translates directly into a change in the average cropped area per farm. Figure 5-3 illustrates this process for the United States. The number of farms peaked in the 1920s, but as farm labor moved into cities, the acreage per farm increased as exiting farmers rented or sold their land to the remaining operators. Note that the decline in the number of farmers cannot go on forever. In the United States, there has been no further decline since 1990, with roughly one-third the number of farms as there were in the 1910 to 1920 period, and farm sizes roughly three times as large.

A great deal of variability in farm sizes over time exists across countries. Several middle-income countries in Asia are now in a period of rapid decline in the number of farmers, much like the United States in the 1960s. The poorest countries, however, have growing rural populations and fixed land bases. Many regions in South Asia and Africa have experienced decades of decline in the available acreage per farmer, sharply reducing their ability to feed themselves or initiate the economic transformation out of agriculture.

Implications of Changes in the Number of Farmers

The key fact about the economic transformation presented above is that, as incomes rise the share of agriculture falls, but the absolute number of farmers *rises and then falls*. The initially rising number of farmers in low-income countries translates directly into rising number of workers per acre of available land. If output per acre cannot rise at least as fast as the number of workers, output per worker must fall. This downward pressure on farmers' income accounts for much of the deterioration in social conditions that we observe in the world's poorest regions.

An essential aspect of rural population growth is that it is temporary. If economic development continues, eventually non-farm employment becomes large enough to absorb all new workers, rural population growth slows, and any growth in output per acre translates directly into growing output per worker. Many of the people moving off the farm incur significant adjustment costs during the transition.

The fact that an economic transformation occurs with development does not explain the sources of economic growth and development. Understanding those sources of growth and how they contribute to development requires knowledge of a few basic economic principles

related to production economics. In the next section we introduce a set of principles that can be used to help explain the output and economic effects of input and technology choices.

EXPLAINING PRODUCTION CHOICES

Economic growth requires transforming a country's basic production resources into products and doing so in ever more efficient ways. Economists have developed ways to characterize how that transformation occurs, utilizing the concepts of a *production function,* a *marginal product*, and *economic optimality*. These three basic production economic concepts are presented here and then used subsequently in models of economic growth and development.

Production Functions

Production requires resources or inputs such as labor, natural resources, and tools or other capital items. These inputs are often called factors of production. Production also requires that these factors be combined by a producing unit that can organize their use to obtain desired goods and services. A description of the way in which factors of production are combined to produce goods and services is commonly called a production function. A production function describes, for a given technology, the different output levels that can be obtained from various combinations of inputs or factors of production.

The relationship between the level of production that can be obtained when only one input is allowed to vary (say labor), while all other inputs are held fixed, may look something like that shown in Figure 5-4. This relationship is also referred to as an *input response curve,* or a *total product curve*. In the case of labor, when no work is done the production level is usually zero, so the input response curve starts at zero. Output may then rise at an increasing rate, showing "increasing returns" to each additional unit of input. In farming for example, the initial effort of planting is more productive if followed by additional effort spent weeding, so doubling labor time could more than double the resulting output. Eventually, however, all such opportunities will be exhausted and each additional hour of labor or unit of other input begins to offer "decreasing returns": output continues to rise, but at a decreasing rate. Finally, at very high levels of input use, all opportunities to do *anything* productive may be exhausted, and additional inputs might actually reduce output.

On the particular curve drawn in Figure 5-4, the transition from increasing to decreasing returns occurs at the input level marked K.

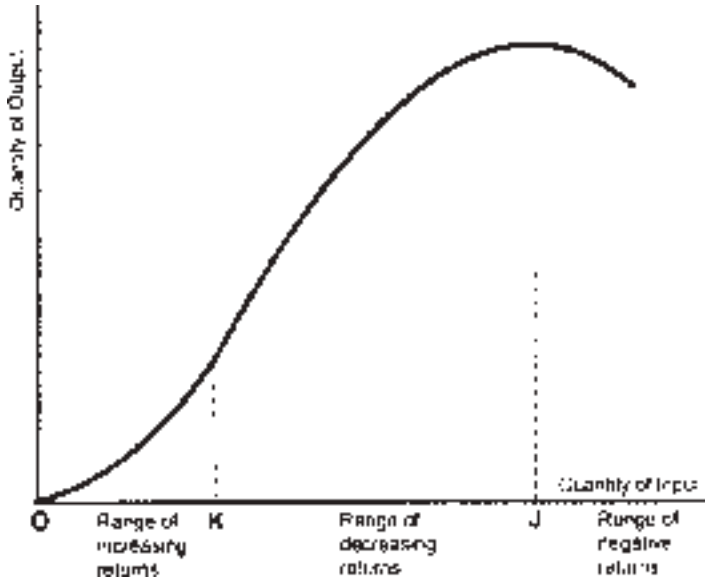


Figure 5-4. A production function with one variable input.

Beyond that point, for each additional unit of labor, the *additions* to output become smaller and smaller, until eventually, at point J, additions to output may stop entirely. Beyond that point, additional units could actually reduce output, so the curve begins to slope down.

The input-response curve in Figure 5-4 shows the productivity of one input, when all the other inputs are held constant. Changing the quantity of this one input, perhaps labor, results in a movement along the curve. If other inputs were to change, that would be shown as a shift in the curve. We will see an example of such a shift later in this chapter.

If two inputs are allowed to vary simultaneously, the resulting production function can be illustrated as in Figure 5-5, with each curve (called an *isoquant)* representing a different level of output. Curves higher and to the right represent greater output levels than curves lower and to the left. For example, point C represents a higher output level (200 units) than points A or B (100 units).

The isoquant that represents 100 units of output illustrates that the same level of output (100 in this case) can be produced with different

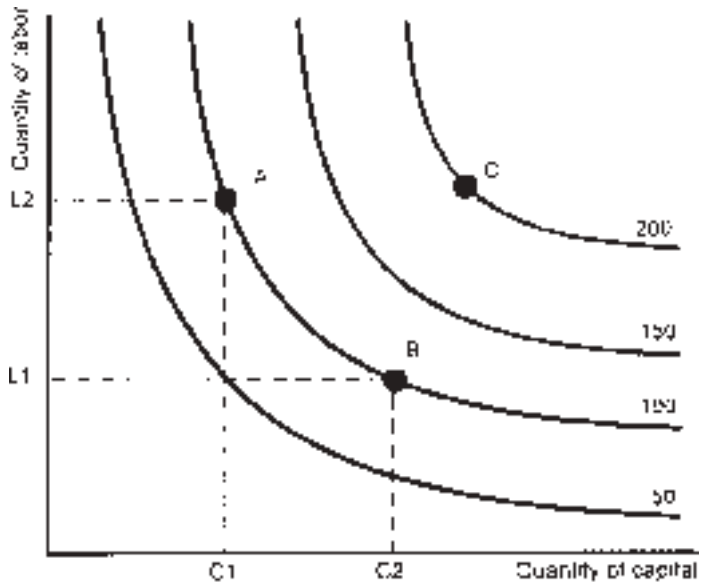


Figure 5-5. Production function with two variable inputs.

combinations of labor and capital (combination A versus combination B). Thus, if a country has abundant labor and little capital it might produce using the combination of labor and capital represented by A. If it has abundant capital and little labor, it might produce at B. The isoquant through points A and B shows all the different combinations of labor and capital that can be used to produce 100 units of output. It also tells us how easy it is to substitute labor for capital in the production of that output. When isoquants are very curved, inputs are not easily substituted for each other. Straighter isoquants imply easier substitution.

Marginal Product and the Law of Diminishing Returns

The idea illustrated in Figure 5.4 that, after some point, adding additional units of input tends to generate less and less additional output is known as the *law of diminishing returns.* Specifically the law says: 'In the production of any commodity, as we add more units of one factor of production to a fixed quantity of another factor (or factors), the additions to total output with each subsequent unit of the variable factor will eventually begin to diminish." What is diminishing is the *marginal*

output gain or *marginal product* of the factor (labor in Fig. 5-4).[2] As discussed below, the law of diminishing returns has important implications for countries experiencing rapid population (and labor) growth with a fixed natural resource base.

A marginal product curve can be obtained (derived) from Figure 5-4 by examining *changes* in total output for each successive unit of input. The marginal product curve corresponding to the production function in Figure 5-4 is shown in Figure 5-6. To the left of K, the slope of the production function is increasing (Fig. 5-4); thus the changes in output are growing and the marginal product curve is rising (Fig. 5-6). To the right of K, the changes are smaller and marginal product curve falls. If total output eventually ceases to grow at all as more labor is applied, the marginal product goes to zero; this is point J on the production function and on the marginal product curve. Marginal productivity is important because it helps determine payments to factors of production, such as wages paid to labor. In addition, the marginal productivity of an input, together with prices of outputs and inputs, determines the demand for the input.

Economic Optimality: What Output and Input Levels Will People Choose?

All points along a production function are equally possible to achieve. But are they equally likely to be chosen? What factors might motivate a farmer to choose one point as opposed to another? When people are asked what explains their choices, they mention a variety of factors such as input scarcity, the need for output of particular products, traditions or habits, and a desire to minimize risk. Repeated studies have found that actual choices by large numbers of people over several years are best explained by *economic optimality*. Economic optimality means that farmers are rational and choose options that will give them the highest level of well-being attainable given the prices they face, the available resources and technology, and their ability to absorb risk.

Even in very low-income settings and across cultures, farmers generally attempt to optimize. They may consider cultural and risk factors as they optimize, but economic well being plays an important role. Because farmers optimize, they will generally choose to be somewhere along the production function and not below it. For any given level of

[2] The marginal product of an input is equal to the slope of the total product curve, or $\Delta Y/\Delta X$, where Δ represents a small change. Therefore, anything affecting this slope changes the marginal product.

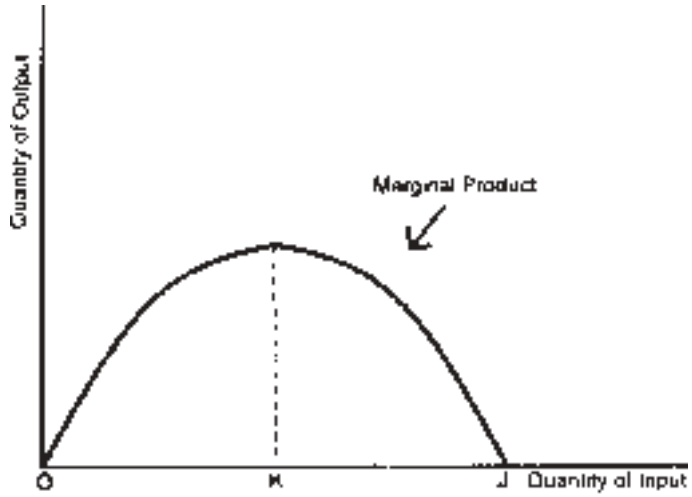


Figure 5-6: Marginal product curve derived from the total product curve in Figure 5-4.

input(s) they prefer to obtain as much output as they can attain. In other words they prefer to be on the production function and not below it. But where along the total product curve would they prefer to produce? Prices help determine the answer. Even for farmers whose production is largely for home consumption, some of their outputs and inputs are sold and purchased at prices set in markets off the farm. When markets set prices, farmers can often reach the highest-possible level of well-being by *maximizing profits,* subject to acceptable risk, and then trading those profits for goods they want to consume.

This kind of economic optimality typically leads to a single point along the production function, as illustrated in Figure 5-7. In Figure 5-7, each level of profits can be represented by a straight line, whose slope is the price of the input divided by the price of output. This ratio of market prices is the rate at which the two goods could be exchanged in the market. In the left hand panel in Figure 5-7, the highest such line, representing the highest attainable level of profits, occurs where the line touches the production function and their slopes are the same. Marginal revenue from the output equals the marginal cost of the input (MR=MC). On the right-hand panel in Figure 5-7, the profit line is the

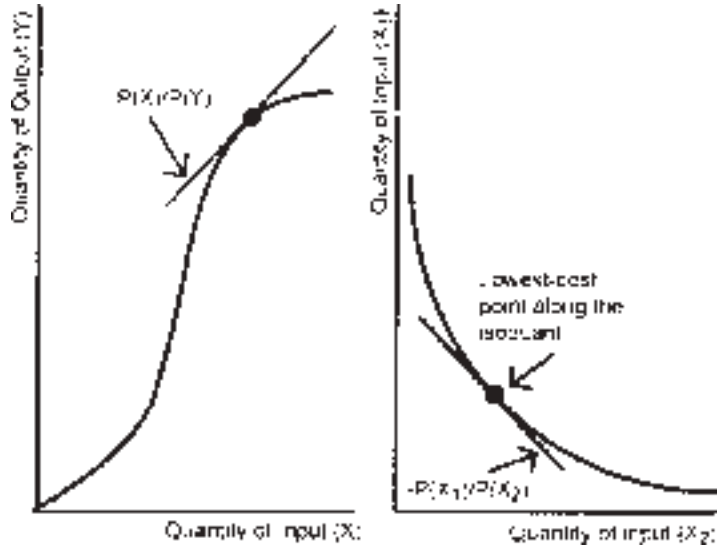


Figure 5-7. The economically optimal level of output and input choice.

ratio of the two input prices and also represents the total cost of production. When farmers are producing on their production functions and employing the correct amount of inputs to equate their marginal revenue to their marginal cost of obtaining the last unit of output (the price lines are tangent to the curves in Fig. 5-7), they are said to have achieved *price or allocative efficiency*. This concept of efficiency can be an important source of economic growth.

SOURCES of ECONOMIC GROWTH

We can now use the production economics concepts described above to explore the possible sources of growth in an economy over time. One of the major ways that economic growth can occur is through increases in the amounts of inputs used in production. While production functions usually refer to a particular type of output (say corn), one can think of an aggregate production function relating total inputs to total output or total national product. Additional inputs can move a country out of its aggregate production function to higher isoquants and higher levels of output. Therefore, (1) *population growth* (which affects labor availability and cost), (2) *natural resource availability* (which affects the cost of environmental factors such as land with its associated soils, water, and forests), and (3) *capital accumulation* (which affects the availability

of man-made inputs) are three major elements in the development process. These sources of growth cause movement along a given multifactor production function.

A second means of spurring economic growth is to change the way in which a country uses its factors of production, increasing the amount of output produced by these inputs. These output increases can result from better organization of production or from shifts in the production function. For example, a new technology can shift the total product curve upward so more output is produced per unit of inputs.

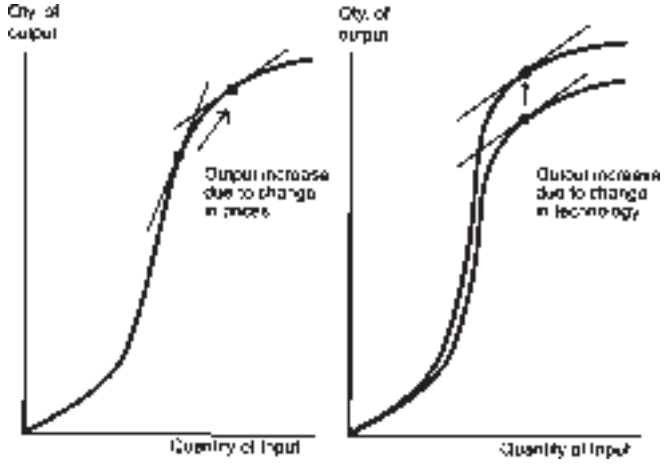
BOX 5-1.

SOURCES of GROWTH and the PRODUCTION FUNCTION

Growth in output can occur either through a change in market opportunities and relative prices, which leads farmers to add inputs using existing technologies, or because of an innovation that allows production of more output at a given level of inputs.

The left-hand panel below illustrates how profit-maximizing farmers would respond to increasing abundance and hence lower relative price of an input. For example, in poor countries when rural labor becomes more abundant over time, there is a decline in wages relative to other prices, leading farmers to apply more labor in land preparation, weeding, etc. in an effort to obtain more output.

The right-hand panel shows how those same farmers might respond to a new invention, such as better-performing seeds or veterinary medicine for their livestock. Now the farmer can obtain more output at each level of input. This particular innovation was drawn so that the new profit-maximizing level of input use happens to be exactly the same as before: thanks to the innovation, the farmer has gotten more output for no change in the input.



There are three ways to get increased output per unit of input: (1) increases in scale or specialization; (2) increases in efficiency; and (3) technological change. In many cases, markets can change, which in turn stimulates changes in these factors. Movements along a given production function versus shifts in the function are illustrated in Box 5-1.

A third means of stimulating economic growth is through increased *human capital* as embodied in people (e.g., improved education and health) and improvements in *social institutions* (the rules of the game). Human capital can make labor more productive, contributing to technological progress and increased efficiency (especially when technologies and markets are rapidly changing). Social institutions help define property rights.

Let's examine more closely each of the sources of economic growth.

The Demographic Factor: Effects of Population Growth on Agriculture and the Economy

For most of history, population growth was a major source of output growth in the world. People worked with primitive tools, and more people meant more labor and output. Crop and pasture areas expanded with the rural workforce, although output per person remained roughly the same. A greater population density also reduced the distance between people and made it easier to develop cost-effective services such as transportation, communications, schooling, and so forth. Population growth, however, is a mixed blessing because, while there are more productive hands, there are more mouths to feed. As long as farmland is plentiful, land frontiers can be pushed back and growth continues in the agricultural sector, but, in most areas of the world, the best farmland has been exhausted and rising numbers of farmers have no choice but to invest more time in each field. In this situation, diminishing returns to labor cause farm incomes to fall, unless farmers can turn to an alternative source of growth.

Population growth may also mean an increasing number of children relative to adults. If the number of consumers is growing faster than the number of producers, then the effect of population growth is also more likely to be negative. If population growth results from extending the productive life of workers, the odds of its effect being positive improve.

Ecuadoran children.

Natural Resources: Environmental Influences on the Location and Pace of Development

Natural resources — including land and its associated soil, water, forests, and minerals — have played an important role in economic development. The extension of the frontier in the United States brought more land and mineral resources into production and helped create wealth. Similar expansions have occurred in other countries. Extensive use of other types of natural resources has been important as well. For example, in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, one of the most important resources was coal, as countries with large and easily-accessible coal deposits, such as Britain, used coal to fuel their local industrial revolution. In the 20th century, oil became important in some countries. Will natural resources continue to be an important source of economic growth or will they be a limitation to future growth?

Some have argued that Earth is like a spaceship, that its natural resource capacity is finite. There is only so much land and, indeed, we see increasing problems with soil erosion, deforestation, and overgrazing. Increased combustion of fossil fuels releases carbon into the atmosphere and depletes a finite supply of these resources. Water resources are exploited to their fullest potential (or overexploited) in many places.

A plow and bullock can be a sizable investment in many developing countries.

While technologies change, and in essence create new resources, there is no question that land is limited and that the opening of new uninhabited fertile lands will be much less important to future economic growth in most countries than it has been historically. It is also clear that many resources, particularly forests and minerals, are being depleted in many countries and are thus becoming less available to stimulate growth than they once were. The real question for most countries may not be whether exploitation of natural resources will be a significant source of growth, but whether natural resources will act as a constraint to growth, and, what will be the cost involved in transitioning from one natural resource regime to another. This issue is discussed further in Chapter 9.

Accumulation of Physical Capital

Physical capital may be defined as a country's stock of human-made contributions to production, consisting of such items as buildings, factories, bridges, paved roads, dams, machinery, tools, equipment, and inventory of goods in stock. Physical capital, as we refer to it here, means human-made physical items and not money, stocks and bonds, etc. It refers to private physical goods but also public investments in physical infrastructure.

Capital accumulation is the process of adding to this stock of buildings, machinery, tools, bridges, etc. Another name for capital accumulation is investment. Capital investment is important because it can

increase the amount of machinery and tools per worker, thereby increasing the output or marginal product per worker. A higher marginal product per worker usually leads to a higher income per worker.

Capital accumulation is also related to the possibilities of making changes in the scale of technology of production. Furthermore, the process of capital accumulation involves a choice between consumption today and investing for future economic growth. The choices of how much to invest, and in what types of capital, have important implications for the rate and direction of economic development. As will be argued throughout this text, investment should be guided along an appropriate path by signals (prices) that reflect the true scarcity of resources.

Technological Progress

Increases in input levels (land, labor, and capital) accounted for much economic growth prior to the nineteenth century. However, evidence suggests that changes in the ways goods are produced have been the engine of modern economic growth for many if not most countries. The three sources of growth mentioned above involve increasing inputs with a given production technology. Economic growth can occur, but only through exploitation of natural resources and labor, or accumulation of costly resources through savings and investment from year to year. More important, this type of growth is subject to diminishing returns, as movements along the production function generate smaller and smaller increments of output for each additional unit of input. Sustaining economic growth over time requires the constant invention of new technologies, to shift the production function and overcome diminishing returns (see Box 5-1).

If technological progress allows the same or fewer resources to provide more output, the value of output per unit of resources rises, and this rise can lead to increases in per-capita income. Resources can also be freed up to provide new types of goods. The phenomenon of technological progress is not new and has been occurring for many years. What is new is the rapidity with which new technologies are being developed. Modern technological progress is the result of both *applied science* and *new knowledge* in the basic sciences.

Specialization

As innovation occurs and capital is accumulated, increasing opportunities arise for people to specialize and trade with each other. Such *specialization and trade* can raise productivity and attract savings and investment. Specialization is related to scale as well. As firms increase in

size, specialization is facilitated. "Division of labor" can make workers more efficient as they become proficient at just a few tasks. Adam Smith argued that this type of division of labor is at the heart of economic growth. In his famous book, *The Wealth of Nations* (1776), he noted that specialization is limited only by "the extent of the market," or the ease with which one person can trade with others, both within and across countries. As markets expand, the possibilities of mass-producing goods enable firms to gain efficiency in both production and marketing. Increased scale and specialization allow more output per unit of input and, hence, growth.

Efficiency Improvement

Another type of organizational change that can lead to economic growth is improved production efficiency. Improved efficiency means getting more for the same inputs.

Efficiency can be divided into different types. *Technical efficiency* relates to whether producers are producing on the production function as opposed to below or inside it. Using the same amount of inputs, some producers obtain higher output levels than others due to differences in management and effort. *Price or allocative efficiency*, mentioned above and illustrated in Figure 5-7, relates to the degree to which producers, operating on their production functions, employ the correct amount of inputs to equate their marginal revenue to their marginal cost of obtaining the last unit of output. By definition, producers who maximize profits are both technically and allocatively efficient.

Market efficiency is related to the type of economic system and the degree of market power within it. Improvements in resource allocation occur through market efficiency when increased competition or new technology lowers the margin between buyers and sellers. A country that has a relatively free market with many buyers and sellers, so that no producer or consumer can affect prices, has greater market efficiency than one with a few producers who are able to control prices. The availability of good information affects the degree of market efficiency, and improved information flows can help create growth due to more efficient allocation of productive resources.

Human Capital

So far in this chapter we have explained economic growth without assuming any change in the people themselves. Much of economic growth is driven by changes in people's capabilities or their *human capital* as affected particularly by their education and health. The nature of these

capabilities is easily misunderstood. Even the most illiterate, impoverished person is often intelligent and skilled, but educated healthy people can more easily contribute to the generation of new technologies and more readily utilize those technologies. Education is therefore an important source of economic growth, inextricably linked with technological progress and, of course, with the productivity of labor. Part of the economic benefits of education is derived from improved productivity of workers, part from improved quality of management, and part from education's contribution to producing new or improved technologies.[3] The term human capital is used in referring to education because education is an investment, in many ways similar to physical capital in requiring an investment of resources that pays off over a long period of time and eventually depreciates.

Education is important, but in the lowest-income countries an equally important form of human capital is a person's health. Undernutrition and preventable diseases remain the world's biggest killers, and they sharply reduce the productivity of those who survive. Improvements in nutrition and disease control raise output directly, and also make it easier and more worthwhile to keep children in school, leading to more education as well. Human capital improvements due to investments in health have also been called improvements in physiological capital.[4]

Education and health are forms of human capital that are embodied in particular individuals. If you were to trade places with a lower-income person, the odds are you would be more educated and healthier, and that might influence what you could do. But if others in your society were *also* healthier and better educated, that would allow you to develop different expectations about their behavior as well. You could rely more on other people, using your mutual education to develop and communicate new ideas about how to work together.

Institutional Change

Historical patterns of economic growth exhibit remarkable differences across countries and over time. Levels and rates of growth differ significantly even among neighboring countries. Many of these differences are not solely attributable to sources mentioned above, but to institutions as well. Institutions include government policies, legal structures,

[3] Education can, of course, have other benefits associated with the capacity to develop new institutions and with many non-economic factors.

[4] Robert Fogel, National Bureau of Economic Research, Working Paper 9771, June 2003.

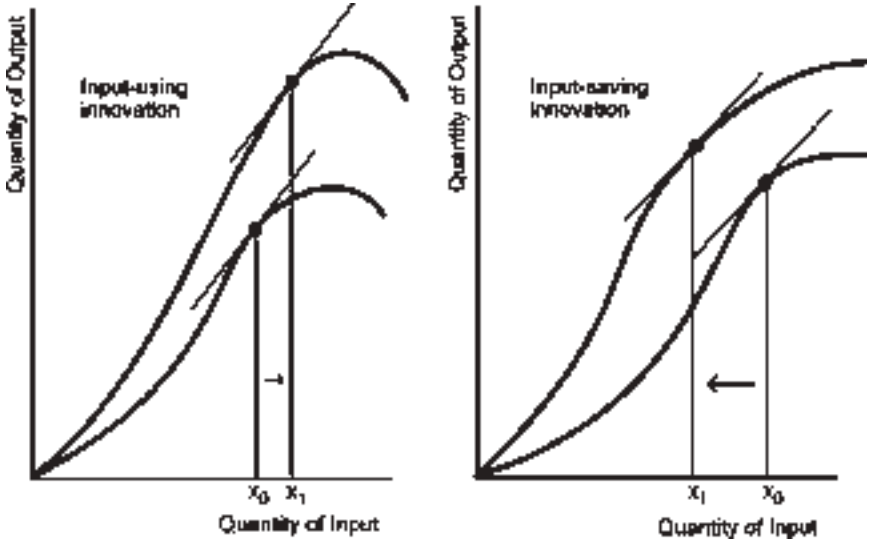
BOX 5-2.
NEW TECHNOLOGIES, INPUT USE and the DEMAND for INNOVATION

Technological innovations can have different impacts on a farmer's input use and output levels, and changes in resource availability can lead to different kinds of innovation. The diagrams below illustrate how farmers' profit maximization affects their response to new technologies, and affects the kinds of new techniques that are most needed in various countries.

The left-hand panel shows an innovation that, with no change in relative prices, would lead a farmer to increase input use. The most important examples of such technologies are "green revolution" crop varieties, whose growth habits and stress tolerance make it worthwhile for farmers to apply more labor, fertilizer, and water to the plant.

The right-hand panel shows another kind of innovation that, with no change in relative prices, would lead a farmer to cut back on input use. Most such input-saving innovations are mechanical devices such as bigger, faster implements, which take less capital and labor to do a given task.

"Input-using" innovations involve the discovery of new techniques *to the right* of existing input levels, whereas "input saving" innovation involves discovery of new techniques to the left of them. Price changes, by leading farmers to look for new techniques in one direction or the other, help influence which kind of innovation is more likely to be discovered and adopted. Most notably, in poor countries where the farm labor force is rising, labor-using innovations are demanded. In contrast, once the farm labor force starts falling in richer countries, labor-saving mechanization is farmers' priority.



and market structures. If markets exhibit distortions, efficient price signals will not be received by producers; if financial markets are incomplete or characterized by excessive risks, savings and capital accumulation will be constrained. If people are unsure about their ability to recover investments, due to political instability or ill-defined property rights, they will not undertake investments. The ability of institutions to adapt to new needs and demands can itself be a source of economic growth.

During economic growth there is often explosive growth in many kinds of social institutions. This new *social capital* may displace previous institutions, such as family or village networks, which might have been helpful but are not as well-adapted to the new circumstances. Some of these institutional changes are a result of economic growth, but in some they may play a causal role in economic development, so that a transfer of institutions could accelerate growth. For example, many countries benefit from the introduction of quality certification systems to enforce grades and standards, uniform procedures for contract enforcement and commercial law, and well-adapted property rights of various sorts.

SUMMARY

Economic growth involves a transition from low-income agricultural societies to higher-income non-farm employment. The process is driven by capital accumulation, technological innovation, and specialization in either sector. An economic transformation occurs for several reasons. First, demand for food is relatively fixed. It is "income-inelastic", so when incomes grow, demand for other things grows faster. Second, productivity increases in agriculture free up resources for nonagricultural production. Third, as people specialize and trade with each other, many tasks that were previously done on the farm are now classified as nonagricultural.

Although agriculture declines as a share of the economy, the sector does not shrink. Typically, total farm output continues to rise during economic growth. Furthermore, when the total population is growing, the number of farmers tends to rise for many years, until the absolute size of the non-farm sector is large enough to absorb all those entering the workforce each year. The resulting change in land area per farmer will often place downward pressure on rural living standards during the early stages of economic development, even as the rest of the economy grows.

To explain the causes and consequences of economic growth, we use production functions that describe, for a given technology, the different amounts of product that can be obtained from different levels and combinations of inputs. An isoquant shows different combinations of two inputs that can be used to produce the same level of output, given a particular technology. The law of diminishing returns has important implications as population or capital increases against a fixed land base. To overcome diminishing returns and sustain growth over time, people need technological change, increased specialization and trade, and improvements in efficiency that may be related to improvements in human capital and institutions.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Capital accumulation
Economic efficiency
Economic transformation
Education
Human capital
Input demands
Input response curve
Institutional change
Isoquant
Law of diminishing returns
Marginal product
Natural resources
Non-farm job opportunities
Population growth
Production function
Scale and specialization
Sources of economic growth
Technological progress

Looking Ahead

The sources of growth discussed above relate to whole economies, to sectors within economies, and to individual firms (including farms). Various theories have been proposed to explain how the sources of growth have been, or could be, combined to transform economies from low to higher standards of living. We examine these theories in the next chapter. In subsequent chapters we consider how these growth factors can affect firms within the agricultural sector.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1. What is meant by the term 'factors of production'?
2. What are the three major factors of production and how do they relate to the major sources of economic growth?
3. What is the law of diminishing returns and what might be its significance in relation to population growth?
4. Will natural resource limitations be a serious restriction to future economic growth or growth in food production?
5. What is capital accumulation and why is it important to development?

6 Why are specialization, efficiency, and technological progress important to agricultural and economic development?
7 Why is an economic transformation inevitably associated with economic development?
8 What factors determine the rate at which an economy becomes transformed from an agricultural to a mixed economy with significant nonagricultural as well as agricultural activities?
9 If the total labor force were growing 2 percent per year and 50 percent of the labor force were in agriculture, how fast would nonagricultural employment need to expand in order to hold the number of people employed in agriculture constant? Why is this important?
10 What are the implications of the economic transformation for the agricultural sector?
11 What is meant by the terms "human capital" and "institutional change"?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Anderson, Kym, "On Why Agriculture Declines with Economic Growth," *Agricultural Economics,* vol. 3, no. 1 (October 1987), pp. 195–207.

Gardner, B.L., "Causes of Rural Economic Development," in D. Colman and N. Vink, *Reshaping Agriculture's Contributions to Society* (Oxford, UK: Blackwell Publishing, 2005), pp. 21–41.

Ruttan, V., "Productivity Growth in World Agriculture: Sources and Constraints," *Journal of Economic Perspectives*, vol. 16 (Fall 2002), pp. 161–84.

Thirlwall, A.P., *Growth and Development* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2006), Chapters 4–6.

CHAPTER 6

Development Theory and Growth Strategies

We can realistically envision a world without extreme poverty by the year 2025, because technological progress enables us to meet basic human needs on a global scale. — Jeffrey Sachs[1]

People respond to incentives; all the rest is commentary.
— Steven Landsburg[2]

THIS CHAPTER

1 Reviews how economic development and growth theories have evolved over time, including the role of institutions
2 Considers the interaction of technology and institutions
3 Considers the distinctive characteristics of agriculture as opposed to other sectors as the economy develops

The HISTORICAL EVOLUTION of DEVELOPMENT THEORY

In the previous chapter, we identified potential sources of economic growth and the inevitable structural transformation that accompanies economic development. We turn now to ideas and theories that attempt to explain how these sources of growth can be integrated into transformation processes that produce higher living standards. The search for appropriate theories of economic development has received economists' attention for two centuries. Different theories have led to different implications for what governments, private firms, or individuals might do to achieve their goals. One especially important contrast concerns

[1] Jeffrey Sachs, *The End of Poverty: Economic Possibilities for Our Time* (New York: Penguin, 2005), p. 347.
[2] Steven Lansburg, *The Armchair Economist: Economics and Everyday Life* (New York: Free Press, 1995).

the relative roles attributed to technology and productivity (reflected in the quotation above from Jeffrey Sachs), as opposed to institutions and incentives (reflected in the quotation above from Steven Landsburg). Emphasis has shifted over time, partly because of changes in constraints that limit economic growth, partly because of changing technological possibilities, and partly because of experiences with what has or has not worked. We consider in this chapter the historical progression of thinking among economists. Over time, a synthesis of ideas has emerged, with increased focus on the interaction between technology and institutions.

The Classical Period

The late eighteenth century is known as the *classical* period in economic thought, and the books written then remain widely debated today. One of the most enduring debates concerns the role of international trade. At the time, conventional wisdom held that a country's wealth, like the wealth of an individual, could be measured by the amount of its gold and other monetary assets. Exports were believed to be better than imports, and this *mercantilist view* provided an important argument for trade restrictions in Britain and elsewhere. **Adam Smith** challenged the mercantilist idea, arguing that freer trade in both directions would produce higher standards of living, especially if combined with a more competitive, equal-opportunity environment at home. Adam Smith's arguments were extended by **John Stuart Mill** and **David Ricardo,** and their ideas about the division of labor and specialization, comparative advantage, and trade remain key concepts in modern economics. Their theories about the value of freer trade were not easily accepted at the time, however, and many mercantilist ideas remain widespread today.

The eighteenth century was a period of both economic expansion and population growth. Many political leaders argued that having more people would help make each country richer. In the early nineteenth century this idea was challenged by **Thomas Malthus**, who argued that population was limited mainly by the food supply, and by a fixed supply of high-quality land. Ricardo agreed with Malthus and was pessimistic that growth could be sustained in the long run in a country because of the implications of population growth, given the law of diminishing returns. Their classical theory in its simplest form proceeds as follows. (1) There are two broad types of people: workers, whose only asset is their labor, and capitalists, who own land and capital. With a certain amount of labor, just enough wages are paid to cover workers' subsistence. (2) If a new invention or some other favorable event creates an increase in production, a surplus above that necessary to pay

the subsistence wage is generated, which is accumulated by capitalists. (3) Such accumulation increases the demand for labor, and, with a given population, in the short run wages tend to rise. (4) As wages exceed the level of subsistence, population grows, generating an increased demand for food. (5) But, if high quality land is essentially fixed, the rise in food demand is met by bringing lower-quality land into production. The price of food rises to cover the higher cost of production on lower-quality land. (6) The effects of increased population (supply of labor) and higher-priced food drive the real wage, or the wage paid divided by food prices, back to the subsistence level, and the rate of population growth declines.

Thus, in the classical model, diminishing returns to increments of labor applied to a relatively fixed supply of high-quality land, and higher costs of production on lower-quality land, represent constraints to growth, so that living standards remain at subsistence levels. If technological progress occurs, the situation may change temporarily but not permanently. Ricardo's policy prescription was for Great Britain to remove its corn laws, which would free up trade, and allow food imports to keep the price of food from rising and choking off industrial growth.

History has shown that the classical model underestimates the role of technological progress. It also fails to consider factors that tend to lower birth rates as economic growth occurs. It oversimplifies the forces influencing wages and the complexity of the sharing or distribution objective found in many societies. Nevertheless, as we will see below, certain aspects of the classical model had a significant influence on subsequent theories of economic development, especially its emphasis on diminishing returns and its implications for trade.

Growth Stages: From Marx to Rostow

By the late nineteenth century, there had been enough economic development in Europe and North America for observers to notice a clear shift in the mix of activities. Many economists focused on patterns of such change, arguing that economies moved through sequential *growth stages.* While the suggested sets of stages were based on different principles, most growth stage theories attempted to emphasize that economic development involves a structural (economic and/or social) transformation of a country.

In the late nineteenth century, **Frederick List**, a German economic historian, developed a set of stages based on shifts in occupational distribution. His five stages were savage, pastoralism, agriculture,

agriculture-manufacturing, and agriculture-manufacturing-commerce. Concurrently, another German, **Karl Marx**, visualized five stages of development based on changes in technology, property rights, and ideology. His steps were primitive communism, ancient slavery, medieval feudalism, industrial capitalism, socialism, and communism. He felt that class struggles drive countries through these stages. One class possesses the land, capital, and authority over labor while the other possesses only labor. Class struggles occur because economic institutions allow the exploitation of labor. Prior to reaching the final stage, labor is never paid its full value. For example, if wages rise in the fourth stage (industrial capitalism), labor is replaced by machines, thereby creating a "reserve army of the unemployed" that brings wages back down. Because capitalists derive their profits from labor, more machines and fewer laborers mean lower profit rates. The pressure of lower profits leads to more exploitation, more unemployment, mass misery, and eventually revolution. Labor then gains control over all means of production under communism.

A different kind of thinking about growth stages emerged in the early twentieth century, when **Alan Fisher** and later **Colin Clark** developed a theory in which the transition from agriculture to manufacturing and services occurs not because of government intervention, but because of increases in output per worker, and advances in science and technology. Another growth stage theorist, **Walt W. Rostow**, argued in the 1950s that these changes were closely related to the rate of growth in per-capita incomes, which would experience a "take off" into sustained growth once enough capital had been accumulated. Rostow believed, however, that an eventual slowdown in the rate of growth would be the normal path for any sub-sector in an economy, due to declining price and income elasticities of demand for the goods produced by a sector. In this view, the secret to growth is to find and support emerging or "leading sectors".

Thinking of the economy in terms of distinct sectors has some advantages, but the idea of distinct growth stages fell out of favor in the 1950s. Countries experienced a wide variety of growth paths during the 1950s and 1960s, and some experienced sharp reversals of fortune. Most economists no longer thought of economic growth as a predetermined sequence of stages, which had relatively little prescriptive power, but instead focused on the gradual accumulation of productive resources, particularly capital.

Capital Accumulation: From the "Financing Gap" to Technology-Driven Growth

The first widely-used theory of growth based on capital accumulation was developed by **Roy Harrod** and **Evsey Domar**. They used mathematical formulas to show how the rate of output growth would be limited by the level of investment and hence the national savings rate, multiplied by the productivity of those investments. The Harrod-Domar model was simple and elegant, and yet could still be fitted to real data using the observed capital/output ratio of the economy to project the productivity of additional investment.

In the 1960s, when the Harrod-Domar approach was applied to low-income countries, it was recognized that national savings was not the only possible source of capital. Borrowing from abroad could add to national savings, permitting an even faster growth of the capital stock. Such "two-gap" models, popularized by **Hollis Chenery** and others, implied that foreign aid to fill a "financing gap" could accelerate growth significantly, as each dollar of aid would have the same productivity as a dollar of savings.

The Harrod-Domar-Chenery approach focused primarily on the rate of national savings or borrowing from abroad, with less attention to the efficiency with which additional funds were spent. In the mid-1950s, **Robert Solow** worked out the mathematics of a model in which additional capital earns diminishing returns. In that case, the long-run rate of growth of per-capita income is driven by the rate of technological progress, not savings as such. Solow did not explain how technological progress is generated: he treated new technology (and hence the growth rate of the economy) as exogenous to (outside of) his model. Much later, a new generation of economists would make growth models in which people choose how much to invest in new technologies, so that technical change and hence the growth rate is endogenous, explained by property rights and government policies. Those models are described in the final section of this chapter.

Dual-Economy Models: "Surplus Labor" and Unemployment

The first mathematical models of growth used a single sector to describe the whole economy, and focused on capital accumulation. Soon thereafter, economists produced models with two sectors, in which growth and poverty alleviation depend crucially on the allocation of labor. The most influential *dual-economy* (or two-sector) model was developed by **W. Arthur Lewis.** His model was subsequently modified by **John Fei** and **Gustav Ranis, Dale Jorgenson,** and others.

A simplified version of the dual-economy model can be illustrated using the total and marginal product curves shown in Figure 6-1. This version of the model is designed to relate most closely to the situation in large labor-surplus but relatively natural-resource-poor countries in which domestic (as opposed to international) characteristics of the economy dominate. The model could potentially represent (albeit roughly) the situation in a country such as India or China.

The model includes several sources of growth discussed in Chapter 5, and illustrates the potential for using "surplus" labor and technological progress in agriculture to achieve economic growth. It assumes the existence of a large population in the traditional agricultural sector, for which the marginal product of labor is below the wage rate, which is determined by society's rules about sharing output. There is disguised unemployment in the sense that if the people who appear to be working are removed, production will not drop or will drop very little. In other words, labor is applied in the agricultural sector up to the point where it is redundant in the upper left-hand graph in Figure 6-1; or to the right of N3 or N2 in the lower left-hand graph.

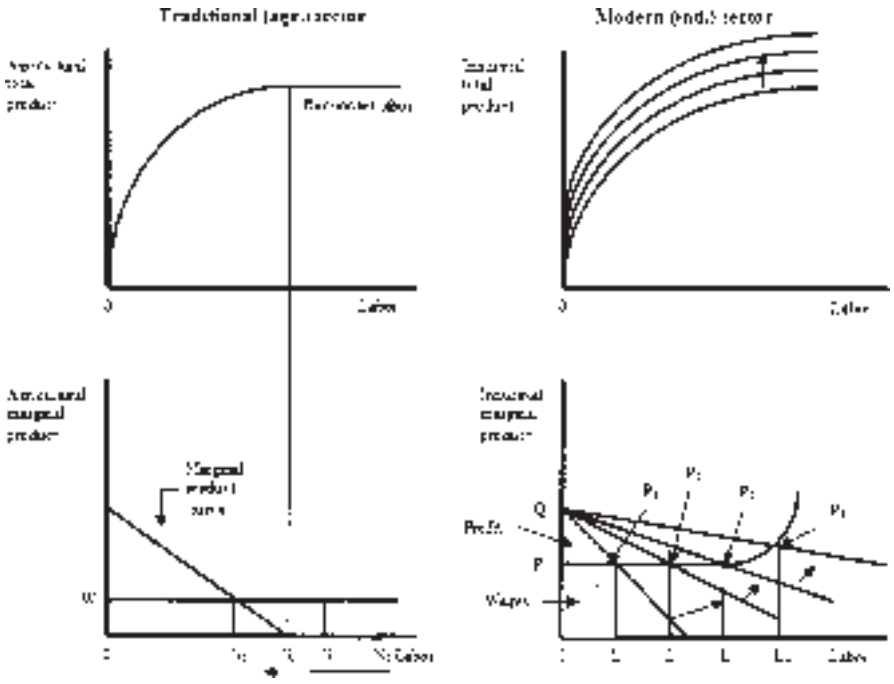


Figure 6-1. Graphical representation of labor-surplus dual-economy model.

The wage rate in agriculture (W) is assumed to initially approximate the average productivity of labor in that sector (and eventually be determined in an inter-sector labor market). Land is fixed. Wages in the modern industrial sector are assumed to be higher than in the agricultural sector in order to attract labor from the agricultural sector. Firms in the modern sector hire labor up to the point at which the marginal product of labor equals the wage rate. Initially this is the point Po in the lower right-hand graph of Figure 6-1. Labor in industry is hired up to Lo at the wage P.

In a "labor surplus" economy, the development process can be driven by transfer of labor from agriculture to the industrial sector, where it creates a profit that can be used for further economic growth. In the lower right-hand graph in Figure 6-1, total wages initially paid to labor in the industrial sector equal the area PPoLoO while profits equal the triangular area QP0P. This profit, or part of it, is reinvested in capital items such as equipment, machinery, and buildings — items that make labor more productive. This greater productivity shifts the total product of labor in industry upward (see the upper right-hand graph of Figure 6-1) and the corresponding marginal product of labor (demand for labor) out to the right (see the lower right-hand graph of Figure 6-1). This demand for labor is met by drawing more labor out of agriculture.

In the model, a shift of labor from agriculture to industry continues to drive economic growth as long as the marginal cost of labor remains constant (represented by the horizontal line between Po and P2 in the lower right-hand graph in Fig. 6-1). Once the supply of "surplus" labor from the traditional farm sector has been absorbed, the marginal cost of labor supplied to the modern sector turns upward (as it does to the right of L2), the growth in demand for labor by industry slows, because fewer profits are available for reinvestment.

Why might the wage rate in industry increase and the demand for labor stop shifting out? First, surplus labor in agriculture might be used up so industry would have to offer higher wages to compete with agriculture for labor. Second, food production will start to decline if fewer than N2 workers are employed in the agricultural sector. If population is increasing and incomes in the industrial sector are rising, then the demand for food will rise. Unless an increase in agricultural production occurs, agricultural prices eventually rise relative to industrial prices. This rise, in turn, raises the wage at which employers are able to obtain workers from agriculture for industry. The major implication is that economic growth becomes constrained unless there is technological improvement in both sectors.

The labor-surplus dual-economy model is a highly simplified view of the situation in countries with underemployed people. It has several limitations. First, evidence indicates that few if any situations exist where the marginal product of labor in agriculture is close to zero. Few countries have excess labor in agriculture. However, Jorgenson and others have pointed out that the presence of an active labor market in which the two sectors compete for labor can generate the same implication of the need for technological improvement in both sectors. Second, the model ignores the possibility of international trade, although it could be added without much difficulty. Third, and more important, the model fails to recognize the cost of resources used in conducting research and educating farmers to produce more and facilitate adoption of new technologies. The issue of how to endogenize (build in the process for self generating) the development of new technologies in a model of economic development was not addressed. Despite these limitations, it is a useful means of thinking about linkages between multiple economic sectors in a developing-country context.

Dependency Theory and Trade Protectionism

In the 1950s and 1960s, a number of theorists saw international trade and investment as a cause rather than a remedy for poverty in low-income regions, arguing that trade made the poor increasingly dependent and weak. **Immanuel Wallerstein**, for example, popularized the idea that prosperity of the "center" was linked to the impoverishment of the "periphery". *Dependency theory* encompassed a range of arguments, generally leading to the conclusion that the governments of low-income countries should protect their local economies from foreign trade and investment, pursuing self-sufficiency as a form of political and economic independence.

A few dependency theorists, notably **Andre Gunder Frank,** adopted a *Marxist* perspective, arguing that the income of wealthy countries was derived from the output of poor countries. In this view, wealthy countries use military and political power to limit poor countries' options, and thereby extract income that would otherwise belong to the poor. Some expropriation of this type clearly has occurred, in the colonial period and through other kinds of intervention, but most economic historians believe the output of poor countries can explain only a very small fraction of the wealth we see in industrialized countries.

A more widely-accepted set of ideas come from *structuralists* such as **Raul Prebish** and **Hans Singer,** who argued that market forces limit the degree to which poor countries can develop through trade with richer countries. In this view, the terms of trade (the ratio of prices of

exports to prices of imports) tend to turn against developing countries over time, because they produce mainly primary products (agricultural and mineral) for which prices decline over time relative to the manufactured products they import. This deterioration in the *terms of trade* is believed to be generated by (1) low price and income elasticities of demand for primary products compared to manufactured products, (2) slow productivity growth in primary product production, and (3) monopolistic elements in the production of products imported by developing countries while primary products are produced competitively. To the extent that demand for poor countries' exports is price- and income-inelastic, then output expansion in the poor countries or in the world as a whole does indeed worsen poor countries' terms of trade, although again this influence can explain only a fraction of the income gap between rich and poor countries.

The trade restrictions favored by dependency theorists could also be justified by much older arguments in favor of government intervention to protect domestic markets from foreign competitors, notably the idea that *infant industries* can get started only if they are temporarily protected from foreign competition, and the idea that a *big push* to expand many industries simultaneously could help countries take advantage of synergies between them. During the 1970s and 1980s, however, it became increasingly clear that industrialization aimed at replacing imports for the domestic market could generate only a temporary burst of economic growth. Export-oriented industrialization proved to be more successful.

Contemporary Growth Theory: Technological Innovation and Public Institutions

By the mid-1980s, enough statistics on national income across countries were available for researchers to test the basic predictions of the standard growth model, posited thirty years earlier by **Robert Solow**. Results were surprising, and sparked a burst of academic research on economic growth and poverty reduction that continues today.

The Solow model predicted that poor countries would eventually catch up to rich ones, because of diminishing returns to capital. Statistical tests showed that this type of "convergence" did indeed occur, but only among sub-groups of countries. The highest-income group of countries continued to grow with no sign of diminishing returns, while some poorer countries grew even faster to catch up, and other poor countries just stayed poor.

Economic theorists attempted to explain these results. **Robert Lucas**, **Paul Romer**, and others showed how rich countries' growth could

be explained by a flow of new technologies, which help overcome diminishing returns. Their models hinge on the idea that new knowledge is a public good: once discovered, it can be used repeatedly in new technologies without being used up, and so technological innovations can accumulate without limit. But not all countries are able to generate or use these innovations.

What determines whether a country develops and applies appropriate new techniques? Knowledge itself is a public good, whose development and dissemination depends on public education and government-funded research. Individuals and private firms will never have enough incentive to invest as much in these resources as they are worth to society as a whole. But knowledge is economically valuable only when embodied in goods and services that meet consumer needs. Successful countries promote both public knowledge and also private enterprise, encouraging new enterprises with new technologies.

A key question is the degree to which innovators should be given monopoly rights over the sale of new products, through patents and other forms of intellectual property rights. Government-enforced protection from imitators is a double-edged sword: it makes each invention more profitable than it otherwise would be, but it does so by restricting its use! The patent policies that are most economically successful limit the scope and duration of protection, to be just enough to reward past innovators, while encouraging others to make use of the innovation. The British and U.S. patent systems were early pioneers in this regard, offering protection only to a specific product (to allow the entry of other, somewhat similar products), and limiting the time period of protection (to hasten the entry of other firms), while allowing competitors to challenge others' patents in a free and fair judicial system.

The interplay among technology, natural resources, human capital, and institutions remains an active area of research today. It is clear that other sources of growth are only effective if they operate in an institutional environment conducive to growth. The importance of the rule of law, enforceable property rights and contracts, absence of serious government distortions to markets, and relatively low levels of corruption are all important to economic development. The high costs of transacting also seem to prevent many countries from realizing improved levels of living. Improved information flows may help reduce the cost of transacting and make it more difficult for inefficient institutional and political structures to survive. We return to this issue of how to reduce transactions costs in Chapter 11.

FROM THEORY to ALTERNATIVE STRATEGIES

The concept of a *development strategy* implies a long-term road map that encompasses a series of fundamental decisions with respect to sector emphasis (agriculture versus industry), factor use (capital-led versus employment-led growth), international market orientation (inward versus outward), concern for growth versus distribution, and the roles of the private versus the public sector. Many of these decisions present conflicting choices that countries must make when designing their development strategies. The appropriate path for a particular country depends on its starting characteristics and global economic conditions.

Industry versus Agriculture

The question of whether to channel public and private investments into the agricultural or industrial sectors has been asked by policymakers for many decades. In most countries, agriculture is initially the dominant sector containing most of society's resources, but it contains the poorest and least politically influential people and so is often relatively neglected by government. Investments in agriculture are slowed by this weak political base, but other factors inhibit such investments. Impacts of agricultural productivity growth can be difficult to observe. As seen in Chapter 5, an increase in farm output generally leads to an increase in *other* activity, as farmers invest their resources in non-farm enterprises, and a lower cost of food helps non-farmers buy more of other things. So agriculture appears to be a slow-growth sector, even as it drives the expansion of other sectors. Politicians generally want to please urban constituents and often adopt policies to lower food prices. Lower food prices, in turn, reduce the profitability of investments in agriculture. There is usually much stronger political pressure for urban investments, and for policies that produce immediate, highly visible results.

The degree to which governments support agriculture as opposed to industry also depends on world market conditions: in the late 1960s and early 1970s, the threat of food scarcity associated with Asian population growth led many countries to invest heavily in irrigation and crop breeding to raise agricultural productivity, especially within Asia. During the 1980s and 1990s, the payoff from those investments produced a relative abundance of food on world markets, which reduced demand for further investment, even in regions such as Africa where food was increasingly scarce. During the current decade, agricultural markets have tightened again, due in part to those lower investments in agriculture in the 1980s and 1990s, and in part due to growth in use

of agricultural products for bio-fuels. The resulting higher prices for food once again appear to be stimulating some public investments in agriculture. In addition, private companies and private foundations such as the Gates Foundation have responded with increased investments in agriculture.

Inward- versus Outward-Led Growth

A persistent debate in the development literature has centered on the merits of an inward (import-substitution, self-sufficiency)–oriented strategy versus an outward (international trade, export promotion)–oriented strategy. Some observers have argued that developing countries are hurt by trade because they produce mainly primary products for which prices decline over time relative to the manufactured products they import. In addition, the colonial heritage in several developing countries included the export of certain primary products to developed countries with the profits going to foreign companies or to small groups of elites in the developing countries. Proponents of an inward strategy have also argued that countries following an inward-oriented path suffer less from debt crises and protectionist policies in the developed countries.

The impact of inward-directed strategies depends largely on the policies used to implement the strategy. Policies such as overvalued exchange rates, import restrictions, and explicit export taxes, which discourage exports and stimulate substitution of domestically produced goods for imports, have generally been shown to be counterproductive. They lead to distortions in resource prices, create monopoly profits, high government budget deficits and, usually, inflationary pressures. Policies supporting production of foods for internal consumption via research, infrastructure, and other public investments can be called inward-oriented, yet are not associated with some of the distortions caused by measures typically used to promote import-substitution.

Proponents of outward strategies argue that by removing the bias against exports, countries can achieve significant economic benefits from specialization and comparative advantage, from the import of products manufactured by highly capital-intensive industries abroad, and from the stimulus to employment provided by reduced pressures to concentrate capital in a limited number of capital-intensive industries. Economies of scale can be achieved due to enlargement of the effective market size. Some countries that have been successful at promoting export-led growth have, in fact, also relied on government interventions in exporting industries.

Many developing countries have a comparative advantage in exporting sugar, but face protectionist sugar policies in developed countries.

Theoretical arguments support either position. However, over the past 30 years, empirical evidence is weighted in favor of an outward-looking strategy that biases the economy neither for nor against exports. Evidence shows that policies often used to create an inward-looking strategy can lead to inefficiency. The economic efficiencies sacrificed in attempts to insulate a country from world market forces can be significant. Open markets expose a country to the effects of protectionist policies and interest rate fluctuations abroad. However they also offer insurance against risks originating at home.

Outward-looking strategies will be most successful if international markets are truly competitive and if access to markets is unrestricted. International trade agreements, covered later in this book, have moved the world markets toward more transparency and fewer trade restrictions. Many restrictions, however, still exist.

Growth versus Equity

The persistence of abject poverty even in countries experiencing rapid rates of economic growth has spurred a debate over the appropriate focus of development efforts. Most of us accept the goal of lifting as many people as possible out of extreme poverty, but there are many competing ideas on how to do it. Essentially three general approaches have been suggested, sometimes in combination. The first is to make direct transfer payments (money, goods, services) from the more well-to-do to the poor. The second is for the country to concentrate entirely

on growth as a goal, no matter who receives the income, in the expectation that part of the benefits will trickle down to the poor. A third approach is to direct specific efforts toward raising the productivity of the poorest segments of society during the growth process.

Direct transfer payments are difficult for developing countries to afford unless obtained as grants from international sources. The most important role of direct transfers can occur (1) during short-run weather-induced famines, unusually high food price spikes, or other emergency situations and (2) among the perpetually disadvantaged elderly, orphaned, and handicapped.

The majority of the poor in most developing countries, however, are the unemployed and underemployed rural landless. Even unskilled urban workers are usually better off than the rural landless. The landless live close to the margin and may fall below it during bad crop years. Therefore the important question is whether the benefits of growth will trickle down to the poor or whether development efforts must be directed at the poor.

During rapid growth, some benefits are captured by the poor. However, the income distribution often will worsen (become more unequal) during initial stages of growth unless specific efforts are directed toward incorporating the poor into productive activities. The poor can be bypassed by growth-oriented investments especially when possession of assets, particularly land and education, is skewed. Countries that begin with a more equal distribution of assets tend to experience growth with equity more than others. Growth can actually stagnate under conditions of extremely inequitable asset distribution. Growth itself can be affected by the wider spread of assets, institutional changes, and employment-creating activities.

The mere widening of the income distribution as development occurs is not as much a concern as what happens to income *levels* of the poor. Neither the level nor the distribution of income will be improved for the poor in most countries unless they have improved access to assets such as land and education which can make their primary asset, labor, more productive during the growth process. Development strategies that increase employment opportunities and promote the supply of wage goods (mainly food) will have the best chances for reducing poverty under virtually all circumstances.

Private versus Public

The appropriate mix of public and private activity varies by country, and by sector. Some services are almost always best funded through the public sector, such as an independent judicial system and roads.

These are *public goods,* whose provision is limited by *free rider* problems: people can benefit without paying, so government intervention is needed to force everyone to pay a share of their costs. Other activities can be funded voluntarily through private activity, but must be regulated by the public sector or they will be provided inefficiently.

Activities that are typically regulated by government, if not provided directly in the public sector, include *natural monopolies* such as water supplies, or services with *positive externalities* such as sanitation and health. Too little of these services would be provided by private firms if they were not regulated in some way by government. On the other hand, unregulated firms would provide too many goods that generate *negative externalities* such as pollution.

The outcome of interactions between the public and private sectors is often determined not by who does what, but by the degree of transparency and accountability in what they do. Private firms that can be held accountable to their investors and customers tend to work efficiently, as do public institutions that are accountable to voters and taxpayers. Either kind of institution can become corrupt and inefficient, in the absence of appropriate checks and balances, within and between each sector.

A useful way to explain the degree of accountability in the economy, over both public and private institutions, is through the relative size of *transaction costs* in the market or political system. Lower transaction costs typically make either system more accountable to a larger number of people. Easier transactions between customers and suppliers make the market more efficient, and easier transactions between citizens and their government usually make the public sector more efficient.

A range of institutional arrangements can keep transactions costs low and sustain checks and balances over time. Private markets must be regulated by public institutions, and the public sector must be kept accountable to the private individuals. Otherwise, even if new technologies are available, growth can be hindered by an inefficient or inequitable institutional structure.

Many examples of insufficient institutional structures exist in the world. In developing countries, these inefficient or insufficient institutions constrain economic growth continually and contribute to short-term economic crises. In developed countries they also can cause periodic problems, such as the recent financial crisis that was facilitated by lax financial regulations with limited oversight. Achieving the appropriate balance of institutional efficiency and accountability is difficult but critical for economic development.

SUMMARY

The classical model of economic growth stressed the importance of diminishing returns to labor as a constraint to growth, and the mid-twentieth-century Solow model stressed diminishing returns to capital. Contemporary experience, however, shows how countries with institutions that reward innovation can sustain rapid economic growth far beyond these constraints.

Growth-stage theories attempted to categorize the growth process into successive stages through which countries must pass as they develop. Dual-economy models focused on movement of labor out of agriculture and how the agricultural transformation can be smoothed by balanced growth in both sectors. Dependency theorists argued that developing countries became increasingly exploited as they become more integrated into world markets, and so should withdraw into self-sufficiency. Each of these classes of theories provides some insights into the development process, but does not provide a comprehensive theory of growth and development.

Contemporary development strategies recognize the role of agriculture as an engine of economic growth. Agricultural growth frees up labor and other resources that can be used in other sectors. It helps alleviate poverty by improving food availability and stimulating broad-based employment growth. Most economists agree that international trade should be kept relatively open, and that governments should provide public goods, promote innovation, regulate monopolies, and make markets more efficient. The exact development strategy for each country depends on its resource mix, stage of development, and institutional structure. New institutional arrangements will have to be designed in many countries to enhance information flows and lower transactions costs, to make markets more efficient and promote accountability in the public and private sectors.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Accountability
Capital-led growth
Center and periphery
Classical model
Comparative advantage
Dependency theory
Employment-led growth
Export-led growth
Growth stage theory
Growth versus equity
Harrod-Domar model
lmport substitution
Income distribution
Institutional arrangements
Integrated rural development
Labor-surplus dual-economy
Open versus closed economy
Public good
Stage of development
Terms of trade
Transactions costs

Looking Ahead

In this chapter, the roles of agriculture in economic development were mentioned along with the need for countries to have development strategies. In much of the rest of the book we will be examining how to develop the agricultural sector itself. Before we do that, however, it is important to discuss the nature of existing agricultural systems in developing countries. In the next chapter, we discuss the characteristics of traditional agriculture and agricultural systems.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1. What is the major factor that is hypothesized to constrain economic growth in the classical model?
2. What are the major features of the labor-surplus dual-economy model and what are its primary weaknesses?
3. Why might the wage rate eventually increase in the industrial sector in the labor-surplus dual-economy model?
4. What implications does technological change in the agricultural sector have in the labor-surplus dual-economy model?
5. What is the distinguishing feature of dependency theories? What are the policy implications of dependency theories?
6. Why is agricultural development important in most developing countries?
7. What is employment-led growth and why is employment important to development?
8. What are the arguments for and against inward- versus outward-oriented development strategies?
9. What are the three general approaches that have been suggested for alleviating abject poverty?
10. Why might both the private and public sectors have important roles to play in development?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Hayami, Yujiro, and Vernon W. Ruttan, *Agricultural Development: An International Perspective* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1985), Chapter 2.

North, Douglas, "Institutions, Transactions Costs, and Economic Growth, *Economic Inquiry,* vol. 25, 1987, pp. 415–8.

Olson, Mancur, Jr., "Big Bills Left on the Sidewalk: Why Some Nations Are Rich and Others Are Poor," *Journal of Economic Perspectives*, vol. 10, Spring, 1996, pp. 3–24.

PART 3

Agricultural Systems and Resource Use

Traditional farm in Nepal.

CHAPTER 7

Agriculture in Traditional Societies

> In low-income countries, peasant agriculture tends to be characterized by low levels of utilization of certain resources, low levels of productivity, and relatively high levels of efficiency in combining resources and enterprises.
>
> — John W. Mellor[1]

This Chapter

1 Describes the common characteristics of traditional agriculture
2 Discusses how traditional farms make decisions about their livelihoods
3 Discusses implications of characteristics of traditional farming systems for agricultural development

CHARACTERISTICS of TRADITIONAL AGRICULTURE

The world food-hunger-poverty problem is serious, and solutions depend in part on agricultural development. Before considering how to foster development, one needs knowledge of the nature of agriculture in developing countries. Without this knowledge, it is difficult to understand the steps needed to stimulate agricultural development and how these changes will affect the people involved. In this chapter, we examine several general characteristics of traditional agriculture. Then in Chapter 8 we compare specific types of agricultural systems in various stages of development.[2]

The term *traditional agriculture* conveys part of its own meaning. The word "traditional" means "to do things the way they have usually

[1] John W. Mellor, *Economics of Agricultural Development* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1966), p. 134.

[2] Agricultural systems include production practices, or *how* things are produced, as well as the types of enterprises, or *what* things are produced.

been done." Because natural resources, culture, history, and other factors vary from place to place, the way things have usually been done also differs greatly from one location to another. And, because conditions change, no type of farming system, no matter how traditional, is ever completely stable. In fact, one of the major challenges to agricultural development is to stimulate improvements in production practices and introduce higher value products to raise incomes over time. To do so, we need to understand the common characteristics found in traditional agriculture.

Livelihoods and the Intermixing of Farm and Family Decisions

Traditional agriculture takes several forms, but small farms predominate in most developing countries. Farm families have access to many types of assets including human labor, land, physical capital such as equipment, financial capital, natural assets, and social and political assets. Farmers make decisions about how to use their assets in production, labor supply, consumption, and other activities, and these decisions reflect their "livelihood strategies". Production and consumption decisions are generally intermixed on traditional farms. For example, in remote areas in Bolivia, farmers produce a number of potato varieties, some for sale. However, some varieties are needed for families and guests during festivals; these varieties are often not available in local markets. The cultural requirement that such varieties should be available at these times affects household planting decisions. The importance of the family and the close relationship between production and consumption decisions occur because much of the labor, management, and capital come from the same household. A sizable proportion of the production is consumed on the farm or at least in the community where it is produced. Success in the farm enterprise may enhance nutritional status, which can in turn lead to higher productivity.

Labor and Land Use

Traditional farms generally are very small, usually only 1 to 3 hectares (about 2.5 to 7.5 acres). Labor applied per hectare planted, however, tends to be high. In many areas, land is a limiting factor and is becoming more limiting over time as populations continue to grow. Labor is often underemployed at certain times of the year, while capital assets are fully exploited. Much sharing of work and income occurs on traditional farms so there is little open unemployment during slack times. This sharing means that the individual's wage may be determined by the average rather than the marginal productivity of labor, as mentioned

BOX 7-1.
KEFA VILLAGE in EASTERN ZAMBIA

The anthropologist Else Skjonsberg visited Kefa Village first in 1977 and several times since. Her book *Change in an African Village: Kefa Speaks* portrays a traditional agricultural system in Eastern Africa. Villagers in Kefa depend on land, which is controlled and allocated by the local chief. Some inherit cultivation rights from their parents, others request unused land from the chief, and others borrow land from relatives and neighbors. When land shortages arise, groups of villagers break away and search other areas for unused lands.

Households cultivate 1-4 hectares, with maize, groundnuts, sweet potatoes, and pumpkins produced for own consumption, and tobacco and cotton produced for sale. Fortunate farmers have access to wetland dambos, where they grow vegetables year-round. The agricultural year starts before the first rains in October, when the ground is broken by hand hoes. Maize, the most important food crop, is planted first, weeded first, and harvested first. Most villagers plant open-pollinated maize varieties, which have been used for generations. Maize is stored in granaries, and in years of abundance it is used to brew beer or sell. Groundnuts are rotated with maize to maintain soil fertility and provide dietary protein. Hybrid maize varieties, with higher yields and shorter growing seasons, have been introduced, but most Kefa villagers are suspicious of their quality and only produce them for sale. Hybrids require purchased fertilizer, and in dryland farming, exposure to risk invites trouble. Many believe use of fertilizers will breed dependency and bring ruin to adventurous farmers.

Family members share work responsibilities. Women prepare meals, carry them to the fields, hand-cultivate all day, then return home with pots and pans, loads of firewood and water. During December and January, the women take responsibility for weeding. It takes as long as three weeks to weed a hectare of maize, so family time is fully occupied. On rainy days, men make repairs around their huts, while women manage household affairs. When labor is scarce, some mobilize workers by throwing home-brewed beer parties; others trade labor and work together. During April through June, labor is in short supply and entire villages participate in harvests. Women are chiefly responsible for harvest, but men and older children assist. Women headload food crops in 50 kilogram bags from the fields to storage bins. In rare cases where oxen or motorized transport is used, men take responsibility for the task.

Although agriculture is the main source of well being in Kefa, all households are engaged in non-agricultural activities. Some brew and sell beer, others practice crafts such as weaving or woodworking, many engage in petty trading, and others are healers, scribes, or have specialized skills. Cattle raising and off-farm incomes supplement farm incomes and help families buy farm and household equipment, clothes, and blankets and

BOX 7-1, continued

pay for services such as school fees. Off-farm activities are divided by gender: women brew and sell beer, trade and weave, while men more often have specialized skills, work with wood, or do repairs. Incomes earned in these activities are held separately by men and women, and women are eager to engage in such activities because the money they earn provides them a degree of autonomy in decision making.

Families in Kefa are structured in different ways. Only about half of the households are nuclear in the sense of two parents and children. About a third of households are headed by women, some divorced or widowed, some whose husband is absent. Children participate actively in household economic life; by age 5 most contribute to household tasks and, past 8 years, farmwork increases. Boys are responsible for tending cattle, while girls assist their mothers in the house and care for younger siblings. Most children attend schools, but are excused during periods of peak agricultural labor. The elderly live with their families or are cared for by family members. The poorest of the poor have few relatives and depend on handouts from other villagers.

in Chapter 6. As a part of a diversified livelihood strategies, family members often work off the farm part time, sometimes on neighboring farms, sometimes in other areas as they seasonally migrate, and sometimes outside agriculture. Petty trading, often carried out by women, is a common off-farm livelihood strategy in many countries.

Although family labor is important, traditional farms may hire some labor, at least during the busy times of the year. Low wages caused by high underemployment in peasant agriculture create incentives to hire laborers. That is, traditional farmers can hire labor or buy a small amount of leisure and enhance their social status at relatively low cost. The people with the lowest economic and social status are usually not the owners of small traditional farms, but landless workers hired by those farmers.

Seasonality

Labor use in traditional agriculture varies seasonally along with agricultural cycles. During slack seasons, those immediately following planting or preceding harvest, labor may be abundant. However, during peak seasons, especially during weeding and harvest, labor can be in short supply. Wages often exhibit similar seasonal fluctuations. The seasonal nature of agricultural production causes variations in consumption and

nutritional status, particularly in African settings. Because storage facilities may be lacking and mechanisms for saving and borrowing incomplete, consumption patterns can follow agricultural cycles. It is common to find ''lean seasons,'' when consumption is low and short-run malnutrition high, especially immediately prior to harvest (see Box 7-2).

BOX 7-2.
SEASONAL MIGRATION: A RATIONAL RESPONSE

Seasonal weather patterns cause traditional farmers to adopt production and consumption patterns to help smooth variations. Seasonality also induces migration as people search for employment opportunities and food. Other seasonal causes of migration are trade and marketing, cultivation of secondary landholding, and pasturing cattle. Seasonal migration is a worldwide phenomenon. In some rain-fed areas of Africa, 30 to 40 percent of the economically active population migrates, while in rural Nepal as much as 30 percent of the households have at least one member who migrates.

Why does seasonal migration occur? During the lean season, labor demands on the farm are low, incomes are stretched, and food can be in short supply. Other rural regions may have crop conditions (due to environmental factors, technologies, or irrigation) that alter the agricultural calendar and create counter-cyclical demands for workers. Large plantations commonly producing many export crops also demand labor on a seasonal basis. Seasonal rural-to-urban migration involves workers migrating to towns, cities, and mines in search of work. These reasons combine to push migrants out of regions where their labor is temporarily in surplus and pull them into areas with high demands for labor.

Seasonal migration is not inefficient nor is it caused by factors such as imperfect labor markets. It is a natural adaptation to highly seasonal agricultural cycles and can smooth family incomes and consumption. Seasonal migration also provides insurance; in the event of a crop failure family income can be maintained in the short-run by migration.

Seasonal labor flows have benefited countries by minimizing labor shortages in harvest times. Exports of cocoa and coffee from forest regions of Western Africa are largely made possible by seasonal migrants who provide labor during harvest. Other regions of the world have seen their total production possibilities shift outward as labor moves to fill seasonal gaps.

Source: Material was drawn from David E. Sahn, ed., *Causes and Implications of Seasonal Variability in Household Food Security* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1987).

Productivity and Efficiency

Traditional farms are characterized by low use of purchased inputs other than labor. Yield per hectare, production per person, and other measures of productivity tend to be low. These factors do not mean, however, that traditional farms are inefficient. As T. W. Schultz points out, traditional farms tend to be *poor but efficient*.[3] Why?

The crop varieties, power sources, methods for altering soil fertility, and certain other factors available to traditional farms constrain productivity growth, and hence reduce returns to labor and traditional types of capital. Efficiency, as measured by equating marginal returns to resources in alternative uses, is often high. In other words, given the technologies available to traditional farmers, they tend to do a good job of allocating labor, land, and other resources. The implication is that just reallocating the resources they currently have will not have a major impact on output.

It makes sense that with static levels of technology, physical conditions, and factor costs, farmers would gradually become very efficient at what they do. When conditions change rapidly, many of the mistakes in resource allocation occur. Also, one must be careful not to equate limited education (another common characteristic in traditional agriculture) with lack of intelligence.

A situation with low use of certain inputs, low productivity, but high economic efficiency under static conditions has important implications if productivity is to be increased. First, new technologies can help to change the production possibilities available to farmers. Second, investments to improve the quantity and quality of productive assets such as land can stimulate income growth. Third, education may be needed to help farmers learn to adjust resource use to changing conditions so as to maintain their high levels of efficiency. However, under the static conditions of traditional agriculture, education will do little to improve productivity, since peasant producers are already relatively efficient.

Rationality and Risk

Traditional farmers are economically rational. They are motivated to raise their standard of living while, of necessity, they are cautious. Traditional farmers are not adverse to change, but proposed changes must fit into their farming systems without altering too abruptly the methods they have developed over time to reduce risk and spread out labor

[3] Theodore W. Schultz, *Transforming Traditional Agriculture* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1964), p. 38.

use. Traditional farmers face many risks, including weather-related uncertainty, agricultural pests and diseases, price and market-related risks, and human health risks. Decisions often reflect attempts to manage this risk. Because formal risk management mechanisms such as insurance are often not available, traditional households turn to informal mechanisms in response to a risky environment.[4]

One mechanism by which traditional farmers spread risk is by exchanging labor and other resources through joint and extended families. By joint and extended families, we mean relatives (and sometimes friends) beyond parents and their children. In many countries, a substantial degree of sharing labor and goods occurs among friends and neighbors, which not only adds to social status but spreads risk. Reciprocal agreements to assist others in times of need can spread risk across space, through agreements with people facing other agro-ecological conditions or in different regions, across economic sectors, through migration and work choice, and across time, through inter-generational sharing. Some of these informal arrangements may deteriorate as development proceeds, creating a need for new institutional arrangements to manage risk.

Another risk-spreading mechanism is reliance on diversified livelihood strategies. Traditional farmers frequently plant multiple crops on a single plot of land in a single season. For example, maize and beans are planted together throughout Latin America; in Africa, maize is intercropped with sweet potatoes, groundnuts, and other foods, depending on the location. Intercropping reduces reliance on success in a single crop and helps manage risk. Off-farm employment further diversifies income sources.

Off-farm Employment

Because agriculture is so visible in developing countries, it is easy to assume that rural dwellers are only farmers. In reality, in most countries, off-farm income is an important source of earnings, especially for the rural poor. Many landless and near-landless families provide labor to other farmers; these agricultural labor markets are described in more detail in Chapter 13. Others work in non-agricultural enterprises; some are self-employed, producing goods and services for sale. Non-farm employment involves small-scale rural manufacturing, transport, services, and petty trading. Income from these enterprises helps offset

[4] See Paul B. Siegel and Jeffrey Alwang, *An Asset Based Approach to Social Risk Management*. SP Discussion Series 9926, Human Development Network, Social Protection Unit, the World Bank, Washington, October 1999.

fluctuations in earnings from agriculture, representing a risk-management strategy. It can smooth intra-year variations in on-farm labor demands. Rural non-farm employment accounts for about 35–30 percent of income across the developing world.[5] Non-farm income is particularly important for women who can combine their household obligations, including child care, with work. The percentage of rural workers in the non-farm sectors varies from country to country, but generally is in the range of 20–50 percent.[6] Between 1960 and 1990 in Asia, the proportion ranged from 67 percent in Taiwan to 20 percent in China. Off-farm employment is a higher proportion of total employment in Asia and Latin America than in Africa, but even in Africa, it exceeds 60 percent in countries such as Botswana and Swaziland.

THE ROLES of LIVESTOCK

Livestock play many vitally important roles in traditional farming systems, roles that are sometimes misunderstood by outsiders. Since about 60 percent of the poor in sub-Saharan Africa and Asia are dependent on livestock for some part of their livelihoods,[7] there is need to improve animal productivity in developing countries. Livestock systems can place pressure on the environment, while environmental stress and change has important implications for small-scale producers. There is little doubt that when crops and livestock directly compete for the same resources, it is usually more efficient for humans to consume grain than it is to feed the grain to livestock and consume meat. However, in most traditional farming systems, livestock consume little grain. Let's consider several roles of livestock and some of the factors leading to change in livestock production systems.

Buffers and Extenders of the Food Supply

Farm animals provide a special protection to farm families, acting as a buffer between the family and a precarious food supply. Animals are

[5] See Steven Haggblade, Peter Hazell, and Thomas Reardon, Strategies for Stimulating Poverty-Alleviating Growth in the Rural Nonfarm Economy in Developing Countries, *EPTD Discussion Paper No. 93*, International Food Policy Research Institute, 2002.

[6] See Nurul Islam, "The Nonfarm Sector and Rural Development: Review of Issues and Evidence," *2020 Discussion Paper Number 22*, International Food Policy Research Institute, 1997.

[7] D. Thomas and D. Rangnekar, "Responding to the increasing global demand for animal products: implications for the livelihoods of livestock producers in developing countries," in *Responding to the Livestock Revolution: The Role of Globalisation and Implications for Poverty Alleviation*, ed. E. Owen, T. Smith, M. A. Steele, S. Anderson, A. J. Duncan, M. Herrero, J. D. Leaver, C. K. Reynolds, I. Richards, J. C. Ku-Vera, British Society of Animal Science Publication 33, Nottingham University Press, 2004.

A cow is a type of savings bank in Kenya.

like a savings bank and an insurance plan. Farmers can invest in them, they grow, and they can be consumed or sold during crop failures. In most traditional agriculture, livestock do not directly compete with crops because they eat crop residues, feed off steep slopes and poor soils, and consume materials, which "extend" the food supply. Many are ruminants (e.g., cattle, goats, sheep, and buffalo) eating grass and other forages that humans cannot and converting them to products for human consumption. Livestock also make important contributions to the quality of the diet by providing meat, milk, and eggs. Small amounts of these high-protein, nutrient-rich foods can have a significant impact on human health.

Sources of Fertilizer, Fuel, Hides, and Hair

Animal manure is vitally important as a source of fertilizer and fuel in many countries. For example, in the remote hills of Nepal, it is difficult to obtain chemical fertilizer. Animal manure increases soil fertility and adds organic matter. In countries where wood is scarce, animal dung is dried and burned for fuel. Often, these two uses of animal manure compete. Dung that is burned cannot be used to increase soil fertility. In India and other countries, methane digesters have been developed, and the gas produced is used for cooking, and the residual nitrogen applied to crops.

Few livestock products are wasted in traditional society. Clothing and blankets are made from animal hides and hair of not only cattle and sheep, but buffalo, goats, and other livestock.

Providers of Power and Transport

In many countries, livestock are the principal source of power. They plow the fields, transport products to market, and are used in processing tasks like grinding sugarcane. Tractors are still relatively rare in many developing countries. The large investments needed to purchase tractors make them prohibitively expensive for traditional farmers. And, on the steep slopes and rough terrain in parts of some developing countries, it will be many years, if ever, before mechanical power replaces animal power.

Social and Cultural Symbols

Livestock, particularly cattle and goats, are highly valued in some societies for social and cultural reasons. A family's social status may be measured by the number of animals it owns.[8] Cattle are given as gifts during ceremonial occasions. While livestock serve major economic functions, they serve these other social and cultural functions as well.

Changes in Livestock Systems

Rapid urbanization and growing incomes in many developing countries have been associated with increased demands for animal proteins as a food source, a phenomenon that has been named the livestock revolution.[9] Growing demand has raised meat prices and put pressure on global livestock systems.[10] While much of this demand will be met by industrial producers, traditional farmers can play a role. This role is probably strongest in the dairy sector as cheese can be produced on a small scale. Traditional farmers, particularly those with access to grazing land, can also benefit from increased prices of cattle and other ruminants.

An additional strain on livestock systems comes from climate change, which is discussed in more detail in Chapter 9. Although impacts of climate change will vary by location, it is likely that substantial

[8] In nomadic societies where no individual family owns the land, animal ownership is almost the only criterion available for measuring social status.

[9] C. Delgado, M. Rosegrant, H. Steinfeld, S. Ehui, and C. Courbois, "Livestock to 2020: the next food revolution," Food, Agriculture and the Environment Discussion Paper 28, IFPRI/FAO/ILRI, Washington, D.C., USA, 1999.

[10] Scientists at the International Livestock Research Institute (ILRI) have identified three main livestock systems: agro-pastoral and pastoral systems where natural resources are constrained and people adopt strategies to meet these constraints, smallholder crop-livestock systems where natural resources may be managed to improve productivity, and highly intensive industrial livestock systems.

Farmer plowing with bullock in Thailand.

temperature increases will occur in many areas, with especially harsh consequences on tropical drylands, where livestock grazing predominates. Feed resources in these areas will decline along with water availability, while increased temperatures will increase livestock consumption of already scarce water.

A final challenge to livestock systems is related to their adverse impacts on the environment. As noted, livestock often feed on steeply sloped and low-productivity lands. As a result, they contribute to loss of soil cover, soil erosion, and nutrient-laden run-off that pollutes surface water. For example, in many areas of Central America water quality issues are tied to livestock grazing on fragile lands; ground cover is being lost and erosion leads to siltation and bacterial pollution in rivers. It is critically important that all these challenges to traditional livestock producers be met through research and policy changes that increase productivity and reduce the pressure on fragile environments.

IMPLICATION of TRADITIONAL FARMS for AGRICULTURAL DEVELOPMENT

Despite the common features described above, one of the striking characteristics of farms in developing countries is their diversity. How land is organized and controlled within farms, gender roles, ties to formal markets, use of mechanical or animal traction, institutional relation-

ships with respect to water rights and access to irrigation, and many other factors differ markedly across regions and sometimes within countries. Farms in much of Sub-Saharan Africa are still quite traditional, whereas farms in many parts of Asia and the Pacific have begun to intensify and modernize. In the next chapter, we discuss factors that cause livelihood strategies and farming systems to change over time.

Traditional farms are efficient but poor. As population grows and less land is available per farmer, poverty increases unless agriculture changes; as noted in Chapter 5, unless agricultural productivity growth outstrips population growth, rural poverty will increase over time. But change brings additional risks and the danger of increasing income disparities. The distribution of income generated through new plant varieties or power tillers can be affected by asset distribution patterns and institutions that govern the rules of behavior in society. Risks must be managed, and institutions that substitute for the historical sharing arrangements must be created. Improved transportation systems are needed to improve information flows and build market linkages.

Several Asian countries face a need to alter their farming systems and to diversify out of rice. While rice will remain the dominant agricultural commodity, vegetable and livestock production become increasingly attractive because of changing consumer demands as incomes grow. Additional education and non-farm employment opportunities become important elements in an overall development strategy. Otherwise the law of diminishing returns will doom traditional farmers to poverty for the foreseeable future. African farmers face problems of low soil fertility, lack of access to markets, and low opportunity costs of time.

As incomes grow in many developing regions, consumer demands change and the global economy will respond to these changes in demand. Growth in meat and milk demand will put pressure on traditional livestock grazing systems, and policies may be needed to smooth the transition to more commercially oriented confinement and open-access grazing systems. Without such policies, market-based pressures may lead to social dislocation and environmental degradation in livestock-producing areas.

SUMMARY

Traditional agriculture is diverse, but traditional farms have some common characteristics. Traditional agriculture is generally characterized by small farms, with intertwined farm and family decisions. Traditional farm families consume, sell, or trade most of their products locally. Their labor use and land area per farm are small, but labor input per hectare

Traditional farmers in Bangladesh.

is high. Hired labor is often important. These product and labor sales and purchases mean that farmers are, in general, closely linked to the local economy and respond to market signals. Productivity and use of purchased inputs are low but efficiency is relatively high. Traditional farmers are rational but risk averse. They often live in extended or joint families. Livestock play many roles, including extending the food supply; providing a buffer against poor harvests; improving the quality of the diet; generating fertilizer, fuel, hides, and hair. They also provide power and transport and meet social and cultural needs. Traditional farms differ by region, and as farms change some people, particularly the landless, may be left behind unless new technologies are accompanied by improved institutions and education.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Asset distribution pattern
Biological technologies
Buffers and extenders
Diversification
Intermixing of farm and family decisions
Joint and extended families
Landless labor
Livelihoods
Mixed cropping
Off-farm employment
Poor but efficient
Rational but cautious
Role of livestock
Seasonality
Semi-subsistence farms
Traditional agriculture

Looking Ahead

A wide variety of agricultural systems are found in the world. These systems evolve over time. In the next chapter we examine the factors that influence the type of farming systems found in a particular country at a point in time. The importance of technical, human, institutional, and political factors is discussed. Several common types of agricultural systems are described, and the significant roles of women and children are highlighted.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1 Why might traditional farms be fairly conservative or slow to change from current practices?
2 Are traditional farms subsistence farms? What is meant by "subsistence?"
3 Why are livestock important in many traditional farming systems?
4 Distinguish between productivity and efficiency. Why do traditional farms tend to have high levels of efficiency? Why do they tend to have low or high levels of productivity?
5 What factors influence resource allocation on traditional farms? If a farmer fails to adopt a new, apparently more profitable, farming practice, is he or she irrational?
6 If traditional farmers use resources efficiently, why should we be concerned with raising productivity by increasing the use of new technologies?
7 Are the farmers who own 1 to 3 hectares the poorest people in rural communities in developing countries?
8 Why are joint and extended families still important in many developing countries?
9 Why are farm and household decisions often inseparably linked in developing countries?
10 Why are institutional changes often as important as technological changes for agricultural development?
11 Why do farmers practice mixed cropping? Are agricultural diversification and mixed cropping synonymous?
12 Why is hired labor often important in traditional or semi-subsistence agriculture?
13 Why are new biological technologies often more important than new mechanical technologies for fostering agricultural development?
14 Why is agricultural diversification becoming increasingly important in many Asian countries?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Dixon, John, and Aidan Gulliver with David Gibbon, *Farming systems and poverty: improving farmers' livelihoods in a changing world* (Rome and Washington, D.C.: FAO and the World Bank, 2001).

Ellis, F. *Rural Livelihoods and Diversity in Developing Countries* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2000).

Hayami, Yujiro, *Anatomy of a Peasant Economy: A Rice Village in the Philippines* (Los Banos, Laguna, Philippines; International Rice Research Institute, 1978).

Hopper, W. David, "Allocation Efficiency in a Traditional Indian Agriculture," *Journal of Farm Economics,* vol. 47 (1965), pp. 611–25.

Norman, David W., "Economic Rationality of Traditional Hausa Dryland Farmers in the North of Nigeria," in Robert D. Stevens, ed., *Tradition and Dynamics in Small-Farm Agriculture* (Ames: Iowa State University Press, 1977).

Schultz, Theodore W., *Transforming Traditional Agriculture* (New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1964).

Siegel, Paul, and Jeffrey Alwang, *An Asset Based Approach to Social Risk Management*. SP Discussion Series 9926, Human Development Network, Social Protection Unit, the World Bank, Washington, October 1999.

Skjonsberg, Else, *Change in an African Village: Kefa Speaks* (West Hartford, Conn: Kumarian Press, 1989).

Wolgin, J. M., "Resource Allocation and Risk: A Case Study of Smallholder Agriculture in Kenya," *American Journal of Agricultural Economics*, vol. 54 (1975), pp. 622–30.

CHAPTER 8

Agricultural Systems and Their Determinants

> The agricultural pattern that has emerged in each area is in part the result of ecological factors—a particular combination of climate and soil—and in part the result of economic and cultural factors in the society that grows the crops. — Robert S. Loomis[1]

This Chapter

1 Identifies factors that influence the agricultural systems found in a particular country at a point in time
2 Explores the differences in farming systems found in various parts of the world
3 Presents economic concepts that help explain input and output choices in farming systems

MAJOR DETERMINANTS of FARMING SYSTEMS

Farming systems in each region of the world show considerable variety, and are differentiated by how production is organized, by the nature of technologies employed, and by the types of crops and livestock produced. Each system consists of a small number of dominant crops (or livestock) and numerous minor crops (or livestock). We must understand agricultural systems if we are to improve them; therefore let's examine the primary determinants of the prevailing systems before classifying and describing them.

Technical, institutional, and human factors affect the type of agricultural system that predominates in a region. These factors interact at each location and point in time to provide a unique environment for agricultural production (see Figure 8-1). When these factors remain constant for several years, the farming system that evolves represents a long-term adaptation to that environment. Different farming systems

[1] Robert S. Loomis, "Agricultural Systems," *Scientific American*, September 1976, p. 69.

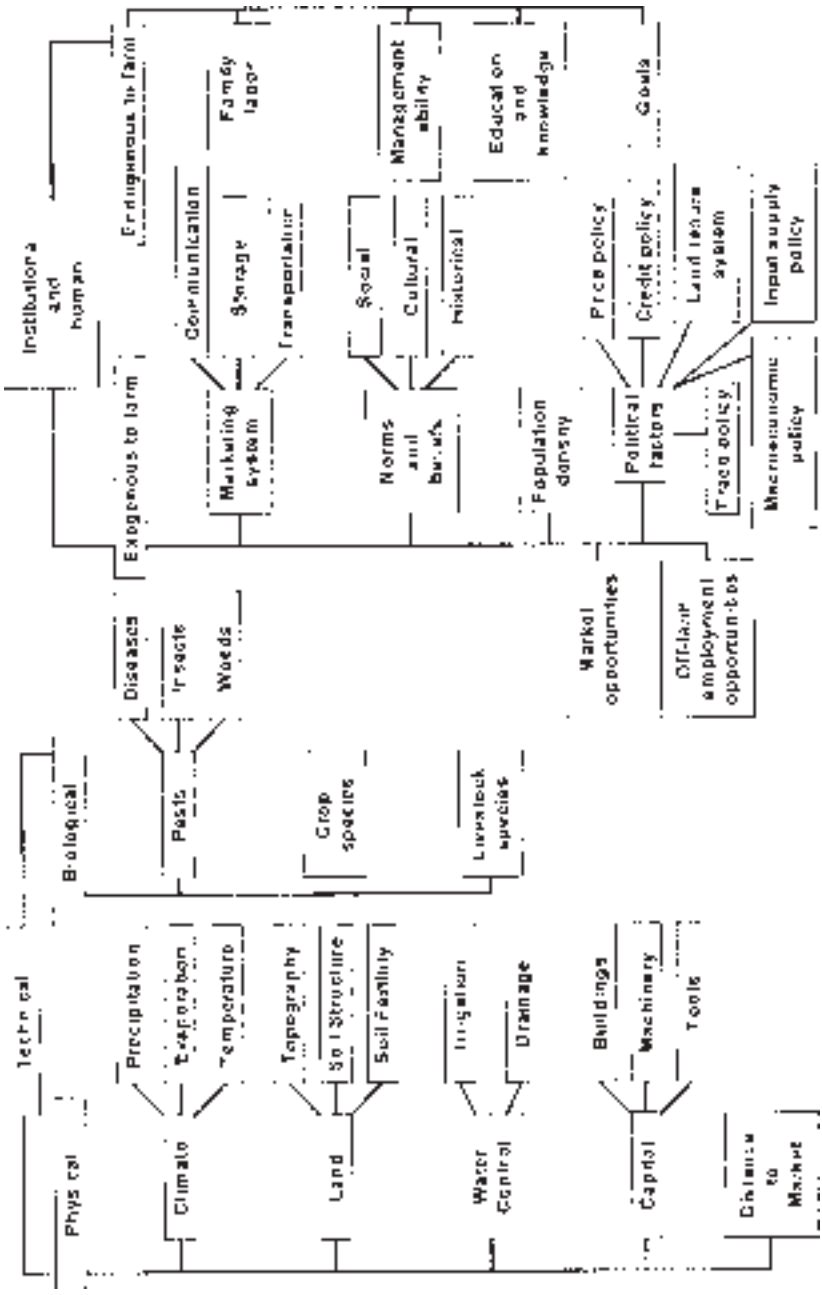


Figure 8-1. Major determinants of the farming system at a point in time.

have different needs for public support such as infrastructure, legal systems, market-related rules and norms. They also have different impacts on the natural environment. Economic development can introduce rapid changes in underlying factors, thus placing pressure on a system.

Technical Determinants of Farming Systems

Technical elements, including both physical and biological factors, help determine the potential types of crop and livestock systems. Physical factors — including climate, land, water access, capital items, and distance to markets — are unique to each location; although water access and other capital items can be altered through investments and new technologies. Similarly, investments in roads alter the relationship between physical distance and travel time. For example, the nomadism, discussed below, that prevails in many arid regions of the world, represents an adaptation to harsh climates. However, the introduction of wells has encouraged more settled farming or ranching in parts of nomadic areas. Global climate change is likely to have a profound effect on farming systems, and we are already seeing adjustments to agricultural practices as weather patterns and temperatures change.

Biological factors including pests and crop and livestock varieties are even more susceptible to modification. In the short-run, however, these factors play a major role in defining the prevailing agricultural system. The existence of the tsetse fly in areas of the African humid tropics has created farming systems that are dramatically different from those in similar climates where the fly does not exist. Animal traction is not an option in areas where the tsetse fly is common. Technologies to control the fly can help spread animal traction and alter traditional farming relations.

Institutional and Human Determinants of Farming Systems

Institutional and human elements influencing farming systems are characterized by both exogenous (externally controlled) and endogenous (internally controlled) factors. Factors largely outside the control of individual farmers include social and cultural norms and beliefs, historical factors, population density, market opportunities and marketing systems, and off-farm employment opportunities. For example, high population densities in many South Asian countries are partly responsible for the very different farming systems there as compared to the systems found in the relatively low-density areas of sub-Saharan Africa and Southeast Asia.

Politically determined institutions such as pricing policies, credit policies, macroeconomic policies, trade policies, and land-tenure systems affect the farming system. Land ownership is highly skewed in many countries. In areas of Central America, for example, large commercial farms and plantations exist alongside small peasant subsistence and semi-subsistence farms. The farming practices used in these areas are significantly influenced by the distribution of land; plantations rely on landless and small holding workers as suppliers of labor and the laborers mix off-farm incomes with food crops grown on their own holdings. These small holders adopt diversified livelihood strategies within the overall context of their farming system. The prevailing patterns of land uses, crops produced, and technologies on different-size farms is clearly affected by the distribution of land holdings. In many areas of the world, people have only use-rights over the land they farm. In much of Africa, for example, families are given land to farm but they cannot rent or sell it to others, and cannot use it as collateral for credit. Such land-use institutions influence incentives for investments in land improvements, which, in turn, influence the prevailing farming system. The political system itself may dictate collectives, communes, or private property as the primary means of organizing land use in agriculture.

Endogenous or farmer-controlled determinants of agricultural systems include family labor, management ability, education, knowledge, as well as the goals for which farmers are striving. Investments in education affect the value of time used on and off the farm, and as educational levels change, farming systems change in response. The risk associated with agricultural production, particularly in arid, rain-fed regions, has forced farmers to adapt their practices to ensure survival. These adaptations are determined, in part, by the farmers' degree of risk aversion, which is affected by income, education, etc. Any of these exogenous or endogenous factors can change over time. New technologies and population growth are two particularly important determinants of how and in what direction agricultural systems change over time.

MAJOR TYPES of FARMING SYSTEMS

While the specific type of farming system in use depends on a large number of factors (see Figure 8-1), many years ago Duckham and Masefield grouped farming systems into three basic types: shifting

cultivation, pastoral nomadism, and settled agriculture (Fig. 8-2).[2] Settled agriculture includes many subtypes. Let's briefly examine each of these systems.

Shifting Cultivation

Shifting cultivation is an old form of agriculture still practiced in many parts of the world. As the name implies, it involves shifting to a new piece of land when the fertility of the original patch runs out or when weeds and other pests take over. The movement may be fast or slow, and animal manure may extend the use of one location. Migration from one piece of land to another may be random, linear, or cyclic. When cyclic, the rotation frequency can last as long as 30 to 45 years.

Shifting cultivation also has been called *slash and burn* because usually new areas are cleared by slashing the brush with a machete and burning it to clear the fields and release nutrients into the soil. Capital investment in the farm is low, with machetes, digging sticks, and hoes being the primary tools. Typical crops include corn, millet and sorghum, rice, and roots. Usually the crops are mixed. Shifting cultivation is still practiced on about 15 percent of the world's exploitable soils, particularly in Africa and Latin America. It is popular where population pressures are not too severe.

Shifting cultivation is frequently associated with insecure control over the land, either because of absentee, government, or unclear ownership status. It has been linked to soil erosion and other environmental problems in several developing countries, partly because there are few incentives to invest in practices that maintain soil fertility.

Pastoral Nomadism

Pastoral nomadism involves people who travel, more or less continuously, with herds of livestock. Pastoral nomads have no established farms, but often follow well-established routes from one grazing area to another. Although probably only about 15 million pastoral nomads are found in the whole world, they move through an area almost as large as the entire cultivated area in the world. They are especially prevalent in the arid and semi-arid tropics. Some examples include the Masai of Kenya and Tanzania, the Hima of Uganda, the Fulani of West Africa, the Bedouin of the Eastern Mediterranean, and the nomads of Mongolia.

[2] See Alec N. Duckham and G. B. Masefield, *Farming systems of the World* (London: Chatto and Windus, 1970). Substantial variation is observed within these highly stylized farming system typologies.

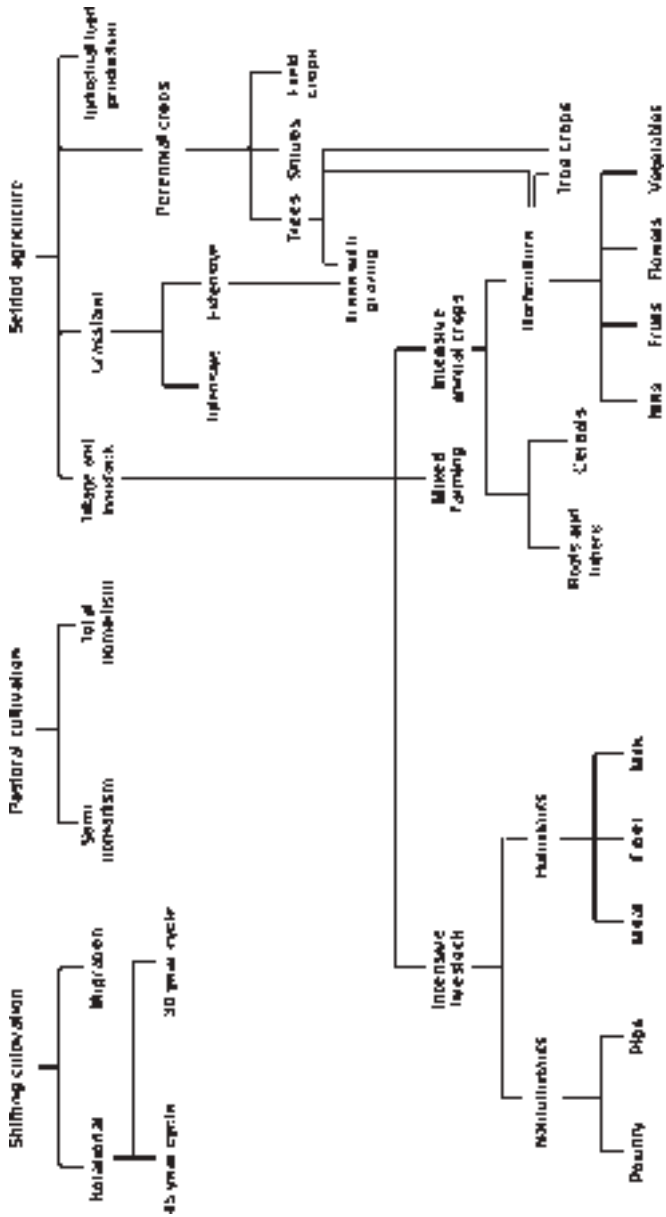


Figure 8-2: Example of a classification of world farming systems.

Nomads are common in the northern half of Africa
(photo: Mesfin Bezuneh).

Pastoral nomadism can be total or partial. In the latter case, the nomads have homes and some cultivation for part of the year. Typically five or six families travel together with 25 to 60 goats and sheep or 10 to 25 camels. Sometimes they own cattle as well. The livestock eat natural pasture and their productivity is low.

Pastoral nomadism is associated with a variety of problems. Because grazing takes place on common land, there is a tendency for overgrazing because every individual farmer wishes to maximize his or her number of animals. As the animal population increases, grazing areas deteriorate and incomes shrink. This problem is known as the "Tragedy of the Commons," and ample evidence shows that traditional management systems have evolved in response to it. Little scope for technical improvement exists in pastoral nomadic systems, and serious problems arise in years of drought. As the human population grows, additional pressures are placed on the resource base supporting the nomadic system. Global climate change presents an especially acute problem for pastoral nomad systems. Increases in temperatures will reduce pasture productivity and increase demand for water, and both factors will lower productivity. Accelerating desertification will result and will further lower productivity.

Settled Agriculture

Settled agriculture includes a variety of agricultural systems such as mixed farming systems, intensive annual crops, intensive and extensive

livestock systems, and perennial crops. The dominant farming systems result from an enormous amount of human experimentation. The systems we see most often produce a relatively high and certain return in storable products per unit of effort. They have spread from farmer to farmer, replacing other settled systems that are far less productive.

Mixed farming usually involves a mixture of crops and livestock. Few farming systems in developing countries consist of just one commodity. However, what is meant by mixed farming is the integration of crops and livestock production. As mentioned in Chapter 7, mixed farming is common in traditional agriculture because it produces relatively high returns while helping to manage risk, makes efficient use of labor and land, and helps maintain soil fertility.

Intensive annual crops are extremely important in the world. About 70 percent of the cultivated area of the world is planted to the major grain crops, which include wheat, rice, and corn. Other important annual crops are barley, millet, sorghum, roots, tubers, vegetables, and pulses (such as beans, peas, and peanuts).

Perennial crops are grown and harvested over several years and include crops such as cocoa, coffee, bananas, and sugarcane. Some are grown in large plantations but often on very small farms as well, even in the same country. On small-scale farms, perennial crops are often *interplanted* with annual crops such as corn and beans. Perennial crops tend to be high-valued and are frequently exported. They also can help prevent soil erosion and preserve biodiversity in ecologically fragile areas.

Intensive livestock systems include both *ruminants* (for example, cattle, buffalo, sheep, and goats) that produce milk, meat, fiber, dung, and other products, and *non-ruminants* (for example, pigs and poultry) that are particularly important for their meat and eggs. These animals are often fed grains in addition to pasture and forage. In a few countries, intensive livestock systems involve carefully managed grasslands or pasture.

Extensive livestock systems include a variety of grazing systems on semi-arid range, high and cool mountain pastures, wet lowlands, and more. Livestock may graze on leaves as well as grass.

In summary, a large number of crop and livestock systems exist, many of which have been relatively productive or at least well suited to their environment. As population expands and other conditions change, a particular system may no longer be adequate and is forced to change (see Box 8-1). Few systems are static for very long today, and several offer potential for improved productivity.

BOX 8-1.
POPULATION DENSITY AND AGRICULTURAL SYSTEMS

The intensity of land utilization varies worldwide, and there is a close relationship between this intensity and the density of population in a particular region. Boserup hypothesized that pressure from increasing population has caused a shift in recent decades from more extensive to more intensive systems. This classification scheme traces a continuum from shifting cultivation to settled agriculture:

1 Forest fallow cultivation: one- to two-year planting of plots followed by a 20- to 25-year fallow period.
2 Bush fallow cultivation: 6- to 10-year fallow period. Periods of uninterrupted cultivation may be as short as 1 to 2 years, or as long as 5 to 6 years.
3 Short fallow cultivation: fallow lasts one or a couple of years.
4 Annual cropping: land is left uncultivated only between the harvest of one crop and the sowing of the next.
5 Multi-cropping: the most intensive system of land use; the land bears two or more successive crops every year.

Boserup hypothesized that increased population densities put pressure on food production systems to increase outputs. Successively more intensive systems require increased labor inputs for weeding and cultivation, and more varied farming implements. In forest fallow cultivation, only an axe is needed, and as the fallow period is shortened, implements such as hoes, plows, and even irrigation systems are used.

Different patterns of land use exist within similar agro-climatic zones. For example, the land used for intensive cultivation in parts of Nigeria is remarkably similar to the land used for long fallow cultivation in the same country. Thus, Boserup concluded that humans not only adapt to the climatic conditions they face, but actually change the relationship between the conditions and agricultural output by using methods that enhance soil fertility. These adaptations are mostly influenced by rates of population growth.

Source: Ester Boserup, *The Conditions of Agricultural Growth* (London: Allen and Unwin, 1965), especially Chapter 1, pp. 15-22.

The Influence of the Political System

In Fig. 8-1, political factors were listed as significant determinants of farming systems, including land tenure systems. The political system can dictate how property rights are allocated, including collective, commune, and other types of land tenure arrangements. When systems such as collectives and communes restrict individual farmers' responsibilities

and rights to manage farm resources in response to market signals, the result has usually been inefficiency and waste of those resources. Political systems that allow independent family farms to operate in competitive markets have generally yielded higher productivity levels and faster growth rates over time. A particularly important example of this is the reform of communist China's collective land tenure system.

Beginning in 1979, China allowed individual farmers to respond more freely to market incentives and since then has experienced significant increases in agricultural production (see Box 8-2). Adoption of new technologies and use of purchased inputs such as fertilizer have increased substantially. These changes have occurred rapidly in China, causing important changes in world markets. Remember that China has more than 13 billion people. Agricultural growth in China has, over time, stimulated broad-based increases in income, and this income growth will have profound implications for food markets, such as increased demands for animal proteins. A challenge for the world food system is to make adjustments to meet these emerging demands.

Government policies other than rules governing land tenure also affect farming systems. Price policies that favor certain products over others or promote the use of different inputs can have a strong impact on the types of crops planted, on how long they are grown, and even on the degree to which traditional farmers interact with markets. Policies affecting the value of the land create incentives for more or less investments in land. For instance, policies that discriminate against agriculture, such as export taxes, are quickly reflected in lower values of agricultural land. Population and family planning programs can affect population densities, which influence the nature of the agricultural system.

In summary, the major types of farming systems in the world include shifting cultivation, pastoral nomadism, and several types of settled agriculture. These systems, particularly settled agriculture, can be affected in a major way by the political system in the country, which dictates private or public control over land use. Other government policies influence agricultural systems both directly and indirectly.

ECONOMIC DETERMINANTS of INPUT USE and CROP and LIVESTOCK MIX

As noted above, policies can influence the evolution of farming systems by changing relative prices of inputs and outputs. Let's examine more carefully how economic factors affect the choice of inputs and, more broadly, the type of farming system. In Chapter 5 we introduced the concept of an *isoquant* to illustrate that the same level of output can

BOX 8-2.
CHINESE AGRICULTURAL SYSTEMS

In rural areas of China prior to 1979, the agricultural production system was organized according to guidelines established in the national agricultural plan. Farming operations were organized into collective teams of 20 to 30 households; these teams were required to sell fixed quantities of output to the government at set prices. Quantities produced in excess of the quotas were also surrendered to the government. The collectives had some freedom to adjust inputs, but the acreage planted to each crop was determined by government planners.

This rigid system led to stagnation in agricultural output. Between 1957 and 1978, per-capita grain production grew at a 0.3 percent annual rate, while soybean and cotton production per capita *declined*, respectively, by 3.0 and 0.6 percent annually. In 1978, rural incomes were virtually identical to levels of 20 years earlier. This poor performance of the agricultural sector had important implications in a country where 80 percent of the population resides in rural areas.

In 1978, the government decided to introduce the *Household Responsibility System*, which restored individual households as the basic unit of farm operation. Under this system, a household leases a plot of land from the collective, and, after fulfilling a state-set grain procurement quota, can retain additional output. This output can be consumed or sold to the government. The households have flexibility to determine acreage for individual crops. At the same time, the government prices of agricultural commodities were increased, and the prices paid for above-quota grain production were increased substantially above quota prices. Agricultural output began to grow rapidly following these reforms, and agricultural growth averaged 6% per year from 1978–2003. These reforms led to a wholesale change in the Chinese agricultural system; by 1983 over 97 percent of the collective teams in China had been converted to the new system.

Sources: Justin Y. Lin, "The Household Responsibility System Reform and the Adoption of Hybrid Rice in China," *Journal of Development Economics,* vol. 36 (2), 1991, pp. 353–73; Ehou Junhua, "Economic Reform: Price Readjustment (1978–87)," *Chinese Economic Studies*, vol. 24 (3), Spring 1991, pp. 6–26.

be produced with more than one combination of two inputs. The concept of *allocative efficiency* relates to how well farmers choose the correct amounts of inputs to apply and outputs to produce given the available technology, assuming they are trying to maximize profits. While farm and family decisions are inter-mingled, their success and even survival depends in part on how efficiently they allocate their productive assets.

Efficient farmers are able to combine inputs in a way that reflects their relative prices. Efficient farmers also choose the most profitable output levels. The farming systems described in this chapter vary in terms of intensity of input use and productivity, but they all represent long-term adjustments to prevailing conditions. As a result, we can conclude that they are efficient. As relative scarcity (and hence prices) of inputs and outputs change, these efficient producers will make adjustments to input mixes and amounts of output.

In Figure 8-3, the curved isoquant represents the combinations of labor and animal power that can be used to produce a specific amount of output, with a given level of all other inputs; for example, two tons of corn on one acre of land. We expect all farmers to produce somewhere along this curve. Production to the right or above the curve would use more inputs than needed, and would be technically inefficient. Production to the left or below the curve is technically impossible, given the other resources and technology available to the farmer. The slope of the isoquant is known as the *Marginal Rate of Technical Substitution* (MRTS) between the two inputs. In this case, the isoquant's slope is the additional animal time needed to save one hour of labor time. We expect farmers to adjust their use of animals and labor until the value of that labor time just equals the cost of adding animal time. In terms of the graph, we expect farmers to adjust until the slope of the isoquant

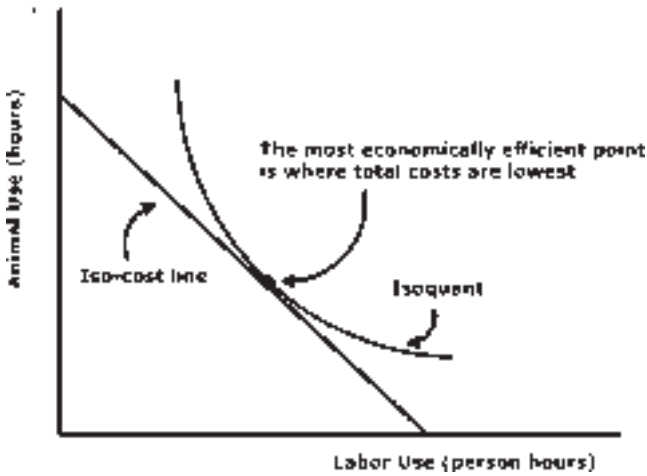


Figure 8-3: Input efficiency given relative input scarcity.

just equals the price of labor relative to the price of animal power. That ratio is the slope of the relative price line, also called an iso-cost line because it traces a line of constant total cost. The economically efficient input combination is the point where the isoquant and the isocost curves are tangent or where the MRTS equals the input price ratio. If the price of labor goes down relative to the price of animal power, the isocost line would become flatter, tangency would occur at a point farther down the isoquant, and more labor and less animal power would be used. Thus, the drive to be efficient leads to changes in input mixes and, over time, this drive can alter the farming system. As an example, compare differences in farming systems between Africa, where labor is relatively scarce and land is relatively abundant, and South Asia, where labor is relatively abundant and land relatively scarce.

Similar trade-offs occur between different kinds of output. In Figure 8-4, the curved line represents the *production possibilities frontier (PPF)* or the combinations of corn and beans that can be produced with available resources. As with Figure 8-3, we expect farmers to produce somewhere along this curve. Production inside the curve would generate less output than is possible, and so be technically inefficient. Production outside the curve would be technically impossible, given these resources and the technology. The slope of the PPF is known as the *Marginal Rate of Transformation* (MRT). In this case, that slope is the amount of additional corn that can be produced with one less unit of beans. Again, the allocatively efficient combination of outputs depends on the relative prices of these two outputs. For example, if the price of beans rises relative to the price of corn, the iso-revenue line becomes steeper and it pays to shift more resources into producing beans and away from corn.

Input and output combinations observed in farming systems around the world are heavily influenced by technologies, resource bases, and relative prices. Farmers allocate resources to maximize their families' well-being, taking into account expected costs and revenues. Economic profitability is just one factor they consider in their decision-making, but usually an important one.

SUMMARY

Farming systems in the world exhibit considerable variability. Both technical and human factors determine the types of farming systems. Technical factors include both physical and biological factors. Institutional and human factors are characterized by both externally and internally controlled forces. The major farming systems of the world can be grouped into three classes; shifting cultivation, pastoral nomadism, and

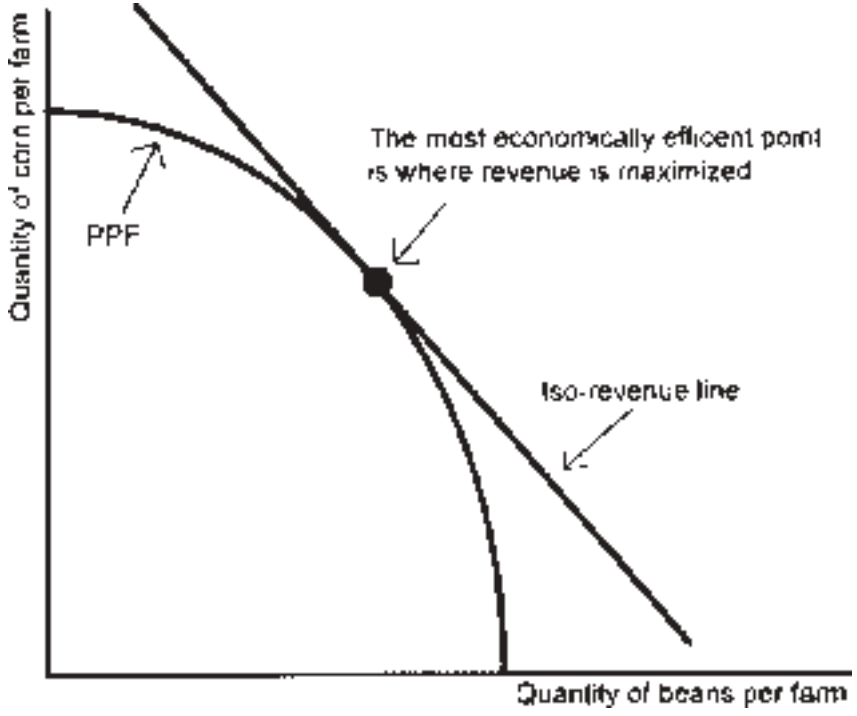


Figure 8-4: Output efficiency, given the technology and resource base.

settled agriculture. Settled agriculture represents a variety of agricultural systems including mixed farming systems, intensive annual crops, intensive and extensive livestock systems, and perennial crops.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Farming systems
Human determinants of farming systems
Intensive annual crops
Iso-costs and iso-revenues
Mixed farming system
Pastoral nomadism
Perennial crops
Political determinants of farming systems
Production possibility frontier
Settled agriculture
Technical determinants of farming systems

Looking Ahead

In this chapter, we briefly examined the nature and diversity of existing agricultural systems in developing countries and determinants of farming systems. In the next chapter, we focus on environmental or natural resource problems that can influence the ability of a farming system to improve and achieve sustainable development.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1 What are the major technical determinants of farming systems?
2 Describe the major human determinants of farming systems. Be sure to distinguish exogenous from endogenous factors.
3 How might the political system affect the nature of the farming system?
4 What is shifting cultivation and why is it more commonly found in Africa and Latin America than in Asia?
5 What is pastoral nomadism and what problems might be present in this type of system?
6 Distinguish among the major types of settled agriculture.
7 How do the optimal quantities of inputs and outputs change as iso-cost and iso-revenue lines become flatter, and why?
8 In what sense is the Boserup argument, presented in Box 8-1, consistent with the discussion of economic determinants of input use and output choice?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Duckham, Alec N., and G. B. Masefield, *Farming Systems of the World* (London: Chatto and Windus, 1970).

Lin, Justin, "Agricultural Development in China", Chapter 31 in Carl K. Eicher and John M. Staatz, eds. *International Agricultural Development* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins, 1998).

Ruthernberg, Hans, *Farming Systems in the Tropics* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1980).

CHAPTER 9

Resource Use and Sustainability

> …poverty compels people to extract from the ever shrinking remaining natural resource base, destroying it in the process. In fact, the major characteristic of the environmental problem in developing countries is that land degradation in its many forms presents a clear and immediate threat to the productivity of agricultural and forest resources and therefore to the economic growth of countries that largely depend on them. — Schramm and Warford[1]

THIS CHAPTER

1 Examines the nature of environmental or natural resource problems that influence the sustainability of agricultural development in developing countries
2 Identifies the principal causes of environmental problems in developing countries
3 Discusses some potential solutions to environmental problems in developing countries

NATURE of ENVIRONMENTAL PROBLEMS

Sound management of natural resources is widely recognized as essential for sustainable agricultural and economic development. Yet the effects of environmental degradation and poor natural resource management are increasingly evident throughout the world. The wide-ranging yet often interrelated problems of soil erosion, silting of rivers and reservoirs, flooding, overgrazing, poor cropping practices, desertification, salinity, water-logging, deforestation, energy depletion, climate change,

[1] Gunter Schramm and Jeremy J. Warford, eds., *Environmental Management and Economic Development* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1989), p. 1.

loss of bio-diversity, and chemical pollution of land, water, and air, are increasing problems in many developing countries. The poorest countries tend to be most dependent on their natural resource base and thus have the potential of being the most vulnerable to environmental degradation. These countries find environmental problems particularly difficult to solve because rapid population growth, outmoded institutional relationships, poverty, and a lack of financial resources conspire against solutions. The poorest people within these countries usually suffer the most from environmental degradation.

As agricultural and economic development occur, forces are set in motion, some reducing and others increasing the pressures on the environment. Changes in the rate of population growth, new technologies, social and institutional relationships, the increased value of human time, and shifts in the weight placed on future as opposed to current income all influence the relationship between human activity and the environment. Economic and environmental policies together with other institutional changes can either alleviate or aggravate natural resource problems. The nature of particular types of environmental problems is discussed below, followed by a description of causes and potential solutions.

Global Versus Local Problems

Many environmental problems are local in cause, effect, and potential solution. Others are regional or even global. Problems such as erosion may be local, but also have more widespread implications if soil is deposited in rivers and transported to neighboring regions and countries where the silt raises river levels causing flooding. Others such as deforestation may appear local but can affect the global climate as carbon is released into the atmosphere. Environmental problems affect every nation in the world, can hinder the long run-sustainability of farming systems, and appear to be a growing concern. The following is a brief description of the more serious environmental problems facing developing countries.

Soil Degradation, Erosion, Silting, and Flooding

Topsoil is one of the world's most important natural assets. Farmers frequently invest in trying to improve it through soil fertility amendments and by using soil conservation techniques. But these investments are costly, and the poorest farmers are often unable to borrow money to undertake them and less willing or able to wait for the future benefits they provide. As a result, we observe that the lowest-income farmers often draw down their "soil capital", applying insufficient soil amendments

Farming an erodible hillside in Ecuador.

to fully replenish the nutrients removed at harvest or generated through natural processes. In effect, they are "mining" soil nutrients. The resulting soil degradation is usually reversible, if and when farmers find it profitable to apply more nutrients than plants withdraw.

An irreversible kind of degradation is excessive soil erosion, due to the exposure of soil to wind and water runoff. The extent of the world erosion problem is difficult to assess because few nations have systematically surveyed their soil resources. Nevertheless, the amount of agricultural land being lost due to soil erosion is estimated to be at least 20 million hectares per year.[2] An erosion rate of 50 tons per hectare is common in upland watersheds in many developing countries, whereas soil can regenerate somewhere between 0 and 25 tons per hectare.[3]

A loss of 50 tons per hectare represents only about 3 millimeters from the top of the soil, yet often the gullies and exposed bedrock from uneven erosion scar the landscape. The effects on productivity are potentially serious. Eroded soils typically are at least twice as rich in nutrients and organic matter as the soil left behind. Soil nutrient losses can be partially replaced by use of chemical fertilizers, but only up to a point, and fertilizer can be expensive. At any rate, the yields with

[2] See Norman Meyers, "The Environmental Basis of Sustainable Development, " in Schramm and Warford, eds., *Environmental Management and Economic Development*, p.59.

[3] See Alfredo Sfeirounis, "Soil Conservation in Developing Countries," Western Africa Projects Department, World Bank, Washington, D.C., 1986.

fertilizers are lower than they would be in the absence of erosion, so that erosion reduces productivity below its potential. It is estimated that erosion of good soils in the tropics may be resulting in maize-yield reductions of 10 to 30 percent.[4]

Soils are seriously deteriorating in the hills of the Himalayas, on the steep slopes of the Andes Mountains, in the Yellow River basin in China, in the Central American highlands, in the Central Highlands of Ethiopia, and on densely populated Java. The worst erosion in terms of average soil loss per hectare is found in the crescent from Korea to Turkey, in Eastern Europe and the former Soviet Union, followed by the Central American highlands, and in the Sahel in Africa. Differences are due to the intensity of cultivation on highly erodible soils and availability of soil conservation alternatives.

The indirect or off-site effects of erosion through silting of rivers and reservoirs are perhaps more serious than the on-site effects. When reservoirs fill with sediment, hydroelectric and irrigation storage capacity is lost, cutting short the useful lives of these expensive investments. When rivers silt up, flooding occurs during rainy seasons. For example, soil erosion in the hills of Nepal causes flooding in the plains of Nepal, India, and Bangladesh.[5] Flooding in the Yellow River basin in China is another example.

Desertification

Excluding real deserts, potentially productive drylands cover about one-third of the world's land surface. About one-sixth of the world's population lives in dryland areas that produce cereals, fibers, and animal products. In arid regions with under 300 mm of annual rainfall, vegetation is sparse and nomadic herding of such animals as goats and cattle predominates. In semi-arid regions, with 300 to 600 mm of rain, dryland farmers grow cereals such as wheat, sorghum, and millet in more

[4] See Meyers, The Environmental Basis of Sustainable Development, " in Schramm and Warford, eds., *Environmental Management and Economic Development.*

[5] While flooding is a serious periodic problem in many countries, not all or even most flooding is due to silt. Low-lying countries such as Bangladesh and parts of Egypt, Indonesia, Thailand, Senegal, The Gambia, and Pakistan are particularly vulnerable to flooding due to high river levels during the rainy season and sea surges during storms. About 80 percent of Bangladesh, for example, is a coastal plain or river delta. In l998, approximately two-thirds of this country of 130 million people was flooded. While a certain amount of normal flooding can have a positive effect on agricultural production, excessive flooding results in substantial loss of life from disease as well as drowning

Houses flooded in Dhaka, Bangladesh.

settled agriculture. The semi-arid regions are smaller in area but more densely populated than are arid regions.

The term *desertification* applies to a process occurring in arid and semi-arid regions. Desertification involves the depletion of vegetative cover, exposure of the soil surface to wind and water erosion, and reduction of the soil's organic matter and water-holding capacity. Intensive grazing, particularly during drought years, reduces vegetative cover; the loss of vegetation reduces organic matter in the soil and thus changes soil structure. After a rain, the earth dries out and becomes crusted, reducing the infiltration of future rains. Then, even more vegetation is lost for lack of water, the surface crust is washed or crumbles and blows away, leaving soil that is less fertile and unable to support much plant life.

Cropping, particularly when very intensive and when combined with drought, is another major cause of desertification. If soil organic matter is depleted by intensive farming practices and not replaced, a process similar to that described above occurs. As supplies of firewood dwindle, people use dried manure for fuel rather than fertilizer. As the soil loses its fertility, crop yields fall and wind and water erosion accelerates. Eventually the land may be abandoned.

Moderate desertification may cause a 25 percent loss of productivity while severe desertification can reduce productivity by 50

percent or more. It is estimated that 65 million hectares of productive land in Africa have been abandoned to desert over the last 50 years. Desertification is particularly a problem in the Sahel region of Africa and in parts of the Near East, South Asia, and South America. In terms of people directly affected, approximately 50 to 100 million people are currently dependent on land threatened by desertification. Areas where desertification is a problem also tend to be areas with rainfall that is both low and unpredictable. The ensuing periodic droughts create short-term severe food crises in those areas.

Salinity and Waterlogging

Irrigation, one of the oldest technological advances in agriculture, has played a major role in increasing global food production. However, bringing land under irrigation is costly, and degradation of irrigated land through questionable water management practices is causing some land to lose productivity or be retired from production completely. The major culprits are waterlogging and salinity.

Seepage from unlined canals and heavy watering of fields in areas with inadequate drainage can raise the underlying water table. Almost all water contains some salts. High water tables concentrate salts in the root zones and also starve plants for oxygen, inhibiting growth. Inadequate drainage also contributes to salinization when evaporation of water leaves a layer of salts that accumulate and reduce crop yields. A typical irrigation rate leaves behind about 2 to 5 tons of salt per hectare annually, even if the water supply has a relatively low salt concentration. If not flushed out, salt can accumulate to enormous quantities in a couple of decades.

Estimates are that between one-quarter and one-half of the world's irrigated land is affected by moderate to severe salinization. Some 20 to 25 million hectares are affected in India, 7 to 10 million hectares in China, and 3 to 6 million hectares in Pakistan. Other developing areas severely affected include Afghanistan, the Tigris and Euphrates river basins in Syria and Iraq, Turkey, Egypt, and parts of Mexico.

Deforestation and Energy Depletion

Forests play a vital role in providing food, fuel, medicines, fodder for livestock, and building materials. Tropical forests provide a home for innumerable and diverse plant and animal species. They protect the soil, recycle moisture, represent a sink for atmospheric carbon dioxide, and provide livelihoods for millions of human beings. But forests are being cleared at a rapid rate. During the 1980s, about 15 million hectares of tropical forest were being cleared each year; the rate has fallen

Deforestation has led to soil erosion in Nepal.

somewhat since then, but today somewhere between 5 and 8 million hectares per year are being lost.[6] The earth's forested areas have declined by about one-half in the last century. Deforestation continues at a rapid pace in countries such as Brazil, Indonesia, Mayanmar, Zambia, Tanzania, and Nigeria. These countries account for approximately 60 percent of the World's annual loss of tropical forests.[7]

Deforestation creates environmental problems on land and in the air. Forest clearing degrades soils and increases erosion in tropical watersheds. Soils in tropical forests tend to be fragile and unsuited for cultivation; their fertility is quickly depleted as erosion follows the tree clearing. In semi-arid areas, deforestation contributes to loss of organic matter, increases wind and water erosion, and speeds the rate of desertification. As forests are burned to clear land, carbon dioxide and carbon monoxide are emittedinto the atmosphere, contributing to climate change. It is estimated that more than 20 percent of the net increases to atmospheric carbon comes from deforestation.

[6] Frédéric Achard, Hugh D. Eva, Hans-Jürgen Stibig, Philippe Mayaux, Javier Gallego, Timothy Richards, Jean-Paul Malingreau, "Determination of Deforestation Rates of the World's Humid Tropical Forests," *Science,* 9 August 2002:, vol. 297, no. 5583, pp. 999–1002.

[7] Food and Agricultural Organization of the United Nations. 2006. Global Forest Resources Assessment; Progress toward sustainable forest management. FAO Forestry Paper 147, Rome., 350 pp.

In developing countries, seven out of ten people depend on fuel wood for meeting their major energy (cooking and heating) needs. The FAO estimates that three out of four people who rely on fuel wood are cutting wood faster than it is growing back. When people cannot find fuel wood, they turn to other sources of organic matter such as dung for fuel, thereby depleting soil fertility and aggravating soil erosion and desertification.

Deforestation also threatens the world's biological diversity. Tropical forests cover only 7 percent of the world's landmass, yet they contain more than 50 percent of the plant and animal species.[8] In Madagascar, for example, there were, until recently, 9500 documented plant species and 190,000 animal species, most of them in the island's eastern forest. More than 90 percent of the forest has now been eliminated, along with an estimated 60,000 species.[9]

Climate Change

The Earth's climate is undergoing change. Surface temperatures increased by 1°F during the 20th century, and the 1990s were the hottest decade of the century. Projections of future increases range from 2.5°F to 10.4°F by 2100.[10] Strong consensus now exists among the world's scientists that climate change is evident in shifts in ranges of flora and fauna, earlier onset and lengthening of growing seasons, and major changes in rainfall patterns. Observed changes in abundance of plant and animal and changes in ecosystem compositions have been attributed to climate change. As world temperatures rise, average sea levels also rise, thus threatening coastal lands. Violent storms, monsoons, droughts, floods, and generally increased weather variability are likely. And global climate change could alter disease prevalence and be very hard on certain animal species because their ecosystem may shift while the property-line boundaries of their preserves do not.

While there is some disagreement about the degree to which human activities affect the rate of climate change, it is clear that agricultural systems throughout the globe will feel its effects. Impacts are likely to vary substantially between regions. In higher latitude areas, agricultural productivity is predicted to rise with moderate temperature

[8] See E. O. Wilson, "The Current State of Biological Biodiversity," chapter 1 in E. O. Wilson, ed., *Biodiversity* (Washington, D.C.: National Academy Press, 1988), p. 8.

[9] See Robert Repetto, "Managing Natural Resources for Sustainability," in *Sustainability Issues in Agricultural Development*, ed. Ted J. Davie and Isabelle A. Shirmer (Washington, D.C.: World Bank, 1987), p. 174.

[10] See Tom M. L. Wigley, "The Science of Climate Change," Pew Center on Climate Change Report, 2005.

increases, while sub-Saharan Africa and coastal areas in Asia are likely to feel the strongest adverse effects. Semi-arid and arid areas are particularly vulnerable and will suffer a decrease in water availability, increased likelihood of drought and growing heat stress. In these same areas, groundwater resources are likely to decline so that moisture-related plant stress will lower productivity. Other areas will feel more mixed effects, but overall the most likely outcomes are more variability in weather patterns, including deeper and more prolonged drought, increased temperatures and reduced productivity in rain-fed tropical and sub-tropical agriculture, reductions in access to fresh water, and expanding populations of pests and diseases.

Climate change will affect agricultural productivity, and people will likely respond to it by adjusting their farming techniques and their livelihood strategies. We are only now beginning to understand the degree of adaptation, but evidence shows that people in the most affected areas have already started to change the way they farm and generate their livelihoods. In the short-run, farmers adapt by changing crop mixes, using water conservation measures, and adopting risk-management techniques to lessen the consequences of more frequent droughts. They adjust their livelihood strategies to include more non-climate-affected sources of income. For example, they work off the farm and change their migration strategies.

Over the longer run and as the change in climate increases, more options are needed to create opportunities to adapt. Governments may invest in, and farmers may adopt, technologies and production techniques that reduce the impact of climate change. Agricultural research systems can respond by producing shorter-season seed varieties that are more tolerant of drought, rice varieties that are more tolerant of salinity, and other germplasm that is resistant to environmental stress. Enhanced means of managing soil moisture can be identified through research. Farmers may adopt conservation farming techniques that minimize disruption of the soils and lower exposure to rainfall shortages. Conserving water is a particular concern because it is estimated that 70 percent of freshwater use is currently devoted to agriculture.

It is important to recognize that if the projections of the scientific community are correct, the world is in a race against time. Adaptation will mitigate some of the ill effects of climate change, and some areas will likely prosper following adaptation. But adaptation will not ameliorate the ill effects of climate change in the most adversely affected regions. In low-lying coastal regions and some of the more arid areas, the imperative is to attain improvements in well being over the short- to medium-term. Over the long haul, climate change is likely to alter

the environment to such a degree that no adjustments in livelihood strategies will suffice.

Chemical Pollution

Misuse of chemical pesticides and fertilizers has contaminated the land and water in many developing countries, damaging the health of producers and consumers, stimulating the emergence of pests resistant to pesticides, destroying the natural enemies of pests, and reducing fish populations or rendering them unsafe for human consumption. Acute pesticide poisonings are common, and little is known about potential long-term health effects. Few developing countries have established effective pesticide regulatory and enforcement systems.

Hundreds of pests have become resistant to one or more chemicals, and the number is growing. Fertilizer runoff increases nitrate levels in ponds and canals, reducing oxygen levels and killing fish. Excessive pesticide levels often destroy fish in irrigated rice paddies.

Heavy use of pesticides and fertilizers tends not to hurt agricultural production in the short-run. However, as resistance to pesticides builds up and predators are reduced, future production potentials are jeopardized. And society bears the cost of off-farm pollution.

CAUSES of ENVIRONMENTAL PROBLEMS

Environmental degradation can result from physical, economic, and institutional factors. Many environmental problems are interrelated; for example, deforestation, erosion, and silting of rivers and reservoirs are all linked. Natural resource degradation usually has direct and indirect causes. For example, desertification can directly result from overgrazing and poor cropping practices, but indirectly result from poverty and population growth. Physical or technical causes of natural resource degradation are often the most visible. Land clearing for timber, fuel wood, cattle ranching, or farming causes deforestation. Deforestation results in loss of biodiversity, loss of soil, and diminished soil fertility since soil uncovered in tropical forests loses its fertility quickly. If the forest is burned, carbon dioxide enters the atmosphere. If the area is semi-arid, loss of forests can contribute to desertification. Desertification can also result from overgrazing, which itself is caused by too many cattle eating grass in an area subject to dry spells or droughts. Intensive cropping in semi-arid areas contributes to desertification. Many other examples of physical causes of natural resource degradation can be cited. Salinity and waterlogging result from poorly managed irrigation systems. Chemical pollution results from excessive fertilizer and pesticide use. Silting of rivers and tidal surges during storms cause flooding.

The challenge in solving such problems, however, is in understanding what factors affect individual and group decisions about natural resource use. These factors are both economic and determined by institutions. Institutions include the legal system, cultural norms, market structures, and other rules of behavior affecting decision-making incentives. Once we understand how economic and institutional factors affect decisions about resource use, we can begin to formulate strategies to address the most serious environmental problems.

Economic Causes of Natural Resource Degradation

An important economic cause of natural resource degradation occurs when markets fail to reflect the true value of resources or the true costs of actions. Market failures emerge due to the presence of externalities, high costs of information, and in the provision of public goods. An externality is created when decision-makers impose costs on others without considering these costs when making the decision. Farmers, for example, may create off-farm costs associated with soil erosion or pesticide pollution without considering these external costs (see Box 9-1). Furthermore, a lack of information about or concern for environmental damage creates costs that lead to environmentally destructive behavior. For example, the farmer may be unaware that his farming practices are damaging long-term productivity or that cost-effective practices are readily available to improve the situation. In such cases, the market is failing to adequately transmit information to the farmer. Environmental quality is a public good, which means it is very costly to prohibit someone from benefiting from it and one person's benefiting from it does not preclude another from benefiting from it. It is well known that the free market is associated with an undersupply of public goods. All these forms of market failure contribute to natural resource problems.

Poverty is another economic condition associated with environmental degradation. Poverty drives people to farm marginal lands intensively, to seek fuel wood, and to follow other agricultural practices that produce food at the potential sacrifice of future production. As discussed in Chapter 4, poverty reinforces population growth, which is a major contributor to deforestation, overgrazing, and farming on steep slopes, drylands, and flood plains.

The concern of the poor for the present, implying heavy discounting of future costs and benefits, is matched by the needs of governments in developing countries to deal with internal and external debt problems. Indeed, the existence of debt problems in many countries reflects previous decisions to spend on current consumption rather than save for the future. Governments follow policies that encourage natural

resource-based exports to pay off debts and import capital goods. They lack the financial resources to address environmental problems.

Countries implementing economic development programs usually find high rates of return to many types of capital investment. The high interest rates often characteristic of these cases encourage current consumption and may place demands on natural resources. Interest rates in developing countries are also influenced by interest rates in major developed countries, due to linkages through international financial markets.

Institutional Causes of Natural Resource Degradation

A major cause of environmental degradation is institutional failure, both private and public. Existing social structures and local customs may not be adequate to preserve the environment as economic development proceeds. Or, environmentally constructive social structures and customs may be destroyed by national policies or by increases in the costs of transactions and of acting collectively. In some cases, inadequate institutions are the legacy of colonial interference or the result of more recent international influence.

Market institutions determine how well markets work and, as noted above, market failures are a chief cause of environmental degradation. These market failures mean that the market is not transmitting the true value of the resource to the decision maker. Market failures can be due to inadequately defined property rights, costs associated with monitoring and enforcing property rights, and weak enforcement institutions. It may be unclear, for example, whether the farmer has the right to pollute the water or whether downstream users have the right to clean water. Even if these rights are legally clear, they may be difficult or impossible to enforce. Thus, weak property rights contribute to the market failure.

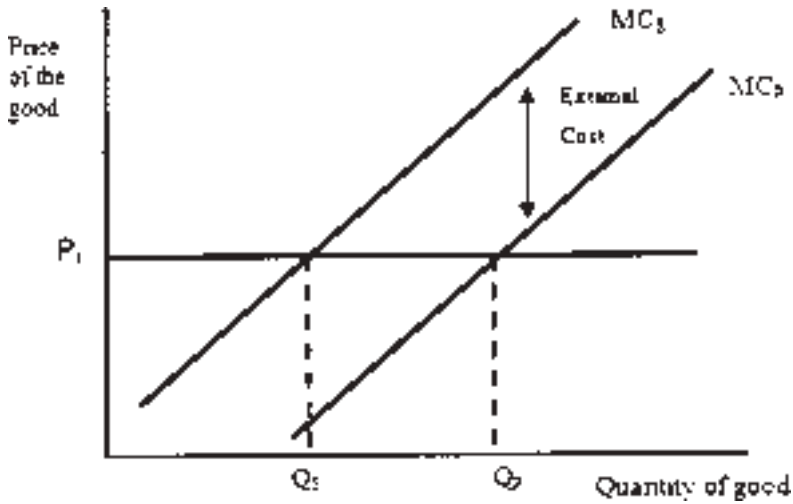
Inadequate property rights in forest, pastures, and ground and surface waters can undermine private or local collective incentives to manage resources on a sustainable basis. In some areas the land or water resource was traditionally held in common. Under a common-property regime, people in the village or community had access to use the resources but did not own or rent them privately. When the local society could maintain authority over the resource, or when population pressures were such that the resource was in abundant supply, then this common property could be managed in a socially optimal manner. However, as population increases and as national policies usurp local authority, breaking down traditions and customs, incentives for resource preservation and traditional means of controlling access often

are destroyed. If one person does not cut down the tree for fuel wood, another will. Or, if one person's goat does not eat the blade of grass, another person's goat will. Or, if one person does not use the water or catch the fish, another will. The result is that incentives exist for each individual to overexploit resources because otherwise someone else will.

Common-property regimes do not necessarily cause resource mismanagement if local institutions create incentives to efficiently manage the resource. In many areas of Africa, common-property institutions were said to cause overgrazing on rangelands. However, attempts by the government to replace these institutions with private ownership

BOX 9-1.
EXTERNALITIES and PRIVATE DECISIONS

One market failure associated with environmental degradation is the divergence between private and social costs of actions. This divergence is caused by the presence of external costs. An external cost exists when an activity by one agent causes loss of welfare to another agent *and* the loss is not considered by the author. The effect of externalities on private decision-making is illustrated in the figure below.



A farmer who cannot influence market prices will produce a good up until the point where the private marginal cost of its production (MC_p) equals the market price. In the figure, this point is shown where $MC_p = P_t$ and Q_p units are produced. An external cost is represented by the social marginal cost curve (MC_s), which exceeds the private cost curve. From society's point of view, the desirable production level is Q_s (where $MC_s = P_t$). Thus, the externality leads to more production of the good than is socially desirable.

schemes were largely counterproductive, contributing to more rapid degradation of resources and leading to increased economic inequality. Efficient indigenous resource management institutions were replaced by less effective but more modern institutions. Common-property institutions can certainly be a viable means of managing resources.[11]

In areas of frontier colonization, poorly defined and inadequately enforced property rights can create incentives for over-exploitation of natural resources. For example, the Peten Region of northern Guatemala is currently undergoing high rates of deforestation, particularly in its western extremities. In the western Peten, the Guatemalan government established the Laguna de Tigre national park in 1990. It was hoped that a national park would slow settlement and lead to conservation of the forest in its original state. However, the government does not have the resources to monitor and discourage settlement on these isolated public lands, and a weak legal system prevents enforcement of laws prohibiting illegal settlement. As a result, illegal settlers are deforesting the lands, while population pressures are growing, water is increasingly scarce, and ecological integrity has been destroyed.

Public policies are another major institutional cause of natural resource degradation. Agricultural pricing policies, input subsidies, and land use policies often discourage sustainable resource use. Governments in developing countries intervene in agricultural markets to keep food prices artificially low. These interventions cause land to be undervalued, reducing incentives for conservation. And, low incomes make the investment required for sustainable output difficult. On the other hand, higher agricultural prices raise the value of land, and, as a result, can contribute to increased deforestation.[12] These competing impacts of agricultural prices on the environment make it important that policy impacts be explored as a part of government decision-making.

Governments frequently subsidize fertilizer and pesticides, in part to compensate for keeping farm product prices low. If fertilizer or pesticide use causes an externality, then subsidies, because they increase input use, will increase the level of the externality. Subsidies may be indirect, in the form of roads or export subsidies that encourage deforestation. Road access is strongly associated with deforestation in all

[11] See Daniel W. Bromley, ed., *Making the Commons Work* (San Francisco: Institute for Contemporary Studies Press, 1992).

[12] See Arild Angelsen and David Kaimowitz, "Rethinking the Causes of Deforestation: Lessons from Economic Models," *The Woirld Bank Research Observer*, vol. 14, no. 1 (February 1999), pp. 73–98.

regions of the world. Subsidized irrigation water can encourage its wasteful use.

Land tenure and land use policies may cause exploitation of agricultural and forest lands with little regard for future productivity effects. Short leases, for example, create incentives to mine the resource base for all it is worth in the short-run. And, as just noted, it is an error to think that local incentive problems can be entirely corrected by national policies. Bromley and Chapagain point out that, in Nepal, national policies on forests have destroyed local conservation practices and incentives.[13] A common policy in Latin America has been to require that in colonized areas land needs to be developed, which usually means cleared of trees, prior to receiving title to the land. A large part of the deforestation in the Brazilian Amazon is associated with these types of titling rules.

Land use patterns are sometimes affected by colonial heritage or other international influences. In parts of Latin America and the Caribbean, large sugarcane, coffee, and banana plantations, or even cattle ranches, are found in the fertile valleys and plains, while small peasant farms intensively producing food crops dot the eroding hillsides. The low labor intensity of production in the valleys depresses job opportunities and forces the poor to rely on fragile lands to earn incomes. These patterns are the legacy of colonialism. Colonial powers in Africa changed cropping system to cash cropping in areas where cash cropping could not be supported by the natural resource base. Peasants have been forced onto marginal lands, reducing lands for nomads. Traditional nomadic trading patterns were also disrupted.

These and other institutional policies have contributed to natural resource problems, as they exist today. Institutional change is therefore one of the potential solutions to these problems, as described below.

POTENTIAL SOLUTIONS to NATURAL RESOURCE PROBLEMS

Solutions to environmental problems contain technical, economic, and institutional dimensions. Technical solutions are needed to provide the physical means of remedying natural resource degradation, while economic and institutional solutions provide the incentives for behavioral change.

[13] See Daniel W. Bromley and Devendra P. Chapagain, "The Village Against the Center: Resource Depletion in South Asia," *American Journal of Agricultural Economics*, vol. 68 (December 1984), pp. 868–73.

Technical Solutions to Natural Resource Problems

A variety of technical solutions are available to solve deforestation, erosion, desertification, flooding, salinity, chemical pollution, and other environmental problems. Where technical solutions are lacking, government-sponsored research and education can develop new natural resource-conserving practices and facilitate their adoption.

Windbreaks, contour plowing, mulching, legume fallow crops, alley cropping, deferred grazing, rotational grazing, well-distributed watering places, and re-vegetation or reforestation are all examples of physical practices that could help reduce soil erosion, silting, and desertification. Solar pumps, biogas generators, and more efficient cooking stoves can provide or save energy, thereby reducing fuel-wood consumption, deforestation, and desertification. Embankments can provide protection from flooding for limited areas, and dams can be built on rivers to control water flows.

Irrigation canals can be better lined to reduce waterlogging and salinity and conserve water resources. Integrated pest management techniques can be developed that involve increased biological and cultural control of pests to reduce pesticide pollution. Germplasm banks can be used and conservation reserves established to preserve endangered plant species.

These are just a few of the potential technical or physical solutions to environmental problems. In many cases these technical solutions are already known, but in others additional research is essential for success. In the pest management area, for example, much work still needs to be completed on biological controls for major pests in developing countries. Integrated pest management (IPM) is a family of pest management techniques that lowers dependence on toxic pesticides; in many countries, these techniques are technically feasible, but have not been widely spread to farmers due to limited extension and agricultural outreach services in many developing countries.[14]

The availability of technical solutions to natural resource problems is essential for reducing environmental degradation. In almost all cases, however, these solutions must he combined with economic and institutional changes that create incentives for behavioral change. Without these incentives, it is unlikely that the technologies will be widely adopted, since they usually imply increased costs to their users.

[14] See George W. Norton, E. A. Heinrichs, Gregory C. Luther, and Michael E. Irwin, eds., *Globalizing Integrated Pest Management: A Participatory Research Process* (Ames, Iowa: Blackwell Publishing, 2004).

A brush fence in Kenya being used to facilitate rotational grazing.

Economic and Institutional Solutions to Natural Resource Degradation

International and natural agricultural research systems can generate new technologies that increase food production and incomes. As incomes grow, population pressures are reduced, and the demand for environmental protection increases. New institutions may be formed (or existing institutions may evolve) in response to this demand, and incentives for resource conservation are created.

As countries develop, the major source of growth is not the natural resource base, but new knowledge (see Chapter 5). This knowledge can, to some extent, substitute for natural resources and is less subject to the diminishing returns associated with more intensive use of natural resources. Increases in agricultural productivity resulting from the new knowledge or technologies not only raise incomes, but also the value of human time. As the value of human time increases, population growth rates decline, with favorable implications for natural resource problems.

The best immediate way to solve natural resource problems is, however, through reforms of economic policy or institutional changes that reduce market failures. Reducing the discrimination against agriculture in pricing policies should help. Low returns to agriculture depress farmland prices and the returns to investments in land conservancy practices, as noted earlier. Low returns reduce the demand for

Spraying pesticides in the Philippines.

labor and therefore labor income. If returns to agriculture were raised, subsidies on inputs such as agro-chemicals could be eliminated. However, increased returns to agriculture also put additional pressure on forest resources, so institutional mechanisms to reduce deforestation must accompany changes in agricultural pricing policies.

Several means are available for addressing the underlying market failures associated with environmental degradations. Subsidies and taxes can be used as ''carrots'' or ''sticks'' to reduce externalities or off-site effects associated with agricultural and forestry use. An example of a conservation subsidy (i.e., a "carrot'') might be a program in which the government shares the cost of building terraces, wind-breaks, and fences, or of planting trees. In some cases, local workers can be paid in-kind with food from internationally supplied food aid. An example of a "stick'' is a sales tax on chemical pesticides. Such subsidies are designed to "internalize" the externality, so that the economic actor considers the social costs associated with his or her decisions.

Institutional change that creates secure property rights will help address some problems of environmental degradation. Ownership of land titles increases the returns to long-term investments in land. On

BOX 9-2.
INSTITUTIONS and DEFORESTATION in the BRAZILIAN AMAZON

Brazil contains 3.5 million square kilometers of tropical forests, some 30 percent of the world's total. Most of the forests are found in the Brazilian Amazon Basin. Deforestation of this rich reserve of plant and animal species has increased in recent years, raising concerns for its effects on atmospheric carbon levels and on the maintenance of global biodiversity.

The Brazilian government made a conscious decision in the 1960s to develop the Amazon as a means of relieving population pressures, providing territorial security, and exploiting the region's wealth. Ambitious road-building programs, other infrastructure development, agricultural colonization projects, and policies providing tax and other incentives for agricultural and industrial development were begun. These projects had the effect of opening access to the Amazon, and promoting environmentally unsound development.

Tax exemptions and cheap credit spurred the creation of large-scale livestock projects, whose economic and environmental suitability to the region was questionable. The National Integration Program established a network of villages, towns, and cities and cleared lots for in-migrating settlers. The plans for these settlements were made without regard for soil fertility or agricultural potential, and the cleared forest lands were quickly eroded and otherwise degraded.

Environmentally destructive settlement practices are promoted throughout the Amazon by the Brazilian government's practice of awarding land titles only for deforested lands. A migrant in either an official settlement project or an invaded area can obtain title to the land simply by clearing the forest. Once the title is granted, the migrant can sell or transfer it to someone else, and proceed to clear additional lands. Calculations show that it is more profitable to clear land, plant subsistence crops for two years, and then sell and move than it is to remain as a permanent settler.

Clearly, the rate of deforestation in Amazonia is directly influenced by government policies and other institutional arrangements. It is just as clear that policy reform and institutional adjustments can slow, or even reverse, this process.

Source: Dennis J. Mahar, "Deforestation in Brazil's Amazon Region: Magnitude, Rate, and Causes," chapter 7 in Gunter Schramm and Jeremy J. Warford, eds., *Environmental Management and Economic Development* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1989).

the other hand, the removal of institutions that guarantee land titles only if forests are cleared will help stop deforestation (see Box 9-2). The provision of property rights does not necessarily imply privatization. There are numerous examples of common-property regimes managed in environmentally sound fashions, and it is only when population growth or other changes put pressure on group management that the effectiveness of the management is diminished. Institutional changes that reinforce these common-property management schemes may be more effective than privatization.

Many successful examples can be found of assigning property rights and creating markets for environmental quality. In eastern Peten, Guatemala, community organizations were granted contracts for sustainable use of forest resources. These organizations, because they have the rights to the natural resources, control access to the forest and "police" extractive activities, such as timber harvest by outsiders. As a result, the eastern Peten is still heavily forested, especially in comparison to the west, where inadequate property rights and high enforcement costs have contributed to heavy deforestation (see above). In Zimbabwe, local villagers were given rights to harvest elephants, and sell these rights to foreign hunters. The money from these sales is kept and used for development purposes in the villages. The villagers now see the elephants as a valuable resource and protect them from poachers. As a result, elephant populations are growing rapidly in areas where 15 years ago the elephant was practically extinct.

Certification is a process whereby international markets recognize and reward products that are sustainably produced. For example, wood in the eastern Peten is harvested in an environmentally sustainable manner and is certified as "green" by Smartwood, an international organization. The wood is favorably received in international markets and receives a price premium. Other products, such as coffee, cocoa, and bananas can also be certified as being produced in an environmentally and socially sustainable manner.

Certification is just one element of an emerging family of mechanisms to create markets for environmental goods. Payments for environmental services (PES) are schemes whereby demanders of environmental goods are brought together with suppliers so that both benefit. A global example is the Clean Development Mechanism (CDM) established by an international environmental agreement called the Kyoto Protocol, which allows countries that are committed to greenhouse gas emission reductions to pay for carbon emmission-reducing projects such as reforestation in developing countries as an alternative to more expensive emission reductions in their own country. Local examples of

PES schemes are found throughout Central America, where water-using towns and cities pay upstream farmers to adopt practices that create less damage to water quality. These schemes create a market for the environmental good and induce producers to consider the value of the resource when making decisions.

Regulation is an alternative institutional mechanism for influencing environmental behavior. Although difficult to enforce, regulation can play a role when combined with other economic incentives. For example, burning of crop stubble, farming of particularly erosive lands, or logging in certain areas can be prohibited in conjunction with a program that also provides other government economic benefits to farmers or forest owners. Families can be restricted from settling in flood-prone areas, perhaps with the provision of funds for resettlement. Experience shows that without incentives for changing behavior, regulations tend to be ineffective, since enforcement is costly and there are private incentives to cheat.

Physical restrictions on grazing, land reform programs that distribute land to small farmers, revised leasing arrangements, and many other government-sponsored institutional changes can improve natural resource sustainability if certain principles are followed. First, there is a need for careful assessment of the economic benefits and costs, including externalities, resulting from the policies. Second, local input is needed in the decision-making process. Third, compensation often is required for any losers. That society as a whole will be better off following these institutional changes is not enough. Losers may need to be compensated or they may oppose any change. PES schemes can be exploited in such instances, and those who benefit from the change can "bribe" producers to adopt it.

These three principles hold for institutional changes at various levels — local, regional, national, and international — and they are not always easy to apply. If developed countries want developing countries to reduce carbon-dioxide emissions associated with forest burning, developed countries must be willing to foot part of the bill. The Kyoto Protocol for climate change, adopted in 1997, reflected this need for mutual sacrifice to limit greenhouse gas emissions. It was the product of several years of intense negotiations and reflected developing-country energy needs for economic development. The agreement, although not ratified by the U.S. government, entered into force in early 2005 and sparked creation of markets for trading emission allowances under the CDM. New markets for formerly unvalued environmental goods (such as carbon sequestration) represent opportunities for producers in developing countries. The challenge is to overcome institutional

barriers and information and administrative costs at the local level. PES schemes require careful monitoring to ensure that the land users are adhering to the agreements and a well-functioning legal system to adjudicate claims.

Similarly, governments need to consider what factors affect individual decisions. Solutions to environmental problems do not just emerge from changes in the legal environment. If governments want deforestation reduced, they cannot just pass a national decree. They must involve local decision makers in designing an institutional solution that provides individual incentives for appropriate behavior. Someone may need to estimate the costs and benefits associated with alternative institutional mechanisms. Enforcement mechanisms need to be fair and have teeth.

In many cases, the presence of transactions costs and collective action has created institutional environments that are destructive to the natural resource base. Imperfect information, corrupt government officials, and the absence of new institutional arrangements to replace previous social and cultural norms that constrained behavior harmful to the groups are serious problems. Improvements in information flows and creation of markets to reflect environmental values are essential if such corrupt behavior and reductions in other transactions costs are to be reduced. Education also becomes vitally important. Thus, focusing on communications infrastructure and human-capital development are two keys to environmental improvement.

SUMMARY

Sound environmental management is essential for sustained agricultural and economic development. Yet environmental degradation is evident throughout the developing world. Soil erosion, silting of rivers and reservoirs, flooding, overgrazing, poor cropping practices, desertification, salinity and waterlogging, deforestation, energy depletion, loss of biodiversity, and chemical pollution have become major problems. Poverty, high rates of return to capital, debt problems, rapid population growth, and misguided public policies conspire against solutions. Environmental problems are interrelated, and understanding their causes requires sorting out complex physical, economic, and institutional linkages. Technical solutions are needed for each of these problems, but economic and institutional changes must provide the incentives for behavioral change. As incomes grow, population pressures are reduced, and the demand for environmental protection increases. Economic development means more resources in the long run for addressing environmental problems. Changes in taxes, subsidies, regulations,

and other policies can influence local incentives for conservation. Balancing benefits with costs, obtaining local input in the decision-making process, and compensating losers are needed for effective solutions to local and global environmental problems. Because transactions costs must be reduced for natural resource conservation to occur, information flows must be improved and human capital must be developed.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Biodiversity
Chemical pollution
Climate change
Common property
Deforestation
Desertification
Discounting of costs and benefits
Global warming
Environmental degradation
Externalities
Flooding
Greenhouse effect
Institutional change
Market Failure
Natural resource management
Overgrazing
Payments for Environmental Services
Regulations
Salinity and waterlogging
Soil erosion
Subsidies and taxes
Sustainable resource use

Looking Ahead

In this chapter, we examined the nature and causes of environmental problems in developing countries. Potential technical, economic, and institutional solutions were considered so that agricultural development can be sustainable. In the next major section of the book we consider what it takes to improve agriculture more generally from both a technical and an institutional perspective to contribute to sustainable development. However, first, in Chapter 10, we consider the how human resources, including family structure and gender issues, influence standards of living in developing countries.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1. What are the major natural resource problems facing developing countries?
2. Are the poorest countries the most vulnerable to environmental degradation? Why, or why not?
3. How are flooding and soil erosion related?
4. What is desertification?
5. How are waterlogging and salinity problems interrelated?
6. How are deforestation and energy problems interrelated?
7. What are the major technical or physical causes of natural resource degradation?

8 What common market failures lead to environmental degradation in developing countries?
9 What is a public good? Why might the free market undersupply a public good?
10 How is climate change related to market failure? What efforts to address the market failure might have major impacts on carbon emissions?
11 What are some of the technological solutions to natural resource problems?
12 What are some of the economic and institutional solutions to natural resource problems?
13 How does a PES scheme help correct for market failure?
14 What are three key principles that must hold if institutional changes are to successfully solve environmental problems?
15 Why are reductions in transactions costs important for sustainable natural resource use?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Markandaya, Anil, Patrice Harou, Lorenzo Giovanni Bellu, and Vito Cistulli, *Environmental Economics for Sustainable Growth* (Northhampton, Mass.: Edward Elgar, 2002).

Pearce, David W., and R. Kerry Turner, *Economics of Natural Resources and the Environment* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press 1990), pp. 61–9, 342–60.

Schramm, Gunter and Jeremy J. Warford, eds., *Environmental Management and Economic Development* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1989).

Tietenberg, T. H., "The Poverty Connection to Environmental Policy," *Challenge,* September-October 1990, pp. 26–32.

Tietenberg, T. H., and H. Folmer, eds., *The International Yearbook of Environmental and Resource Economics: 2004/2005* (Cheltenham, UK: Edward Elgar, 2004)

World Commission on Environment and Development, *Our Common Future* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1987).

CHAPTER 10

Human Resources, Family Structure, and Gender Roles

> "Women account for 70 to 80 percent of household food production in Sub-Saharan Africa, 65 percent in Asia, and 45 percent in Latin America and the Caribbean. They achieve this (production) despite unequal access to land, to inputs such as improved seeds and fertilizer, and to information." Lynn R. Brown et al. 2001[1]

THIS CHAPTER

1. Discusses the role of human resources in agricultural and economic development
2. Examines differences in family structure and gender roles in farm households in developing countries
3. Considers determinants of gender roles in farm households

Poor agricultural households in developing countries generally have few assets. Some own small parcels of land, but all households have human assets. The productivity of human assets helps determine prospects for accumulation of other assets and increased income over time. Productivity of labor can be improved through investments in education, health care, nutrition, and acquisition of skills. Decisions about investments in education, how household labor is deployed, and about the size and structure of families are made by families. These decisions depend on policy-based and other incentive structures, cultural norms, and gender roles; such decisions have major impacts on

[1] Lynn R. Brown, Hilary Feldstein, Lawrence Haddad, Christina Peña, and Agnes Quisumbing, Chapter 32, p. 205 in Per Pinstrup-Andersen and Rajul Pandya-Lorch, eds., *The Unfinished Agenda: Perspectives on Overcoming Hunger, Poverty, and Environmental Degradation* (International Food Policy Research Institute, Washington, D.C., 2001).

productivity, asset accumulation, and household well-being. In some societies, for example, girls are less likely to attend school than are boys; in others, women are less likely to receive health care and have shorter life expectancies than do men. We examine the role and determinants of investments in education, how human resources affect household well-being, and the roles of men, women, and children in making decisions and participating in household activities.

ROLE of EDUCATION

The overall productivity of the economy depends on the quantity and quality of inputs into production. Better education, health care, and acquisition of skills are clear means of improving labor productivity. Evidence continually shows that better-educated individuals earn higher incomes and that these higher incomes reflect greater productivity.[2] Education can be an important contributor to improved agricultural productivity; underutilization and low productivity of human resources in agriculture is a serious problem in many developing countries. Better-educated farmers are more able to adopt new technologies, are better able to understand price and market information, and have more access to credit and other forms of capital. Better-educated care givers can prepare more nutritional meals, reduce diseases through improvements in basic sanitary practices, and assist their children in learning at a younger age. Countries that fail to improve the skills and knowledge of farmers and their families find it difficult to develop anything else.

Objectives and Benefits of Education

Rural education is an investment in people that has as its objectives: (1) improving agricultural productivity and efficiency, (2) preparing children for non-farm occupations if they have to leave farming, and (3) enhancing the general quality of life by enabling better decision making. Education may help motivate farmers toward change, teach improved decision-making and farm-management methods, provide farmers with technical and practical information, and lead to better marketing of higher-valued farm outputs. Agricultural extension is complementary to other sources of information because it speeds the transfer of knowledge about new technologies and other research results (see Chapter 12 for more details on extension systems).

[2] Paul Glewwe, "Schools and Skills in Developing Countries: Education Policies and Socioeconomic Outcomes," *Journal of Economic Literature*, vol. 40 (2), June 2002, pp. 436–82.

A country with a literate people in rural areas will have better information flows than one without, due simply to better communications. Communications help reduce the transactions costs that hold back development; they provide information to improve the timing of productive activities and lower risk. Education helps farmers acquire, understand, and sort out technical, institutional, and market information.

The result is that investments in education yield returns not just for the farmer, but for society as a whole — educational attainment is a public good. As education levels increase in a village, all villagers tend to gain from more productive neighbors, better information flows, and more experimentation and innovation. Because it results in a more productive and efficient agriculture and in a more productive labor force for non-farm employment, and because of its public good characteristics, most countries finance education, particularly at the primary and secondary levels. T.W. Schultz has argued that education helps people to deal with economic disequilibria. Thus, as agriculture in a country shifts from a traditional to a more dynamic, science-based mode, the value of education increases.

Education is important not just for farmers and for children who will continue farming, but for those who leave agriculture. Education for non-farm jobs is particularly important for agricultural development if the youth acquire jobs as agricultural extension agents, managers of cooperatives and other business firms supplying inputs to farmers or marketing their products, agricultural scientists, or government officials who administer agricultural programs. Educated children who do not choose agricultural occupations often send remittances back home; these remittances are an important source of investment capital for farmers. It is important to understand that education represents an investment in human beings and that these investments reap returns both inside and outside agriculture. If a child of a farmer becomes educated and decides to leave agriculture and migrate to a city for a job, the individual and society as a whole both gain from the investment.

Education of girls can be particularly important for development. As women become more educated, they live longer and healthier lives, the value of their time increases, the health and nutrition of family members improves, and total fertility declines.[3] They have fewer, healthier, and better-educated children. They also earn more in farming and off

[3] See T. Paul Schultz, "Women's Role in the Agricultural Household," Chapter 8 in Bruce L. Gardner and Gordon C. Rausser, eds., *Handbook of Agricultural Economics* (New York: Elsevier, 2001).

the farm.[4] Payoffs to women's education are found in the short-run through improved productivity, and long-run payoffs include reductions in intergenerational poverty. Although progress has been made in improving girls' access to schooling, gaps remain, particularly in the poorest countries, where girls are only 80 percent as likely as boys to attend school.

Major Types of Education

Three basic types of education exist: (1) primary and secondary education, (2) higher education, and (3) adult education. Most countries have a goal of almost universal primary education and eventually secondary education as well. Primary education provides basic literary and computational skills. Secondary education provides training for students going on to higher education, and technical education for those who seek immediate employment.

The need for higher education related to agriculture depends in part on the growth of employment opportunities in agricultural research, extension, agribusiness, and government. Undergraduate agricultural programs have expanded in many African, Asian, and Latin American countries in recent years. Some of these colleges, such as the Pan-American Agricultural School in Zamorano, Honduras, require a mix of academic and practical training and draw students from several countries.

Postgraduate programs also have expanded in several larger developing countries such as India, the Philippines, Brazil, and Mexico. The quality of these programs is variable, but the programs have a better track record of their students returning home after completing their degrees than do graduate programs in developed countries. Foreign academic training in developed countries also has the disadvantage that the training and research may be less relevant to the home country of the student.

In adult education, often called *extension* education in agriculture, farmers are the primary clientele and the programs are mostly oriented toward production problems facing farmers. Extension accelerates the dissemination of research results to farmers and, in some cases, helps transmit farmers' problems back to researchers. Extension workers provide training for farmers on a variety of subjects and must have technical competence, economic competence, farming competence, and communication skills. Thus extension workers require extensive training

[4] See World Bank, *Engendering Development* (New York: Oxford University Press, 2001).

and retraining to maintain their credibility with farmers. As information requirements for farming increase, adult literacy is gaining importance for understanding agricultural innovations. Technology and extension information are increasingly being transmitted through electronic means, so basic computer literacy is also important. Basic adult literacy and the ability to absorb new messages about productivity-improving technologies are highly complementary, so that over time adult education in rural areas needs to be broadened to include basic skills.

Issues in Education in Developing Countries

Because education is critical for a country's development prospects, several inter-related issues must be addressed by education policy makers. These issues include finance questions, such as measures to recover costs in K-12 education; use of resources to retain students through higher grade levels versus expanding basic coverage to all; decisions about educational curricula, such as providing technical versus more general education; and gender and economic barriers to participation in basic education. Cost recovery measures such as school fees were introduced in many developing countries as part of structural adjustment programs in the 1980s. They are based on the idea that since some of the benefits of education are private and are captured by the individual, the beneficiary (the student or his or her family) should bear some of the costs. They also broaden the financial base of support for the educational system and provide resources to cash-poor local educational districts. However, increasing evidence shows that such fees represent major barriers to participation in education, especially to the poorest, and countries that have abolished fees have seen remarkable growth in school participation. The World Bank, which was a strong proponent of cost-recovery in basic education, now has a blanket policy opposing such fees. Elimination of fees will help reduce gender and economic barriers to participation in education.

Developing countries face choices about the design of their educational curricula in rural areas. While most schools provide basic literacy and mathematics, choices need to be made about technical content. The experience has been mixed relative to agricultural education at the K-12 level in developing countries. While some argue that such schools need to provide useful skills and thus should focus on training in agriculture, evidence shows that design of an agricultural curriculum is difficult and costly. Often training methods do not correspond to conditions faced by poor farmers and time spent in such training reduces time available for other subjects. When rural schools focus too

Female education is as important as male education, yet it is often neglected.

closely on rural-specific skills, graduates face disadvantages when seeking higher education or finding work in urban areas.

FAMILY STRUCTURE and GENDER ROLES

Family structures vary around the world, and that variation implies differences in specific roles played by individual family members in household affairs, in agricultural production and marketing, and in income generation in and out of agriculture. For example, in many West African countries, families live in compound households that include more than one generation, and individual family members are assigned specific parcels of land to farm. In much of Latin America, the basic household is a nuclear family with parents and children, and family members have specific responsibilities within the household and in farming. In many parts of Asia, nuclear families predominate, and in some cases family members work side by side in fields, but in others males and females undertake different tasks. Regardless of the region, women have key roles to play in farming systems. Women are involved not only in household chores and child rearing but are a major source of labor for food production and account for a large proportion of economic activity.

Women threshing wheat in Nepal.

Gender Roles

The term "gender" refers to non-biological differences between women and men, and roles in farming and household decisions in developing countries differ by gender. With the notable exception of strongly Islamic societies, women play two major roles in the rural areas of most developing countries. First, they have household responsibilities for child rearing, food preparation, collecting water and firewood, and other chores. Second, they are paid or unpaid workers in agriculture or off the farm. They produce, process, preserve, and prepare food. They work in the fields, they tend livestock, they thresh grain, and they carry produce to market. In many areas, women manage the affairs of the household and the farm. They sell their labor to other farms and sometimes migrate to plantations. Involvement in farm production may be seasonal, particularly in Asia where, in many countries, women assume major responsibilities for weeding and harvesting, both on their own farms and as paid labor on other farms. Women also work in small industries and in the informal sector, producing goods and services for sales locally or beyond.

Women are important to agriculture in most areas of the world, but they play the largest role in farming in Africa. In many countries nearly all the tasks connected with food production are left to women. Men may tend livestock or produce cash crops, but food crops are generally the purview of women. In Malawi, for example, over two-thirds

of those working full time in farming are women.[5] In some areas of Africa where men migrate to work elsewhere, the entire administration of the household is left to women (Box 10-1). Similar cases exist in the Central American highlands where men migrate seasonally to participate in coffee harvests and to coastal plantations. Households headed by women make up 20 to 25 percent of rural households in developing countries, excluding China and Islamic societies.[6] In Latin America, women care for animals, particularly chickens and pigs, while tending garden vegetables and other food crops. In sugar- and fruit-producing areas, especially in the Caribbean, women work as cash laborers on plantations, and provide a substantial proportion of household income. In Asia, many examples of female farming systems are found. In Nepal, it is estimated that women on subsistence farms produce 50 percent of household income; men and children produce 44 and 6 percent, respectively.[7]

Even though they tend to work much longer days than men, the true extent of involvement of women in agriculturally related activities is often underestimated and misunderstood by policy makers. When surveys are taken, men frequently respond as heads of households, and both men and women usually describe the woman's principal occupation as housewife. In many areas women do not view themselves as "farmers" even when they work long hours on the farm and have large influences over farming-related decisions[8] (see Box 10-2). They are then counted in the survey as economically inactive. This "invisibility" of female employment has led to policies and programs that ignore women and sometimes adversely affect them.

One impact of the "invisibility" of women has been to lower their status. Within the household, this lower status may mean less power to make decisions, less food, fewer heath-related investments in women, and a heavier work and disease burden. In times of household crisis, women and female children may bear a heavier burden; in southern

[5] Janice Juggins, "Gender-Related Impacts and the Work of the International Agricultural Research centers," Consultative Group for International Agricultural Research (CGIAR) Study Paper Number 17, World Bank, Washington, D.C., 1986.

[6] Juggins, "Gender-Related Impacts …."

[7] Meena Acharya and Lynn Bennett, "Women and the Subsistence Sector, Economic Participation and Household Decision Making in Nepal," World Bank Staff Working Paper Number 526, Washington, D.C., World Bank, 1982.

[8] Sarah Hamilton, Keith Moore, Colette Harris, Mark Erbaugh, Irene Tanzo, Carolyn Sachs, and Linda Asturias de Barros, "Gender and IPM," Chapter 14 in *Globalizing Integrated Pest Management: A Participatory Research Process*, edited by George W. Norton, E.A. Heinrichs, Gregory C. Luther and Michael E. Irwin (Ames Iowa: Blackwell Publishing Co., 2005).

BOX 10-1.
GENDER DIVISION of LABOR in BOTSWANA

A study of traditional farms in Central Botswana uncovered illuminating differences in the division of labor by gender. Because men have opportunities to work in mines, a large proportion of rural households are headed by females (40 percent in this study). In agricultural areas, land is held communally by the village, and both men and women can obtain rights to cultivate the land. Mostly sorghum, but also maize, cowpeas, and melon varieties are grown on 4 to 5 hectare plots. Livestock, particularly cattle, are very important.

In all aspects of economic activity there is a stark differentiation between male and female roles. In crop production, men traditionally plow and maintain the fields, women sow the seeds, weed, harvest, and thresh. Men and boys almost exclusively tend and milk livestock (mostly cattle and goats), while women manage the chickens, used mostly for home consumption. Women brew and sell sorghum beer, and beer sales can produce substantial amounts of household income.

Women provide virtually all the labor for household maintenance. Time spent gathering firewood, fetching water, cooking, and in other household chores accounts for 68 percent of the women's total time. Men allocate only 10 percent of their total time to household chores. Even so, women provide 38 percent more time for agricultural fieldwork than do men. Women provide 48 percent of the total hours worked by members of the household, men account for 22 percent, and the children the rest.

Source: Doyle C. Baker with Hilary Sims Feldstein, "Botswana: Farming Systems Research in a Drought Prone Environment, Central Region Farming Systems Research Project," chapter 3 in Hilary Simms Feldstein and Susan V. Poats, eds., *Working Together Gender Analysis in Agriculture*, *Vol. I: Case Studies* (Westford, Conn.: Kumarian Press, 1989), pp. 43–7.

Ethiopia, for example, research shows that women suffer more from shocks to income and health.[9] Lower status of females has been associated with weaker control over household resources, less access to information and public services such as education and health, discrimination in employment, and unequal rights to land and other important assets.[10] Women are less likely to be members of producer and marketing

[9] Stephan Dercon and Pramila Krishnan, "In Sickness and in Health: Risk Sharing within Households in Rural Ethiopia," *Journal of Political Economy*, vol. 108, no. 4 (August 2000), pp. 688–727.

[10] Lisa C. Smith, Usha Ramakrishnan, Aida Ndiaye, Lawrence Haddad, and Reynaldo Martorell, *The Importance of Women's Status for Child Nutrition in Developing Countries,* International Food Policy Research Report number 131, Washington, D.C: IFPRI, 2003.

BOX 10-2.
GENDER and INTEGRATED PEST MANAGEMENT

A recent study by Hamilton and others examines how gender roles in different regions of the world affect the use of pest management practices in agriculture. Studies show that improper use of pesticides can lower household incomes and have negative health consequences for household members. Women have a special interest in pesticide use, as they frequently shoulder responsibility for the health of the family, particularly children. Evidence shows that women have to overcome unique barriers if they or their families are to adopt integrated pest management (IPM) practices, which are usually associated with less use of pesticides. Lack of recognition means that women are often excluded from information about IPM practices; they have less access to extension services, are less likely to participate in training, and are less frequently members of producer organizations, which transmit information to their members. Women also have less access to labor, either due to excessive time demands on their own or limited access to hired labor markets. IPM practices tend to be labor intensive. Women have less access to land and, because of uncertainty associated with IPM, most adopters of IPM have larger holdings; they adopt IPM on part of their lands and use conventional techniques on others.

Despite these constraints, the experience from West Africa, Philippines, and Central and South America found involvement of women to be a key determinant of whether households use IPM or not. Women's participation in field-level trials, in identifying constraints so that research could address them, and in training programs helped spread IPM adoption in all the countries studied. Women are especially receptive to IPM messages because they play a major role in managing household finances and easily recognize the health consequences of mishandled pesticides.

Source: Sarah Hamilton, Keith Moore, Colette Harris, Mark Erbaugh, Irene Tanzo, Carolyn Sachs, and Linda Asturias de Barros, "Gender and IPM," Chapter 14 in *Globalizing Integrated Pest Management: A Participatory Research Process*, edited by George W. Norton, E.A. Heinrichs, Gregory C. Luther and Michael E. Irwin (Ames Iowa: Blackwell Publishing Co., 2005).

organizations and are less likely to have title to land (and thus, access to many forms of credit). These factors affect women's own nutritional and health status and that of their children.

DETERMINANTS of GENDER ROLES in AGRICULTURE

Social, cultural, and religious factors; population pressures; farming techniques; off-farm job opportunities; colonial history; income levels; disease and health conditions; and many other factors determine the role of women in farming systems. Sometimes in areas with apparently similar physical conditions, women assume very different roles. As off-farm job opportunities, population pressures, income levels, and farming techniques change, so too does the role of women (see Box 10-3).

Shifting cultivation with hand labor lends itself more to female labor than does settled cultivation with a plow. For countries with low population densities, adequate food could be raised without using male labor in farming. Men used to spend their time felling trees, hunting, and in warfare. In most areas, agriculture has changed from shifting cultivation to settled agriculture and cash crops. This change has resulted in a greater role for men, but often the role of women in farm work still dominates.

The shift to the plow and draft animals has made a difference in the amount of male labor used in some areas, and long-standing differences in farming techniques undoubtedly account for many of the regional gender differences in farming activities. In regions of intensive cultivation on small, irrigated farms, for example in several Asian countries, men, women, and children must work hard to generate enough production on a small piece of land. Work is mostly done by hand. In contrast, on larger farms, more tasks may be mechanized and women may devote a higher percentage of their time to housework. In some cases, mechanization has displaced female labor and lowered their status as a result, since housework is often under-appreciated. In other cases, especially sub-Saharan Africa, mechanization has increased the amount of land that can be cultivated by men, and put additional strain on women who are responsible for planting and weeding.

Integration of small-scale farmers into the labor market has increased the importance of women's role in agriculture, because it is often the males who find outside wage work. In some countries, males may work away from the household for several weeks or months at a time. In Lesotho, for example, the result has been that 70 percent of the households are headed by women.[11] Diseases such as HIV-AIDS have

[11] Juggins, "Gender-Related Impacts …"

BOX 10-3.
TANZANIA: CONSERVATION AGRICULTURE for SUSTAINABLE DEVELOPMENT

The Conservation Agriculture for Sustainable Agriculture and Rural Development project, which began in 2004, promotes conservation agriculture (CA) for small-scale and resource-poor, especially women, farmers. In the project, energy-efficient agricultural production technologies, combined with participatory methodologies, enable farmers to adopt practices that reduce labor and raise yields and incomes. Women are the main providers of agricultural labor in Tanzania and will benefit most from the reduced labor requirements of CA.

The project was centered in Arumeru District in the Arusha region of Tanzania, a highly agricultural, rain-fed area. The primary conservation techniques are ripper tillers, which reduce tillage by cutting furrows into the soil rather than inverting it completely, and the jab planter allows for planting operations to be done through the soil cover with no tillage. Farmer Field Schools, discussed later in this book, were the main means of training. Participants in the schools were taught in a hands-on manner about CA techniques. Because CA was expected to have a strong impact on women, women represented the majority of field school participants, and women participants were followed carefully to see how CA affected them.

Adoption of CA has three main impacts: reduced demand for household labor, increased food security through higher yields, and increased household income. The labor effects are especially important: in addition to saving labor for planting — predominantly a women's activity — CA requires better coordination of the land preparation and planting, so women and men work together more frequently. Lower labor requirements associated with CA practices affect women and other family members differently. Poor women-headed households benefit from lower labor demands, because a decrease in labor pressures frees family members from the requirement of working in the field. Children can pursue their education uninterrupted by sudden labor shortages. Women in landless households have fewer opportunities to sell their labor, but higher crop yields — and thus higher labor requirements for harvesting — could cushion the reduction in hired-labor opportunities. Additional employment opportunities for rural women laborers as a result of higher yields would have an immediate effect on household livelihoods.

Source: The World Bank and the International Fund for Agricultural Development, Gender in Agriculture Sourcebook (Washington DC: The World Bank, 2009).

further complicated men's and women's roles; as sick people can no longer work in agriculture, women are increasingly assuming productive roles while still being the primary care-giver to the ill.

Policy Implications

Why is it important to address gender inequities in society? First, as a normative concept, gender equality is important in its own right. Women ought to have equal legal and social status because social justice is an important indication of development. Second, many recent studies have shown that gender inequities slow the process of economic development. Lower status of women is associated with less schooling, lost earnings, inefficient allocation of labor, and poor health of women and their children.[12] Over time, gender inequities lead to lower nutritional and health status of children, less educational attainment and slower growth. In agriculture, gender is important as one of the several socio-economic characteristics that influence the adoption of new technologies.

Since women are important in agriculture, their opinions must be sought when designing new technologies. The impact of these technologies on the relationship between men and women should be considered during this design. If women are making production decisions, they must receive education and guidance from extension services. Most international aid agencies, such as the World Bank and the United States Agency for International Development, now recognize that without considering the roles and responsibilities of women and receiving inputs during project development, these projects are much less likely to succeed.

Third, an increasing body of evidence shows that as women's participation in the economy grows, family well-being improves. Income earned by women is more frequently used for purchases that broadly benefit the family, such as for health care, school fees, and food for children.[13]

One means of improving income-earning opportunities for women is to take steps to provide them with inputs such as credit and new seeds. Women often have inadequate access to credit for a number of reasons. First, in many societies, women lack the legal status necessary to enter into contracts. Second, only very infrequently do women hold

[12] World Bank, Engendering Development …

[13] See Norbert Schady and José Rosero, "Are cash transfers made to women spent like other sources of income?" *Economics Letters*, vol. 101 (2008), pp. 246–8; and Cheryl Doss, "The effects of intrahousehold property ownership on expenditure patterns in Ghana." *Journal of African Economies*, vol. 15 (1) (2005), pp. 149–80.

title to land, often necessary as collateral for loans. Third, there seems to be a bias against women in the administration of credit programs.

It is likely that most new agricultural technologies are relatively gender neutral, and we see some efforts on the part of certain public extension systems to reach women farmers.[14] However, lack of female access to credit and purchased inputs in many countries makes many new technologies gender-biased. Furthermore, women often grow food crops that are minor in terms of value of production but are important in the diets of families on small farms. Agricultural research often neglects these crops, and this neglect may have adverse effects on nutrition. In addition, because extension services are still highly male in most countries, communication with female farmers can be inhibited. Even in Africa where women are the majority of farmers, males have greater contact with extension services.

The impacts of credit, technology, and other agricultural policies on women have been exacerbated by discriminatory land reform and settlement policies. In Latin America, where land reform and settlement schemes often have been designed to benefit "heads of households," women have been, by convention, largely excluded. In Ethiopia and Tanzania, rights to lands have been bestowed on men. In Asia — specifically the settlement schemes in Indonesia, Papua New Guinea, and Sri Lanka — land was given only to male heads of households. Inadequate access to land, worsened by government policies, when combined with problems of access to credit, can hinder women's ability to participate in agricultural development. Given the large role that women play in developing-country farming systems, efforts that ignore or discriminate against women have distorting effects and diminish chances of success. Studies have found that farm fields controlled by women often have lower yields due to lack of access to fertilizer and other resources.

Economic development itself can have positive impacts on gender equality. The process of development expands job opportunities, and the presence of more capital raises productivity. These changes raise the value of time — women's time as well as men's. Development also

[14] In The Gambia, research on rice was expected to increase women's income, since women were the primary producers. Instead, following the introduction of new technologies, men took over this production. See Joachim von Braun, Detlev Puetz, and Patrick Webb, "Irrigation Technology and Commercialization of Rice in The Gambia: Effects on Income and Nutrition," International Food Policy Research Institute, Research Report No. 75, Washington, D.C., 1989.

Colombian women receiving instructions on how to vaccinate a chicken.

is typically accompanied by more investments in infrastructure such as water, roads, and electricity. These changes can lower work burdens of women, leaving more time for other duties. Higher incomes leave more resources for investments in assets such as human capital. As incomes grow, gender disparities in education and health status tend to shrink. Public investments in schools and health facilities lower the cost of investing in human capital and help shrink gender inequalities. In fact, gender disparities in education are most acute in the lowest-income countries and almost non-existent in high-income countries.[15]

Despite strong empirical links between economic growth and gender equality, equality is not an automatic bi-product of growth, and the path of development can have important implications for gender relations. Governments that encourage equal participation and foster rights of women often find that growth and greater gender equality march hand in hand. Gender equality has beneficial growth effects, and growth enhances women's rights. Governments can be proactive by reforming institutions to establish equal rights and opportunities for women and men, they can strengthen policy and institutional incentives for more equal access to resources and participation, and they can take active measures to confront disparities.[16] At a minimum, they should take steps to monitor these disparities by measuring women's conditions.

[15] World Bank, *Engendering Development* …
[16] See World Bank, *Engendering Development* …, particularly chapter 6.

Role of Children

Children represent the future human resource base of a country. Economic growth and development over time depend on how resources are invested in children. As noted in Chapter 4, children represent current sources of pleasure for parents, and they are a source of investment for future income gains and security in old age. Children are a major source of farm labor in every region of the world, and their tasks expand with each year of their age. They typically begin by following a parent or sibling into the field and rapidly become involved in hoeing, weeding, harvesting, and other tasks. They feed and otherwise care for animals. They, particularly boys, may work as low-paid farm laborers on other farms. Young girls often care for younger brothers and sisters to free their mother for other work. Farm children throughout the world take on major farm responsibilities at a very young age.

At times, conflicts occur between the use of children in farm duties and providing income to the family and longer-term investments in their education. For example, in times of household crisis, such as drought or crop failures, children may be pulled out of school to lower expenses (such as school fees) or increase incomes. Such informal risk management techniques can have long-term adverse consequences because the child's lifetime productivity is being compromised by reduced access to education. Gender inequalities in investments in children have long-term consequences, but depend on social norms and other factors. For example, in many societies, in time of crisis, decreased spending on girl's education and even health care and food is a common means of coping with household financial stress. Such actions lower the status of girls and their quality of life, but are the product of long-standing cultural norms.

As adults become ill from diseases such as HIV-AIDS and malaria, children are called upon to assume a greater share of farm work and other household responsibilities. Increased disease burdens, especially in sub-Saharan Africa, are rapidly changing the roles of children and altering social structures in rural areas. In fact, some argue that AIDS has increased the vulnerability of entire villages and regions to crop failure and famine by lowering food production and increasing the work burden on children. These factors subvert livelihood-coping strategies and mean that in time of need fewer assets are available to households to help them manage risks.[17] The epidemic is putting immense burden on children.

[17] A. de Waal and A. Whiteside, "New variant famine: AIDS and food crisis in southern Africa," *The Lancet*, vol. 362, October 11, 2003.

Teenage child and her mother sorting the potato harvest on a farm in Ecuador.

Governments recognize the long-term adverse consequences of using children to manage household risks, and recent experiments with conditional cash transfers are showing these programs to be very effective. An example is the PROGRESA program (now called Oportunidades) in Mexico, whereby families are given regular, but modest, cash allotments on the condition that their children remain in school and receive regular nutrition and health interventions. The program has proven to be so successful in increasing children's education participation, reducing drop outs, reducing child labor burdens, and improving child welfare that the Mexican government expanded its coverage so that more than 40 percent of the rural population is now covered.[18] Other similar programs now exist in more than 30 developing countries, including virtually every country in Latin America, and major programs in Bangladesh, India, Indonesia, Turkey and Pakistan.

SUMMARY

The overall productivity of the economy depends on the quantity and quality of labor. Better-educated individuals earn higher incomes and these higher incomes reflect greater productivity. The underutilization and low productivity of human resources in agriculture is a serious

[18] See International Food Policy Research Institute, *PROGRESA — Breaking the Cycle of Poverty*, Washington, D.C: IFPRI, 2002.

problem in many developing countries. Better-educated farmers are more able to adopt new technologies, are better able to understand price and market information, and have more access to credit and other forms of capital. Education also prepares children for non-farm occupations.

Women and children play important roles in agriculture, and these roles vary by region, by stage of development and other factors. Social, cultural, religious, technological, off-farm employment, historical and other factors determine the role of women in farming systems. Women's roles in agriculture have implications for credit and input policies, for the generation and extension of new technologies, and for land reform policies. Gender inequities can have adverse implications for long-term development inside and outside of agriculture. Compelling evidence shows that governments should take proactive steps to lower gender inequalities.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Constraints faced by women farmers
Determinants of the role of women in agriculture
Human capital
Impacts of education on development
Impacts of HIV/AIDS
Implications of the role of women in agriculture
Multiple roles of women
PROGRESA
Regional differences in the roles of women
Role of children

Looking Ahead

In this chapter, we briefly examined the role of human resources, family structure, and women and children in the process of agricultural and economic development. In the next section we consider means for improving those systems to increase agriculture's contribution to human welfare. We begin in Chapter 11 by providing an overview of agricultural development theories and strategies before exploring in detail the individual components of those theories and strategies.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1. How do investments in human capital affect productivity inside and outside agriculture?
2. What is the purpose of education for the farmer and his or her family?

3 Why should farmers support education if it just means their children will move out of farming and do something else?
4 Why might education be considered a public good?
5 What are the major types of education?
6 What roles do women and children play in agriculture?
7 In which region of the world is the role of women in agriculture the greatest?
8 What factors determine the roles of women in agriculture?
9 What are some important implications of the roles of women in agriculture?
10 Why might census statistics and other data undercount female participation in farming?
11 Why do women from near-landless and small-holder households participate more in agriculture relative to those from larger farms with more land ownership?
12 How might gender inequality slow the process of development?
13 What steps might governments take to address problems of gender inequality?
14 How does disease pressure affect the roles of children in farming?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Baker, Doyle C. with Hilary Simms Feldstein, "Botswana Farming Systems Research in a Drought Prone Environment, Central Regional Farming Systems Research Project," in Hilary Simms Feldstein and Susan V. Poats, eds., *Working Together: Gender Analysis in Agriculture Volume I: Case Studies* (West Hartford, Conn.: Kumarian Press, 1989), chapter 3.

Boserup, Ester, *Women's Role in Economic Development* (London: Allen and Unwin, 1970).

Deere, Carmen D. "The Division of Labor by Sex in Agriculture: A Peruvian Case Study," *Economic Development and Cultural Change,* vol. 30, 1982, pp. 795–811.

Folbre, Nancy, "Engendering Economics: New perspectives on Women, Work, and Demographic Change," *Annual World Bank Conference on Development* (The World Bank, Washington, D.C., 1995).

Food and Agriculture Organization, "Women in African Food Production and Food Security," in J. Price Gittinger, Joanne Leslie, and Caroline Hoisington, eds., *Food Policy: Integrating Supply, Distribution, and Consumption* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1987), chapter 7.

Gladwin, Christine H., and Della McMillan, "Is a Turnaround in Africa Possible Without Helping African Women to Farm?" *Economic Development and Cultural Change,* vol. 387, 1989, pp. 305–44.

Glewwe, Paul, "Schools and Skills in Developing Countries: Education Policies and Socioeconomic Outcomes," *Journal of Economic Literature*, vol. 40 (2), June 2002, pp. 436–82.

Quisumbing, Agnes R., Lynn R. Brown, Hillary Simms Feldstein, Lawrence Haddad, and Christina Peña, "Women the Key to Food Security," International Food Policy Research Institute, Washington, D.C., August 1995.

United Nations, Centre for Social Development and Humanitarian Affairs, "Women, Food Systems and Agriculture," *1989 World Survey on the Role of Women in Development* (New York: United Nations, 1989), chapter 3.

World Bank, *Engendering Development* (New York: Oxford University Press, 2001).

World Bank and the International Fund for Agricultural Development. *Gender in Agriculture Sourcebook* (Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2009).

PART 4

Getting Agriculture Moving

International Rice Research Institute in the Philippines.

CHAPTER 11

Theories and Strategies for Agricultural Development

> The process of agricultural growth itself has remained outside the concern of most development economists.
>
> — Yujiro Hayami and Vernon W. Ruttan[1]

THIS CHAPTER

1. Describes how the sources of agricultural growth tend to change as development occurs, and considers how theories of agricultural development have changed over time
2. Presents the theory of induced innovation as applied to agriculture and its implications for the types of technologies generated and for institutional change
3. Discusses how transactions costs and collective action may alter the direction of technical change, with implications for asset distribution

THEORIES of AGRICULTURAL DEVELOPMENT

We have discussed the importance of agricultural development for solving the world food-income-population problem. We have considered the nature and diversity of existing agricultural systems in developing nations. We now need to consider means for improving these systems to increase agriculture's contribution to human welfare. In this chapter, we provide an overview of agricultural development theories and strategies. In subsequent chapters we examine in more detail the individual components of the basic strategies outlined here. Our overriding concern is to identify strategies that facilitate growth with equity. We

[1] Yujiro Hayami and Vernon W. Ruttan, *Agricultural Development: An International Perspective* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1985), p. 41.

explore why agricultural development has occurred in some countries and why it has not (or has proceeded very slowly) in others.

Many theories have been suggested to explain how the basic sources of growth (labor, natural resources, capital, increases in scale or specialization, improved efficiency, education, and technological progress) can be stimulated and combined to generate broad-based agricultural growth.[2] It is clear from historical experience that the relative importance of alternative sources of growth changes during the development process and has changed over time for the world as a whole. It is also clear that institutional arrangements such as marketing systems, price and credit policies, a well-functioning legal system, and transparently enforced property rights play an important role in stimulating or hindering development. Let's examine agricultural development theories and evidence to see what lessons they provide for operational strategies.

Expand the extensive and intensive margins

One means of generating increased agricultural production is to expand the use of land and labor resources. The development of agriculture in North America, South America, Australia, and other areas of the world during colonization was based on using new lands. In some cases indigenous labor was also exploited. The opening up of forests and jungles by local populations in parts of Africa, Latin America, and Asia provide additional examples of expanded resource use. Economists call this increased use of land and labor: *expanding the extensive margin*.

In many of these historical cases, surplus lands and labor were used to produce commodities for both local consumption and export. Reductions in transportation costs facilitated exports. In Thailand, for example, rice production increased sharply in the latter half of the nineteenth century, and much of the increased production went to export markets. In many colonies, exports of primary production were extracted for use in more developed countries, and often a large share of the benefits of these exports was not realized by the local countries but was transferred to the developed countries.

[2] Hayami and Ruttan (*Agricultural Development*) have characterized previous agricultural development theories into six basic approaches: (1) resource exploitation, (2) resource conservation, (3) location, (4) diffusion, (5) high-payoff input, and (6) induced innovation. The first part of the chapter draws heavily on their ideas.

Agriculture in Asia is intensive, even in hilly regions.

Agriculture in Asia is intensive even in hilly regions.

Expansion of unutilized land resources provides few opportunities for substantial growth in developing countries today. In areas of Latin America and Africa where additional land does exist, disease, insect, and soil problems prevent its use in agriculture. Abundant labor is available in many countries, and continued growth of the labor force will generate increases in total agricultural output. However, most growth in per-capita agricultural output will have to come from more *intensive* use of existing resources.

Many methods can be used to achieve more intensive resource use. Early efforts in England, Germany, and other European countries included more intensive crop rotations, green manuring, forage-livestock systems, drainage, and irrigation. In many developing countries, these same factors increased land productivity. Terracing is an effective means of conserving soil productivity in hilly areas of Asia. In the mountainous regions of Central America, grass strips have been used to create terrace-like structures that conserve soil and enhance productivity. Crop rotations are frequently used to enhance soil productivity and control pests. Hayami and Ruttan estimate that agricultural development based on similar types of "conservation" has been responsible for sustaining growth rates in agricultural production in the range of 1 percent per year in many countries, including developing countries, for long periods of time.[3]

[3] Hayami and Ruttan, *Agricultural Development*, p. 52.

While scientists are gaining additional knowledge of the technical and institutional considerations that can lower the cost of conservation efforts, population pressures are creating a need for better ways of sustaining the natural resource base. Hence, conservation is likely to play an increasingly important role in maintaining if not expanding agricultural production in the future.

Another means of intensifying agricultural production is to produce more crops per unit of time through altering cropping patterns or using shorter season varieties so that two and three crops can be produced per acres per year where one or two was produced before. Such production changes usually require scientific input to develop the required seeds, tools, or other inputs to make the double or triple cropping possible. Access to irrigation or surface water sources can facilitate this intensification.

Yet another means of intensification is through a process of diversification and production of higher-valued commodities. This means of intensification is likely to become more important as development proceeds and incomes grow, creating increased demand for higher-valued vegetables and meats. Intensity of production can be changed as well by improving transportation systems to bring higher-valued commodities to urban centers. It has long been recognized that the pattern and intensity of agricultural production vary in relation to the proximity of urban-industrial centers and to the quantity and quality of transportation.[4] Closeness to cities and transport matters because of differences in transportation and marketing costs, in effects on labor and capital markets, in the ease of obtaining new and more productive inputs, and in ease of information flows.

One implication of this ''location'' theory of agricultural development is that countries should encourage decentralized industrial development, particularly in the middle and late stages of development. During these stages, strong linkages between agriculture and markets for inputs (fertilizers and pesticides) and outputs can help stimulate the local economy. Developing nations should improve transportation infrastructure in rural areas.

Diffuse Existing Knowledge

Agricultural development can be stimulated by diffusing knowledge among farmers more rapidly within or across national borders. Existing

[4] Today, economists still draw on theories proposed by Heinrick Von Thunen (1783–1850), who studied the optimal intensity of farm enterprises in relation to their distance to urban areas.

technologies and economic knowledge can be transferred from the more progressive to the lagging farmers, thereby increasing productivity. This idea has provided part of the rationale for agricultural extension systems, particularly in farm management. Unfortunately, in some cases diffusion theory has led to unrealistic expectations of the size of potential productivity gains under the existing level of technology.

Diffusion theory also has led to attempts to directly transfer knowledge and technologies from more-developed to less-developed countries. More success has been achieved with transferring knowledge than with transferring agricultural technologies. Adoption of transferred technologies has been limited except where efforts have been made to adapt the technologies to the new setting.

Develop High-Payoff Inputs

More recent agricultural development theory builds on these earlier approaches but adds the important dimension that the process can be accelerated through provision of new and improved inputs and technologies (particularly improved seeds. fertilizers, pesticides, and irrigation systems). This approach, articulated by Schultz in *Transforming Traditional Agriculture,* is based on the idea discussed in Chapter 7 that farmers in traditional agriculture are rational and efficient given their current resources and technologies.[5] What these farmers need are new high-payoff inputs and technologies to increase their productivity.[6]

The need for high-payoff inputs has been widely accepted because of the success achieved by modern wheat, corn, and rice varieties beginning in the 1950s and 1960s. These varieties are highly responsive to fertilizer, pesticides, and water management and have resulted in substantial growth in agricultural output in many developing countries. Some have argued that the relative absence of these inputs has been one factor holding back agricultural development in Africa compared to other developing regions. The distributional or equity effects and environmental impacts of these inputs, however, have been the subject of much debate and are discussed in more detail in Chapter 12.

Hayami and Ruttan argue that the high-payoff input theory is incomplete because it fails to incorporate the mechanism that induces these new inputs and technologies to be produced in a country. The theory also fails to explain how economic conditions stimulate the development of public agricultural experiment stations and educational

[5] Theodore W. Schultz, *Transforming Traditional Agriculture* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1964).

[6] Hayami and Ruttan have labeled Schultz's approach the "high-payoff input" model.

systems. It does not attempt to identify the process by which farmers organize collectively to develop public infrastructure such as irrigation and drainage systems. In the next section we explore the induced innovation theory proposed by Hayami and Ruttan to address these issues.

THEORY of INDUCED INNOVATION

Induced innovation theory helps explain the mechanism by which a society chooses an optimal path of technical and institutional change in agriculture.[7] The theory says that technical change in agriculture represents a response to changes in resource endowments and to growth in product demand. Changes in institutions are induced by changes in relative resource endowments and by technical change.[8]

Induced Technical Innovation

Technical change in agriculture can follow different paths. Technologies can be developed that facilitate the substitution of relatively abundant and low-cost factors of production for relatively scarce and high-cost factors. A rise in the price of one factor relative to others will induce technical change that reduces the use of that factor relative to others. For example, if the price of land goes up relative to labor and fertilizer, indicating that land is becoming relatively scarce, technologies such as improved seeds will be developed that can be combined with labor and fertilizer to increase production per unit of land.

This process of induced technical change is illustrated graphically in Figure 11-1. The range of possible technologies in time period 0 can be represented by what Hayami and Ruttan call the *innovation possibilities curve*, I_0*. The specific technology employed in that time period is represented by the isoquant I_0. Production occurs at point A with N_0 units of land and L_0 units of labor, the least-cost combination of those resources given the price ratio P_0. Now, if over time labor becomes more

[7] Induced innovation theory was developed originally by John R. Hicks, *Theory of Wages* (London: MacMillan and Co., 1932). Hayami and Ruttan during the 1960s were the first to apply the theory to agricultural development. Their underlying assumption is that technological and institutional changes are vital to agricultural development.

[8] Hayami and Ruttan (*Agricultural Development*, p. 94) define institutions as "the rules of society or of an organization that facilitate coordination among people by helping them form expectations which can reasonably hold in dealing with others. They reflect the conventions that have evolved in different societies regarding the behavior of individuals and groups relative to their own behavior and the behavior of others."

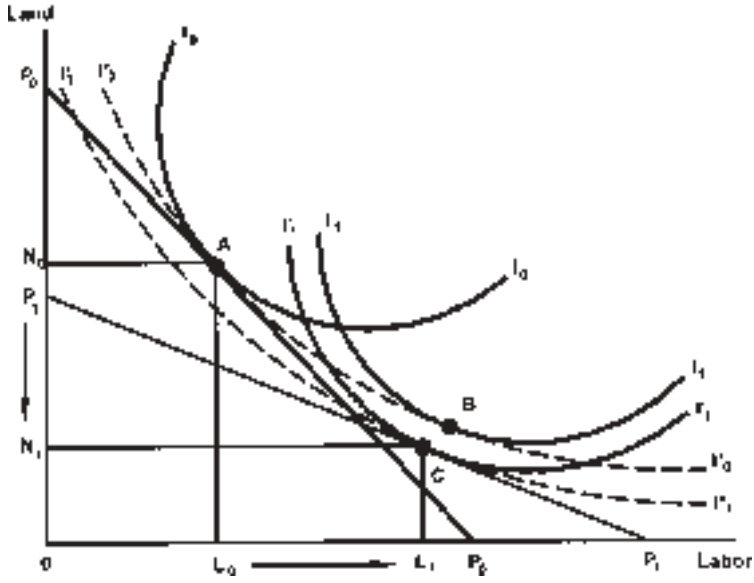


Figure 11-1. A model of induced technical change. If the ratio of the price of land to labor changes from P_o to P_1, incentives are created not only to substitute labor for land and to move from technology I_o at point A to technology I_1 at point B, but also to develop a new technology I'_o at point C. Innovation possibility curves I^*_o and I^*_1 represent the range of potential technologies that can be applied in period 0 and period 1. (*Source*: Hayami and Ruttan, *Agricultural Development.)*

abundant relative to land so that the price of labor is reduced relative to the price of land (the new price ratio is represented by P_1), incentives are created to adopt a more labor-intensive technology. If there were no technical change, production might occur at point B on isoquant I_1. However, the theory of induced innovation says that incentives are created not only to select a new technology from the current technology set (that is, move to point B on I_1), but also to develop new technologies to save scarce resources and use abundant resources more intensively. The new technology set is represented by the new innovation possibility curve I_1*. As the innovation possibility curve moves toward the origin, the same quantity can be produced at lower cost. Following the generation of this new technology set, farmers can adopt the new least-cost technology 1 and employ N_1 of land and L_1 of labor at point C.

Hayami and Ruttan compare the agricultural development histories of Japan and the United States to illustrate the validity of the theory. Japan experienced increasingly higher priced land compared to labor and stressed the development of biological technologies such as improved seeds and fertilizers. These technologies tend to save land and use labor more intensively. The United States, on the other hand, has approximately two times as much land per worker as does Japan. As the U.S. frontier was moved west, land became relatively abundant compared to labor, and the development of mechanical technologies that saved labor was stressed. The result was successful agricultural development in both countries, but agricultural output per worker is 10 times greater in the United States than in Japan while output per hectare is 10 times greater in Japan than in the United States.[9]

Changes in output price relative to an input price also can induce technical change, as illustrated in Figure 11-2. The curve u represents the range of current and possible production technologies in a given time period. Hayami and Ruttan call this the *meta production function*. Specific production technologies are represented by v_0 and v_1. At the initial fertilizer-output price ratio (P_0), producers use technology v_0 and produce at point A. If the price of fertilizer falls relative to the price of output (P_1), then incentives are created to move to point B on the existing technology. If the price ratio P_1 is expected to continue, farmers press scientists to develop a more fertilizer responsive variety, v_1, if it does not already exist. Farmers adopt the new variety and move to point C. In the long run, the meta production function itself may shift as more basic scientific advances are made.

Induced Institutional Change

Incentives are created for technical change, but where do these new technologies come from? How do farmers acquire them? What determines whether technologies are developed that are suitable for all farmers or only for *some* of the farmers? All of these questions are addressed by the theory of induced *institutional* change.

Farmers demand new technologies not only from private input suppliers but from the public sector as well. Hayami and Ruttan argue that public research scientists and administrators are guided by price

[9] Hayami and Ruttan, *Agricultural Development*. Many developing countries, particularly in Asia, are finding the Japanese path of technical change more appropriate than the U.S. path, given their relative resource endowments and the nature of changes in those endowments.

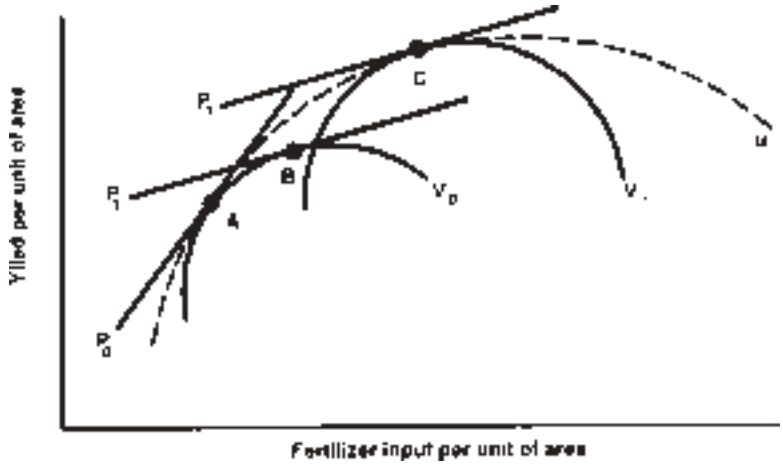


Figure 11-2. Shift in fertilizer response curve as price ratio changes. If the output/fertilizer price ratio changes from P_o to P_1, incentives are created not only to apply more fertilizer and increase output from A to B using the traditional variety v_o, but to develop and adopt a new variety v_1 and to move to point C. Curve u represents the "envelope" of a series of available and potential crop varieties. (*Source*: Hayami and Ruttan, *Agricultural Development.*)

signals and by pressures from farmers. The more highly decentralized the research system, the more effectively these pressures work. Research systems that welcome and facilitate inputs from farmer groups and that engage in participatory planning and research are also more responsive. The development of the research systems themselves can be the result of pressures from farmers who are responding to market forces.

Induced innovation occurs not only in agriculture but in the economy as a whole. For example, as energy and gas prices rise, producers and consumers not only switch to existing, more energy-efficient vehicles, but press for new types of vehicles that are even more fuel saving. The public sector may also respond with laws that require more fuel-efficient cars.

Many other types of institutions (rules of society or organizations) affect technical change and agricultural development. The rights to land, marketing systems, government pricing and credit policies, and laws governing contracts are just a few. The theory of induced institutional

innovation recognizes that institutions can become obsolete and in need of adjustment over time. It says that new technologies and changes in relative resource endowments or price changes provide incentives for a society to demand new institutional arrangements (see Box 11-1 for an example).

Examples of institutional changes induced by technological change can be found in the shift from share tenure to more fixed-payment leases, which has occurred in several countries as new varieties and irrigation systems have increased yields while reducing risks.[10] An example of an institutional change due to a change in relative resource endowments is the switch from communally owned land to more private forms of property rights as population pressures increase land scarcity.

In some countries we observe what appear to be socially desirable institutional changes, technical changes, and relatively rapid and broad-based agricultural development. However, in others we observe what seems to be perverse institutional change, agricultural stagnation, or agricultural growth with the benefits received by only a small segment of the population. Of course many countries fall between these extremes or may move from one group to the other over time. Why do we see these differences in institutional changes that influence agricultural performance, and how do they relate to the theory of induced innovation? The answer lies partly with transactions costs and with the incentives for and effects of collective action by groups of people with common interests.

IMPLICATIONS of TRANSACTIONS COSTS and COLLECTIVE ACTION

The induced innovation theory presented above implicitly assumes well-functioning markets for all products and factors. Prices are assumed to convey all the relevant information to decision-makers, and resources are allocated efficiently and independently of the distribution of assets (such as land) in society. Price-responsive producers are assumed to possess knowledge about alternative technologies, and be able to lobby agricultural scientists to develop improved technologies to save scarce resources. Assuming no economies-of-scale in production, there is one optimal path for technological change.

[10] Share tenure is an arrangement whereby a farmer who is renting land pays the rent with a fixed percentage of the farmer's output.

BOX 11-1.
INDUCED INSTITUTIONAL INNOVATION in JAVA

In Java, customary rules have governed both land rights and labor exchange for many centuries. With traditional technologies, these rules have helped allocate resources so that subsistence levels of foods have been available to all village members. These communal institutions have been put under stress by modern technologies that increase the productivity of labor and the returns to landowners. These changes induce changes in the institutions governing resource allocation.

An example of an institutional innovation is the disappearance of the *bawon* rice harvesting system. This traditional system allowed everyone, whether they were from a particular village or not, to participate in the harvest and share the output. As population grew with traditional technologies, this purely open *bawon* system gradually evolved into various forms, some of which limited harvest rights to village residents, while others limited harvest rights to a set number of participants, or to people who were invited by the farmers.

The widespread diffusion of fertilizer-responsive rice varieties created sharply higher returns to harvest labor, and induced a remarkable change in harvest-contract institutions. One such innovation was the introduction of the *tebasan* system, in which standing crops are sold to middlemen who hire contract labor for harvesting and thus reduce the harvester's share while increasing returns to the landowners. Another institution is the *ceblokan* system, which limits harvesting rights to those workers who perform extra services such as transplanting and weeding without pay. A study shows that in a village where *ceblokan* was first adopted in 1964 by seven farmers, by 1978, 96 out of 100 farmers had adopted the system.

These innovations in harvest-labor institutional arrangements were largely spurred by increased incomes and higher wages accompanying technological innovation. Increased incomes and wages created incentives for farmers to change their labor-contracting system. These changes are now widespread in Java.

Source: Masao Kikuchi and Yujiro Hayami, "Changes in Rice Harvesting Contracts and Wages in Java," Chapter 6 in Hans P. Binswanger and Mark R. Rosenzweig, eds., *Contractual Arrangements, Employment and Wages in Rural Labor Markets in Asia* (New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1984).

Transactions Costs

Unfortunately, transactions costs affect both factor and product markets, creating the possibility of differing optimal paths of technical change and of institutional change, depending on farm size or other factors. Transactions costs refer to the costs of adjustment, of information, and of negotiating, monitoring, and enforcing contracts.[11] These costs arise because assets are fixed in certain uses in the short-run, because there is a lack of perfect information, because there are differences in the ability to use information, and because people are willing to benefit at the expense of others.[12]

The presence of transactions costs may mean, for example, that the cost of credit decreases as farm size increases, that labor costs per hectare increase as farm size increases (because of supervision costs), and the cost of land transactions declines as farm size increases. Therefore, as farm size grows, labor use per hectare may decline while machinery use per hectare and the demand for capital-intensive technologies may increase. Owners of large farms also maybe quicker to adopt new technologies, because they have fewer credit constraints affecting input purchases.

The presence of transactions costs means that the distribution of assets matters for the direction of technical and institutional change.[13] Because the demand for particular types of technical and institutional changes will vary by farm size, the potential is created for conflicting demands on the public sector. Politicians and other public servants respond to the demands of competing groups by considering their own personal gains and losses. Consequently, a change that would benefit society as a whole may not occur if a politician receives greater private gain from an interest group that does not want the change than from a group that does.

[11] A succinct discussion of transactions costs is found in Douglas C. North, "Institutions, Transactions Costs, and Economic Growth," *Economic Inquiry*, vol. 25, 1987.

[12] William J. Baumol — in "Williamson's The Economic Institutions of Capitalism" *(Rand Journal of Econometrics*, vol. 17, 1986, p. 280) — points out that if there were no fixed or sunk costs in land, capital, or people, resources could easily be transferred to optimal uses. If information were perfect or if people could always figure out how to design contracts to cover any contingency, fixed costs would not matter. If people did not try to profit at others' expense, contracts could be drawn loosely and adjustments made as conditions change.

[13] See Alain deJanvry, Marcel Fafchamps and Elisabeth Sadoulet, "Transaction Costs, Public Choice, and Induced Technological Innovations," in Bruce M. Koppel, ed., *Induced Innovation Theory and International Agricultural Development: A Reassessment* (Baltimore and London: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1995).

Collective Action

When producers of a commodity are few, economically powerful, and regionally concentrated, they may find it easier to act collectively to influence public decisions in their favor than if these conditions do not hold. Even if the conditions do not hold, if a commodity is very important in the diets of people in urban areas or if it earns substantial foreign exchange, the public sector still may act to help its producers. However, if producers are neither organized into a powerful collective lobby nor producing an important commodity for urban consumption or export, they will seldom receive public help such as new technologies. This fact may explain why peasant farmers with small land holdings are often neglected when agricultural research priorities are set.

Implications for Induced Innovation

The implications of transactions costs and collective action for the induced-innovation model presented earlier are illustrated in Figure 11-3. Changes in the underlying resource base for the country as a whole might imply that the least-cost path of technical change would occur in the direction of arrow Z (i.e., a path that would use relatively abundant labor and save relatively scarce land). Following path Z might be facilitated by the development of new labor-intensive, biologically-based technologies. However, if a few large-scale producers, due to the presence of transactions costs and collective action, were able to influence public officials so that technology I'_0 were to be developed rather than I'_1, then technical change might occur in the direction of arrow Y (perhaps through the development and adoption of capital-intensive, mechanically-based technologies) rather than arrow Z. Benefits to the large farmers would be maximized but overall economic efficiency gains might be reduced.

The concern over the existence of transactions costs and collective action is not just a concern over the distribution of the benefits of agricultural development. Rather, it is a concern that the rate of economic growth itself will be diminished as well. If, in the previous example, the farmers demanding path Y were few in numbers, and their total value of production compared to the farmers demanding path Z also was small, then the decision to develop technology along path Y would mean a growth rate below the country's potential.

Policy Implications

The above discussion illustrates that technological progress is important for agricultural development, but so too are institutional arrangements and information. Although the theory of induced innovation

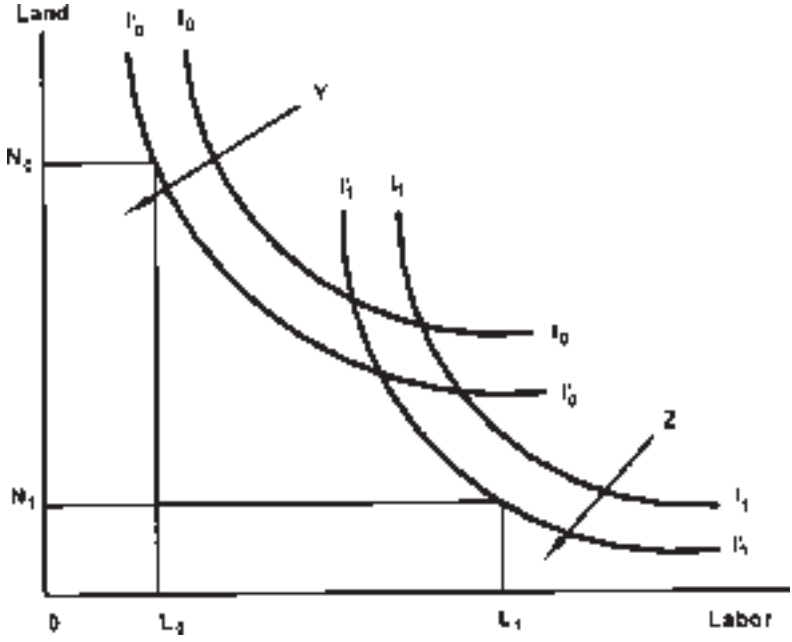


Figure 11-3. Induced technical innovation in the presence of transactions costs. The direction of technical change as dictated by changes in relative factor prices might call for cost-reducing path Z. However, transactions costs and collective action may create pressures to follow path Y, reducing the rate of overall economic growth.

provides an optimistic look at how market forces can work, almost like an invisible hand to stimulate technological and institutional change, the presence of transactions costs and collective action sound a cautionary note that there is an invisible foot out there eager to stomp on that hand. The reality that agricultural and overall economic development has progressed steadily in some countries while stagnating in others, demonstrates that development is neither automatic nor hopeless. An operational agricultural development strategy is needed that recognizes (a) the role that relative prices can play in guiding technical and institutional change, (b) that imperfect information and other transactions costs can sidetrack development unless domestic and international institutions are proactively developed to constrain inappropriate collective action. Inappropriate here is defined as actions that impose gross inefficiencies on the sector or that fail to meet the equity

Improved transportation to reduce transactions costs becomes critical as development proceeds.

goals of a society. In the sections below, several of these institutions are briefly mentioned; they are discussed more thoroughly in subsequent chapters.

Domestic institutions

Land, credit, pricing, marketing, and research policies are all critical to development and adoption of appropriate technologies and for agricultural development in general. Sources of agricultural growth change over time, and few countries today are able to achieve substantial production increases by expanding their land bases. In addition, land currently in production is being degraded in many countries due to population and other pressures on a fragile natural resource base. Ownership of land and other assets is highly unequal in many countries and fragmented in others. Hence one institutional component of an operational agricultural development strategy is to reexamine the arrangements governing land ownership and use and to make any needed adjustments.

Improved transportation, marketing, and communications systems also become critical as development proceeds. Lower transportation, marketing, and communications costs can reduce transactions costs and improve information flows, and thereby facilitate broad-based agricultural growth. Isolated regions tend to be poor regions.

Provision of high-payoff inputs and credit to finance their purchase are additional components of a successful agricultural development strategy. Farmers are rational and relatively efficient given their current resources. Consequently new inputs embodying improved technologies are needed to improve the productivity of farmers in developing countries. Research and technology-transfer policies can facilitate the development and adoption of these technologies. In addition, pricing policies should be designed so as not to discourage the use nor encourage the abuse of improved inputs.

Educational levels of farmers also must be increased to improve their ability to recognize the benefits of and to use the technologies. Education improves the capacity of people to assimilate and use information and thus can help reduce transactions costs.

Macroeconomic and International Institutions

Agricultural development is affected by macroeconomic and trade policies that arise outside the agricultural sector. The levels and types of taxes, spending, and government borrowing can dramatically influence farm prices and input costs. Exchange rates, or the value of the country's currency relative to currencies in other countries, can have major effects on domestic agricultural prices and trade.

In some countries, foreign debt repayments significantly constrain growth and reduce domestic consumption. Internationally influenced interest rates and prices vary substantially over short periods of time, adding an additional measure of unpredictability to debt levels and national incomes. International labor markets for agricultural scientists mean that high salaries draw some of the brightest and most educated scientists to more developed countries and international agencies. Foreign aid is a source of capital and technical assistance for some countries, but is often unreliable and usually comes with strings attached. Developing countries must carefully design macroeconomic and trade policies that do not discriminate against their agricultural sector if they expect it to grow.

Enlightened Self Interest

Any operational agricultural or economic development strategy must (1) recognize individual incentives; (2) consider the lack of perfect information; and (3) include institutional arrangements to offset externalities and other market imperfections. Individuals must feel it is in their self-interest before necessary institutional changes will occur.

Information is valuable, imperfect, and costly to acquire, and can exhibit economies of scale in acquisition. These attributes of information

provide the incentives and the means for some people to use the advantage they have from asset ownership, military power, or their willingness to engage in unscrupulous behavior to acquire information before others.

In fact, even if all assets were initially distributed equally, unless information were available equally to all or unless enforceable rules were instituted to constrain dishonest behavior, the willingness of some to gain "unfair" advantage would eventually lead to unequal distributions of assets. In primitive societies, information is basically available to all, and inappropriate activities are constrained by social and cultural norms. However, as societies become more complex concurrently with economic development, information becomes more imperfect and new institutions are needed to replace the rules that no longer constrain behavior.[14]

People must feel it is in their interest to design and enforce particular institutional changes, and they need to know the implications of those changes. Institutional change involves costs because some people benefit from current arrangements and will fight any change.

The following six suggestions might help lower the cost of institutional change through enlightened self-interest:

- First, in those countries where asset ownership has become so unequal that inefficiencies in property rights are retarding agricultural development, asset redistributions (particularly land) are needed, usually with compensation arrangements (so that the changes will in fact occur).
- Second, improvements in education, communications, and transportation can improve information flows and the ability of a large number of people in the country to act on information.
- Third, decentralized industrial growth should lower labor adjustment costs (and facilitate employment), reduce externalities associated with urban crowding, improve market performances in rural areas, and help stimulate agricultural growth.
- Fourth, social science research can help lower the cost of designing and examining the implications of alternative institutional changes affecting agriculture.
- Fifth, a government structure is needed that includes enforceable laws to protect citizens from each other and from the government itself. Government policies and regulations can also be used to reduce

[14] These ideas are similar to those expressed by North ("Institutions, Transactions Costs, and Economic Growth"), pp. 420–5. North notes that impersonal exchange with third-party enforcement is essential for economic growth. Third-party enforcement implies that legal institutions exist.

market failure. Well-functioning and transparent legal systems with independent judiciaries can help facilitate transition toward enhanced institutions.

- Sixth, improved and enforceable international laws and other institutions are needed to reduce incentives for international abuses of power

SUMMARY

Several theories of agricultural development have been proposed over time. Expansion or conservation of resources, diffusion, use of high-payoff inputs, and induced innovation are some of the major ones. Technical and institutional changes are key components of any operational agricultural development strategy. These changes can be induced by relative price changes resulting from change in resource endowments and product demand. Because of transactions costs, collective action, and the realities of human behavior, agricultural sectors may not follow an economically efficient development path. The distribution of assets has important implications in the presence of transactions costs and collective action. If land is unequally distributed, then, because of transactions costs, the demands (for technologies, inputs, policies, etc.) of one group of producers are likely to be very different from those of others. Collective action can then pull the development process from its optimal path. Institutional changes to improve information flows and constrain exploitive behavior can become critical to agricultural development.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Agricultural research and extension
Asset distribution
Asset fixity and adjustment costs
Communications
Compensation schemes
Diffusion theory
Enlightened self-interest
Externalities
High-payoff inputs
Induced institutional innovation
Induced technical innovation
Innovation possibilities curve
International factors
Invisible hand
Location theory
Macroeconomic factors
Market failure
Meta production functions
Perfect information
Resource conservation
Resource exploitation
Transactions costs

Looking Ahead

In this chapter we considered theories of agricultural development and suggested a broad framework for operational agricultural development strategies. In the following five chapters we consider sector-specific

means of generating particular technical and institutional changes to stimulate agricultural growth. In later chapters we consider macroeconomic and international factors. We begin in Chapter 12 by focusing on agricultural research and extension.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1 Contrast the resource exploitation, resource conservation, and diffusion theories of agricultural development.
2 Why is the resource exploitation theory of agricultural development less useful today than it was historically?
3 Why has the importance of resource conservation increased is recent years?
4 What are the limitations of the diffusion theory of agricultural development?
5 Why has the high-payoff input theory become widely accepted?
6 What criticisms do Hayami and Ruttan make of the high-payoff input theory?
7 Describe the theory of induced technological innovation. Be sure to identify both the importance of relative input price changes and changes in the relative prices of inputs to outputs.
8 Describe the induced institutional innovation theory.
9 Contrast transactions costs and collective actions.
10 What are the implications of transactions costs and collective action for institutional innovation?
11 What do we mean by the term *enlightened self-interest*?
12 How might information be made more accessible to farmers?
13 What are the implications of a grossly unequal asset ownership pattern for economic growth?
14 Why are improved international institutions needed for agricultural development?
15 Why does Japanese agriculture have much higher output per hectare than U.S. agriculture, but much lower output per worker?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Hayami, Yujiro, and Vernon W. Ruttan, *Agricultural Development: An International Perspective* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1985), Chapters 3 and 4.

Koppel, Bruce M., ed., *Induced Innovation Theory and International Agricultural Development: A Reassessment* (Baltimore and London: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1995).

North, Douglas, "Institutions, Transactions Costs, and Economic Growth," *Economic Inquiry,* vol. 25, 1987, pp. 415–228.

Ruttan, Vernon W., T*echnology, Growth and Development: An Induced Innovation Perspective* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2001).

Williamson, Oliver, *The Economic Institutions of Capitalism* (New York: Free Press, 1985).

CHAPTER 12

Research, Extension, and Education

> The man who farms as his forefathers did cannot produce much food no matter how rich the land or how hard he works.
>
> — Theodore W. Shultz[1]

THIS CHAPTER

1 Discusses the role of public and private agricultural research in generating improved technologies and institutions and the effects of those technologies on income growth and distribution and on food security

2 Describes the major types of agricultural research, and factors influencing the transfer of research results from one country to another

3 Examines the role of technology and information transfer mechanisms such as public agricultural extension and non-governmental organizations

THE ROLE of AGRICULTURAL RESEARCH

A major determinant of growth in agricultural production is the effectiveness of agricultural research. Through research, the productivity of existing resources is increased, new higher-productivity inputs and ways of producing food are developed, and new or improved institutional arrangements are designed. Examples of research outputs include higher-yielding plant varieties, better methods for controlling insects and diseases, increased knowledge about methods for manipulating plant or animal genes, and designs for improved agricultural policies. Research creates the potential for increased agricultural production, moderated food prices, increased foreign exchange, reduced pressure

[1] Theodore W. Schultz, *Transforming Traditional Agriculture* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1964), chapter 1, p.3.

on the natural resource base, and many other positive results. Let's consider in more detail the nature of these effects and the possibilities for negative as well as positive outcomes.

Over time, agricultural research has been associated with improvements in incomes and reductions in poverty. It is estimated that without the productivity improvements generated through agricultural research, an additional 350 million hectares of land, about the size of India, would have been needed to feed the world's population growth since 1960. Productivity gains have thus saved highly erosive fragile soils, reduced deforestation, and helped preserve biodiversity.[2] Specific research successes include a new African rice variety that is more productive and better suited to harsh environmental conditions, cassava varieties that are resistant to cassava mosaic virus and raise yields by 10 tons per hectare, and enhanced strains of tilapia fish that grow 60 percent faster than traditional strains.[3] Despite consistent evidence of high rates of return to agricultural research, pressures to reduce funding for it are frequent.

Impacts on Agricultural Productivity

Productivity increases generated through agricultural research imply a shifting upward of agricultural production functions. The simple example of increasing the output per unit of an input, say fertilizer, is illustrated in Figure 12-1. If a more responsive seed variety is made available through research, output produced per kilo of fertilizer may increase. The research that produced that higher quality seed may be either public or private or both. Public research is conducted in national research institutions, public universities, or government-sponsored research in private entities. Private research is financed by private companies.

Research and subsequent technical change in agriculture raises returns to producers. The value of agricultural production added per worker is shown in Table 12-1 for India, China, Indonesia, Nigeria, and Brazil (five of the more populous countries of the world) for the time periods 1979–81 and 1998–2000. Despite rapid population growth, which might be expected to push production onto more marginal agricultural lands, agricultural productivity per worker rose substantially in each of these countries, about doubling in China and almost tripling in Brazil. This same pattern is found in most other developing countries,

[2] See CGIAR Science Council, *Science for Agricultural Development; Changing Contexts and New Opportunities* (Rome, Italy: Science Council Secretariat, 2005).

[3] See CGIAR Science Council, *Science for Agricultural Development,* for details.

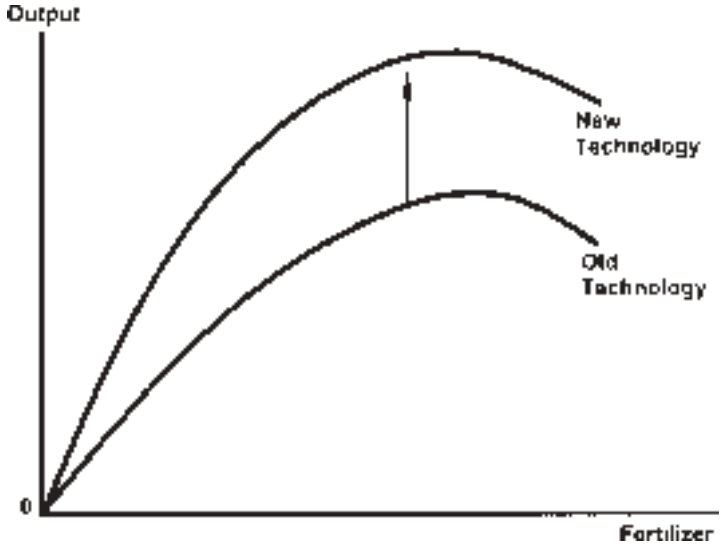


Figure 12-1. The effect of research on input productivity. New technologies generated through research can shift the production response function upward.

Table 12-1. Agricultural Value-added Per Worker (2000 dollars)

Country	1980	1990	2000	2003
India	$273	$348	$389	$406
China	$163	$245	$346	$349
Indonesia	$425	$480	$522	$574
Nigeria	$491	$578	$774	$871
Brazil	$1,113	$1,628	$2,585	$3,227

Source: World Bank, *World Development Indicators* On-line Database.

although output per capita for the total population has declined in several sub-Saharan Africa countries where rapid population growth has outpaced slow productivity improvements.

The examples shown in Figure 12-1 and Table 12-1 are oversimplified in the sense that most new technologies require different mixes of inputs; not all other inputs are held constant. Measurement of total productivity gains due to research requires netting out the cost of any additional inputs employed with the improved technologies. The resulting total net cost reduction per unit of output produced can then be

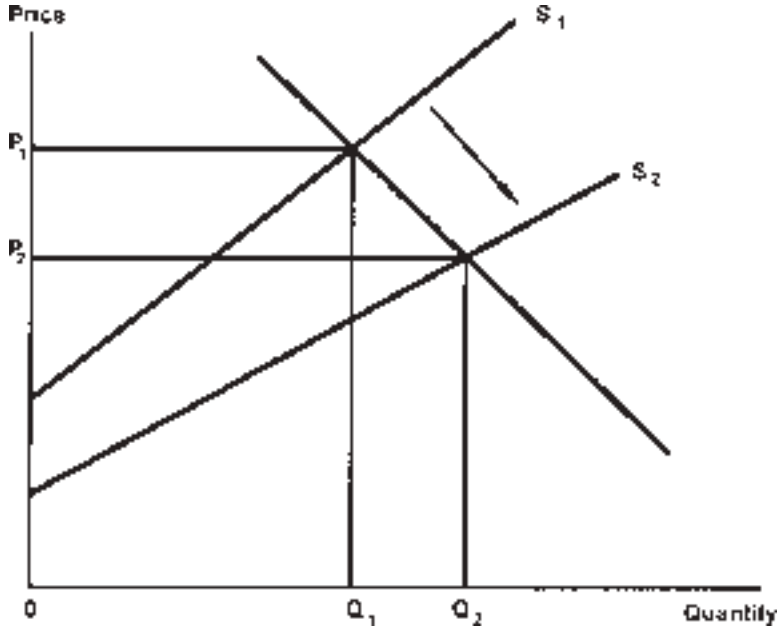


Figure 12-2. Effect of research on supply. Agricultural research reduces the cost per unit of output, thereby causing the supply curve to shift down to the right.

used to summarize the total productivity effect. This total productivity effect is illustrated in Figure 12-2. New or improved technology shifts the original commodity supply curve (S_1) downward to S_2 because the supply curve is a marginal cost curve and the new technology has reduced the cost of production. The new lower cost of production per unit of output means that more output is produced at a lower price. This lower price is good for consumers of the product, but producers might be hurt.

Many studies have been conducted to estimate the economic returns to society from public research investments aimed at achieving these productivity increases. A recent study found more than 1,700 distinct estimates of the returns to various research programs around the world.[4] A summary of the results is presented in Table 12-2. Individual

[4] See Julian M. Alston, Connie Chan-Kang, Michele C. Marra, Philip G. Pardey, and T. J. Wyatt, "A Meta-Analysis of Rates of Return to Agricultural R&D," *IFPRI Research Report 113* (Washington, D.C.: International Food Policy Research Institute, 2000).

programs and projects vary widely in their estimated returns, but on the whole agricultural research has been a highly profitable investment for the societies that undertake it. Both mean and median annual rates of return are well above government cost of capital, or earnings on alternative investments. National leaders have a responsibility to invest scarce public resources in activities that yield high returns.

Increased agricultural productivity not only creates the potential for higher real incomes to producers through lower costs and to consumers through lower food prices, but can also help a country's agriculture become more competitive in world markets. Efficiency gained through higher agricultural productivity can be turned into foreign exchange earnings or savings as a result of additional exports or reduced imports.

The fact that agricultural research has yielded high returns in many countries in the past does not imply that these returns are guaranteed for all research systems or types of research. Each country must carefully consider the appropriate type of research organization and portfolio of activities, given its resource base and special needs (see Box 12-1 for an example of a research portfolio). This issue is discussed in more detail below.

Distributional and Nutritional Effects

Agricultural producers at different income levels, with different farm sizes, in different locations, and with different land tenure arrangements can gain or lose as a result of new technologies and institutional changes generated through research. These gains and losses depend on market conditions, among other factors. Consumers are major beneficiaries of agricultural research due to falling product prices, but the benefits they receive vary as well by income level and are influenced by the nature of the research portfolio. Returns to land versus labor are also influenced by research. Nutritional implications follow from these differential producer, consumer, and factor-income effects.

Farm Size and Tenure: The issue of whether improved agricultural technologies benefit large farms more than they do small farms has been the subject of substantial debate. Farm size is not a major impediment to adoption of new biological technologies such as improved seeds, which are the major focus of developing country agricultural research. However, larger farms do tend to be among the first adopters of many new technologies, probably because it pays large farms more to invest in obtaining information about the technologies. Owners of large farms may have more formal education that helps them process

TABLE 12-2. Rates of Return to Agricultural Research by Commodity Orientation

Commodity orientation	Number of estimates (count)	Mean rate of return (percent)	Median rate of return (percent)
Multicommodity[a]	436	80	47
All agriculture	342	76	44
Crops and livestock	80	106	59
Unspecified[b]	14	42	36
Field crops[c]	916	74	44
Maize	170	134	47
Wheat	155	50	40
Rice	81	75	51
Livestock[d]	233	121	53
Tree crops[e]	108	88	33
Resources[f]	78	38	17
Forestry	60	42	14
All studies	1,772	81	44

a Includes research identified as "all agriculture" or "crops and livestock", as well as "unspecified."

b Includes estimates that did not explicitly identify the commodity focus of the research.

c Includes all crops, barley, beans, cassava, sugarcane, groundnuts, maize, millet, other crops, pigeon pea, chickpea, potato, rice, sesame, sorghum, and wheat.

d Includes beef, swine, poultry, sheep, goats, all livestock, dairy, other livestock, and pasture.

e Includes "other tree" and "fruit and nuts."

f Includes fishery and forestry.

Source: Julian M. Alston, Connie Chan-Kang, Michele C. Marra, Philip G. Pardey and T. J. Wyatt, "A Meta-Analysis of Rates of Return to Agricultural R&D," *IFPRI Research Report 113* (Washington, D.C.: International Food Policy Research Institute, 2000), Table 15, p. 58.

the information, and a greater ability to absorb risk. Large farms often have better access to the credit needed to purchase modern inputs. Most small farms in the same region as large farms do eventually adopt the technologies, but the first adopters typically receive greater income gains from them. Late adopters may be faced with lower producer prices because supplies shift outward as early adopters increase output. Of course even if all producers in a given region adopted a scale-neutral technology at the same time, absolute income differences would widen

BOX 12-1.
MAJOR TYPES of RESEARCH in the NATIONAL AGRICULTURAL RESEARCH INSTITUTION in ECUADOR

The listing below of the major types of agricultural research activities in Ecuador provides an example of a typical applied research portfolio for a small developing country. Given its limited research budget, the country must decide which commodities to concentrate on and how much to emphasize each type of research.

1. **Plant breeding:** development of new lines and varieties that yield more and are resistant to insects and diseases; maintenance of a germplasm collection
2. **Cultural practices:** determination of optimal planting densities, improved harvesting methods
3. **Crop protection:** improved methods for control of insects, diseases, weeds, nematodes, including biological, cultural, and chemical methods
4. **Soils and fertilizers:** development of improved soil conservation methods, chemical analysis of soils including macro- and micro-element analysis, toxicity studies, economic analysis soil conservation, and fertilization practices
5. **Water management:** studies of water needs, improved irrigation methods, salinity control
6. **Mechanization:** design of improved agricultural implements
7. **Socioeconomics:** diagnosis of constraints to technology adoption, monitoring and evaluation of research, analysis of farm management practices and opportunities
8. **Technology validation**: on-farm transferring, testing, and validation of new technologies
9. **Seed production**: basic and registered seed production, technologies for seed production, improved vegetative propagation
10. **Post-harvest technologies:** improved methods for storage, drying, cleaning, packaging, and transporting agricultural products
11. **Agro-forestry:** improved systems of agro-forestry and of pasturing forests
12. **Animal improvement:** animal breeding, introduction and selection of animals from outside the country, adaptation of animals to different climates
13. **Animal health:** prevention and cure of diseases and external and internal parasites
14. **Animal nutrition**: improved forages, analysis of concentrates and other supplementary feeding programs, evaluation of nutritional deficiencies, nutritive value of feeds

Source: Julio Palomino, Planning Director, National Agricultural Research Institution, Ecuador.

because the increased returns per hectare are spread over more hectares on larger farms.

As noted in Chapter 11, not all technologies and institutional changes are scale-neutral. For example, certain types of mechanical technologies can be used profitably on large but not on small farms. With differences in transactions costs, large farmers may press research systems for research results suitable for them even if the country's resource base on average would dictate a different type of technology. Also, while many technologies are scale-neutral and some are biased toward large farms, it may be difficult to generate technologies biased toward small farms. All this implies that reducing transactions costs through improved information is important, but it also implies that research may not be the best policy tool for achieving distributional objectives.

Tenant farmers represent an important producer group in many countries. It is difficult to generalize about the effects of research on the incomes of tenants versus landlords. One might expect that improved biological technologies would make labor more productive and thus help tenants, but the distribution of income gains is influenced by other factors as well. If each landlord has several tenants, so that the average size of landlord holdings is greater than the average size of tenants' farms, then the average landlord would gain relative to the average tenant if each received equal shares of income gains per hectare.

Contractual arrangements influence the distribution of research benefits, and the arrangements may change as well as a result of new technologies.[5] If the tenant pays the landlord a fixed *share* of the output, the division of any income gains after adopting the new technology depends on the relative sharing of both output and production costs. But if the tenant pays a fixed *amount* to the landlord, the tenant can keep the income gains until the landlord raises the rent. Often, increases in land productivity are bid into land rents, and land-owners are able to capture these rents by changing tenancy agreements.

Regional Disparities: Regional differences in resource endowments and basic infrastructure can influence the distribution of research gains among producers. In fact, interregional disparities in the net benefits from research tend to be larger than intraregional disparities. Data from India indicate that the new rice and wheat varieties that increased production so dramatically in that country in the late 1960s benefited primarily the more productive wheat and rice states. Productivity

[5] See George W. Norton, Philip G. Pardey, and Julian Alston, *Science Under Scarcity: Principles and Practice for Agricultural Research Evaluation and Priority Setting* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1995), Chapter 3.

increased dramatically in the country's northern region. At the same time, during 1967 to 1976, the central and eastern regions actually had decreasing rice yields. These interregional yield differentials diminished over time, but the technologies clearly benefited certain regions more than others.[6] The introduction of modern crop varieties has exacerbated interregional disparities in many countries because those technologies have often required irrigation and greater use of farm chemicals. Producers in dryland areas and regions with poor infrastructure for transporting fertilizer have been disadvantaged. Broadening the scope of agricultural research and decentralizing the research structure should help reduce regional disparities, although rates of return on research aimed at more productive regions are consistently higher than those for marginal areas.

Producers and Consumers: The impacts of technological change on the distribution of income between producers and consumers depend to a large extent on the degree to which quantity demanded responds to price changes. If producers face an elastic demand for their output, increased supplies will place little downward pressure on prices so producers rather than consumers capture most of the benefits of the innovation. Export crops, for example, tend to have relatively elastic demands, and thus new technologies for the production of these commodities tend to favor producers. Many commodities that are basic staples in the diet have relatively inelastic demands, as discussed in Chapter 3. The benefits of research on these commodities flow largely to consumers through lower prices.

The poor spend a higher proportion of their income on food, and so benefit more than others from any decline in food prices due to research-induced increases in food supplies. This benefit is received by both the urban and the rural poor. The rural poor are often landless laborers, who purchase food, or small owner-operators or tenants, who retain a large part of their output for home consumption. Scobie and Posada found in Colombia, for example, that while the lower 50 percent of Colombian households received about 15 percent of total national household income, they captured nearly 70 percent of the net benefits of the rice research program.[7] These benefits to consumers flow

[6] J.S. Sarma and Vasant P. Gandhi, Production and Consumption of Foodgrains in India: Implications of Accelerated Economic Growth and Poverty Alleviation, International Food Policy Research Institute Research Report No. 81, Washington, D.C., 1990, pp. 17–34.

[7] Grant M. Scobie and Rafael Posada T., "The Impact of Technical Change on Income Distribution: The Case of Rice in Colombia," *American Journal of Agricultural Economics*, vol. 60, no.1 (February 1978), pp. 85–92.

across regions, especially where adequate transportation exists, and dampen the interregional disparities to producers mentioned above.

Land, Labor, and Capital: New technologies allow the same output to be produced with fewer resources, thus freeing up those resources to be used elsewhere in the economy. The dual-economy model described in Chapter 6 illustrated the potential for labor released from agriculture to become a fundamental source of industrial growth. However, the effect of technical change on the demand for resources is influenced by the inherent nature of the technology and by the nature of product demand.

Some new technologies result in proportionate savings of all inputs, while others save labor and use land or vice versa. For example, a new machine to cultivate the land may save labor and require a farmer to use more land to justify the cost. A higher-yielding rice variety may require more labor but produce more per unit of land. If a technology is neutral with respect to its effect on land and labor use, and if the demand for the product is elastic, the demand for both land and labor may grow proportionately following adoption of the technology. The reason is that, with elastic demand, total revenue increases with a shift out in the supply curve, providing increased returns to all resources. On the other hand, if product demand is inelastic, a neutral technical change can reduce the demand for all inputs proportionately.

BOX 12-2.
THE GREEN REVOLUTION

The term *green revolution* was coined in 1968 by William S. Gaud, former Administrator of the U.S. Agency for International Development, to describe the dramatic wheat harvests that had been achieved in 1966 to 1968 in India and Pakistan. The term gained further publicity in 1970 when Norman Borlaug was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize for his research that produced the high-yielding, semi-dwarf Mexican wheats that had performed so well in Asia and Latin America. At the same time that the semi-dwarf wheats were making their dramatic entry, IRRI released new semi-dwarf rice with the same dramatic effect.

The big innovation of the green revolution was developing varieties of wheat and rice that would not fall down (lodge) when nitrogen fertilizers were applied. These new lines of plants also tended to be earlier maturing, to produce many shoots (tillers), and to be less sensitive to day length.

Source: Donald L. Plucknett, "Saving Lives Through Agricultural Research," Consultative Group on International Agricultural Research, Issues in Agriculture Paper No. 1 (Washington, D.C., May 1991), pp. 9–10.

Most new technologies are biased toward the use of one resource or another. Many of the higher-yielding varieties that comprised the "Green Revolution" (see Box 12-2) require significantly more labor input per unit of land. As a result, strong poverty-reducing impacts of the green revolution were transmitted through labor markets. In countries where markets are highly competitive and input prices reflect true input scarcity, the induced-innovation model presented in Chapter 11 predicts that new technologies will be developed to save the relatively scarce resources. However, if input prices are distorted, externalities exist, or transactions costs are high, technical change will not necessarily be biased in a direction that saves the scarcest resources; this ''inappropriate'' bias will thus reduce the rate of overall agricultural growth below its potential.

Because so many factors influence the effect of new technologies on resource use, it is difficult to generalize about the effect of research on employment, on the long-run returns to land, and so on. One implication is that agricultural research is a relatively blunt instrument for implementing a policy of distributing income to particular resources.

Nutritional Implications: Agricultural research can influence human nutrition through several mechanisms. First, if new technologies are aimed at poor farmers, a high proportion of the resulting income streams will be spent on improving the diet. If the technologies are aimed at commodities produced and consumed at home, the effect will be direct. If the technologies affect export crops produced by small farms, the extra income may be spent on buying food from others. Even if the new technologies are suitable only for large farms producing export crops, the influence on nutrition of the poor may be positive if the demand for labor increases. However, this employment effect is not at all certain and depends on the factor biases discussed above.

An important nutritional effect of research comes from the increased availability of food at lower prices. As supply shifts out against a downward sloping demand curve, all consumers benefit from lower food prices that improve their real wages.

Research can be used to reduce fluctuations in food supply, prices, and income and thereby alter nutrition. Some of the severest malnutrition occurs in rural areas during years of low incomes due to lower than normal production. Research on drought-tolerant varieties can help reduce production fluctuations and help lower malnutrition.

It is difficult to draw conclusions about the nutritional implications of a particular portfolio of research activities because the sources of nutritional impacts identified above can act counter to one another. For example, a labor-saving technology used to produce export crops

might lower wages and not induce changes in food supply, thus making landless laborers worse off. Some concern has been voiced about the nutrition effects of research devoted to export-crop production. If numerous producers switch from food crops to export crops, then there is potential for domestic food prices to rise, and such a rise would hurt the urban and landless poor. However, there is little empirical evidence of this switch, and nutritional levels are perhaps most influenced by research that generates the largest income gains, particularly if those gains are realized by low-income producers. Therefore, focusing research disproportionately on commodities with high nutritional content may result in less income than if the research were focused on other commodities. For example, improving the productivity of a vegetable export crop in Guatemala may improve the family's nutrition more than improving the productivity of its maize crop, because the former will lead to a greater increase in farm income and therefore the family's ability to buy food.

Environmental Effects of Research

Concerns over environmental degradation in developing countries were discussed in Chapter 9. Deforestation, soil erosion, desertification, pesticide pollution, etc., have become serious problems in many countries, and research can play a significant role in their solution.

First, new technologies for mitigating soil erosion, providing alternative energy sources, and substituting for chemical pesticides can be generated through research. Second, research can be used to design improved government policies that provide increased incentives to adopt management practices and help sustain the integrity of the natural resource base. Third, the higher incomes generated through research-induced productivity increases will put downward pressure on population growth in the long run. Fourth, higher income streams will also reduce the pressures to abuse the environment in the short run just to obtain food and fuel. Finally, income growth will create more demand for environmental quality. Thus agricultural research is critically important for encouraging environmentally sound and sustainable agricultural growth.

Research organizations have been criticized in the past for devoting too many resources to research related to modern inputs such as fertilizer, pesticides, and irrigation. Excessive and improper use of these inputs can cause environmental damage. An additional criticism has been that too little research is aimed at resource-conserving technologies, such as integrated pest management and methods for reducing soil erosion. There is some truth in these claims, although research on

sustainable farming practices has accelerated (see Box 12-3). Also, market failures tend to cause an undervaluation of environmental services, as discussed in Chapter 9. Because of this undervaluation, producers and consumers often do not demand resource-conserving technologies. In the long run, one of the best ways to combat forces leading to environmental degradation is to raise incomes and reduce poverty. Research can be an effective means of raising incomes, though in the short run, more agricultural research should, perhaps, be aimed at conserving environmental resources.

Other Research Issues

Institutional Change: Much agricultural research results in new or improved technologies that are embodied in inputs or methods of production. However, agricultural research can be directed toward the design of new or improved policies or institutional changes. In other words, agricultural research can help lower the cost of adjusting institutions to the changing physical, natural resource, economic, and biological environments. A static or distorted institutional environment can be as great a hindrance to agricultural development as can a static technology base.

Credit policies, marketing and pricing policies, land tenure rules, and natural resource policies are examples of institutional arrangements

BOX 12-3.
RESEARCH and the ENVIRONMENT:
THE CASE of the CASSAVA MEALYBUG

The cassava mealybug was accidentally introduced from Latin America into Africa in the early 1970s and soon began causing severe damage to cassava crops. Because some 200 million Africans depend on cassava as a staple food, this damage became a deep concern.

Researchers at the International Institute of Tropical Agriculture (IITA) in Africa, in collaboration with those at the International Center for Tropical Agriculture (CIAT) in Latin America, found a means of biological control. Importation and distribution of the parasitic wasp *Epidinocasis lopez*, a natural enemy of the mealybug from Latin America, has led to dramatic reductions in African mealybug populations with biological methods. No extensive pesticides are required, and the small-scale African farmers are freed from a damaging pest by nature itself.

Source: John Walsh, *Preserving the Options: Food Productivity and Sustainability*, Consultative Group for International Agricultural Research, Issues in Agriculture, No. 2 (Washington, D.C., 1991), pp. 7–8.

that can be improved through research. Institutional changes that improve the flow of market information and reduce externalities are particularly important.

Public versus Private Sector Research: Just because agricultural research is important to development does not imply that the public sector must carry it out. Typically, the public sector is heavily involved in agricultural research in both developed and developing countries, but the private sector is heavily involved in many countries, and increasingly so. Why does the private sector not provide all the needed research? There are three basic reasons. First, individual farms are too small to do all their own research, although they often cooperate with public research institutions and certainly do a great deal of experimenting. Second, and most important, for many types of research it is difficult for one firm to exclude other firms from capturing the benefits from the research; in other words, a firm may incur substantial costs in conducting research but, once the research is completed, other firms can make use of the results without incurring much cost. Thus, the firm has little incentive to do the research in the first place. Third, many types of research are highly risky, so that many firms are hesitant to take the risk for fear of incurring a substantial loss.

Certain types of research, particularly applied research related to mechanical and chemical innovations, are less risky and potentially patentable and thus attract sizable private research activity. Some types of biological and soils research, on the other hand, have historically been more difficult to patent and have thus been primarily conducted in the public sector. However, the patentability of biological research has increased in recent years and has played a major role in the development of new, genetically modified crops and animals. As a country develops, the research role of the private sector typically increases in developing and marketing improved seeds as well as in mechanical and chemical innovations. However, there is often a time lag between the development of public sector research and the establishment of substantial private sector research activity. One action that a country can take to promote private research is to establish enforceable property rights (patents, licenses, etc.) over research results, not just for mechanical and chemical technologies but for biological technologies as well.

Intellectual Property Rights: Intellectual property rights (IPRs) refer to legal protections, granted for a defined period of time, to scientific, technological, and artistic inventions. Copyrights, trademarks, patents, plant breeders' rights, and trade secret laws are examples of ways that intellectual property rights are granted. Legal systems differ

by country and hence the types, extent, and duration of rights granted vary as well. Patents and plant breeders' rights are the most important forms of intellectual property protection for agricultural research results and technologies. Over time, copyrights are becoming more important as well because the databases that contain information about plant genes can often be copyrighted.

Patents are the strongest type of intellectual property, as the patent holder can exclude all others from making, using, selling, or offering to sell the invention in the country while the patent is in force (unless others purchase a license to use it). To be patentable, an invention must be new, useful, not obvious, and be disclosed so that others can pay a license to use and replicate it. Plant Breeders' Rights (PBRs) grant protection to crop varieties that are new, distinct, uniform, and stable. Patents and PBRs give a monopoly on commercializing the invention or variety for a defined period of time, which allows the inventor or breeder to recover their costs. This protection therefore gives them incentives to invent or breed that they otherwise would not have.

Many developing countries are still in the process of developing and implementing an intellectual property protection system for plants and animals. Details of IPR systems vary from country to country, but those who lag behind run the danger that private firms and individuals will be reluctant to develop or sell products with new technologies embedded in them in their countries. Developing countries have grown fearful that as more and more technologies (including genes) are covered by IPRs, their people and firms will be discouraged from using the technologies and resulting products because of the high costs of licensing the technologies or paying for the higher-cost products. This issue has been a topic of discussion and action in multilateral trade negotiations since the early 1990s, and is discussed more in Chapter 17.

NATURE, ORGANIZATION, and TRANSFER of RESEARCH

Some research is very ''applied'' and yields immediate practical results. Other research is more "basic" or fundamental and may not yield results for many years. Research systems themselves are organized in a variety of different ways. Let's consider the major categories of agricultural research and organizational arrangements.

Categories of Agricultural Research

Agricultural research can be categorized into basic research, applied research, adaptive research, and testing**.** ***Basic*** research develops knowledge with little or no specific use in mind. Studies of evolution, genetics, biochemical processes, and so on, may discover fundamental

principles of substantial significance to more applied researchers, but the specific end use of the research results are often difficult to identify prior to the research. Most basic research is carried out in developed countries or in the largest of the developing countries.

Applied agricultural research is aimed at solving particular biological, chemical, physical, or social science problems affecting one or more countries or areas in a state or region. Development of new plant varieties, methods for controlling specific insects and diseases in plants or animals, and animal nutrition research are examples of applied research. Applied research may take place at international research centers or in national research systems.

Adaptive research takes the results of applied research and modifies or adapts them to local conditions within a country or region. A plant variety developed for a broad area may need to be modified for a specific microclimate. Fertilizer recommendations, methods for controlling soil erosion, and many other technologies require adaptation to the local setting. Most of this research takes place on local experiment stations or on farms.

Ecuadorian scientists recording disease data in an applied pest management experiment on plantain.

Testing research is conducted on local experiment stations or on farms to assess whether research results from other locations are suitable for solving local problems. Improved pesticides, management practices, or plant varieties are examples of research results that may be tested. All countries conduct some testing research, but for very small countries with limited resources, testing may represent a large portion of total research. Much testing is conducted by farmers themselves.

These categories of research are linked and dependent on each other. A research center may be involved in several categories.

Biotechnology

Much applied and adaptive agricultural research involves what has been called *biotechnology* research. *Traditional biotechnology* research includes well-established techniques in plant breeding, biological control of pests, conventional animal vaccine development, and many other types of research. *Modern biotechnology research* includes use of recombinant DNA, monoclonal antibodies, and novel bio-processing techniques, among others.

Modern biotechnology provides new tools and strategies for increasing agricultural production. The tools for improving agricultural output range from novel approaches to cell and tissue culture to the genetic manipulation of biological material. Modern biotechnology is based on several new technologies. One of them, recombinant DNA, often called *genetic engineering*, enables the essential genetic material in cells, DNA, to be manipulated. It offers the possibility of transferring genetic material from one species to another, thereby transferring a useful genetic trait. Such a transfer is also called *transgenics*.

Another biotechnology technique, monoclonal antibodies, is used to detect individual proteins produced by cells, thereby providing a method for rapid and specific diagnosis of animal and plant diseases. A third, novel bio-processing technique involves new cell and tissue culture technologies that enable rapid propagation of living cells. These techniques provide improved methods for large-scale production of useful compounds by the microbial or enzymatic degradation of various substrates.

Modern biotechnology is also used to map out the location and functions of genes in individual species. By identifying whether "markers" on a chromosome exist for a specific gene or genes that control a trait of interest, a process called *marker-assisted breeding* can be used to speed up the breeding process to incorporate a useful trait in a new variety.

The types of products that modern biotechnology can potentially produce include new plant varieties, new animal breeds, plant and animal growth hormones, bio-pesticides, bio-fertilizers, diagnostic reagents for plant and animal diseases, and enzymes and food additives. They may improve the tolerance of plants and animals to particular pests and stresses such as drought, and increase the efficiency with which plants and livestock utilize nutrients, or increase a plant's nutritional quality (for example, rice with increased vitamin A or iron). They may reduce the need for agrichemicals.

Modern biotechnologies are on the cutting edge of science, and if developing countries are to be successful in developing their own modern biotechnologies, or adapting technologies produced elsewhere, they will need scientists trained in microbiology and biochemistry. These countries will need to integrate modern biotechnology into traditional biotechnology research programs. They will need to put in place or refine bio-safety rules, and to resolve rules on intellectual property rights, as the rights to many aspects of the technologies are patented and owned by private companies.

Benefits and Costs of Modern Biotechnology: Concerns have been expressed by some about the health and environmental safety of modern biotechnologies, especially for the technologies that involve transferring genes across species. All technologies involve some risks, and each country needs to develop and implement a regulatory system that allows it to test and monitor the safety of its new agricultural technologies. The risks associated with modern biotechnologies are thought to be relatively low, and many of the technologies can have positive effects on health and the environment through effects on reducing pesticide use. However, there can be no certainty that adverse health and environmental effects will not occur. Consumers, especially in Europe, have expressed strong reservations about consuming foods produced with the use of biotechnology. One concern has been the possibility that genes, say, from a herbicide-tolerant crop, might transfer through pollen to another species, creating perhaps a super-weed that would be difficult to control with a herbicide. Gene transfer across species does occur frequently, although odds of creating a super-weed are slim. Another concern is whether people may have an allergy to a transgenic crop. A third concern is whether people should be attempting to alter nature, although many types of agricultural research in addition to genetically modified organisms could be subject to this same concern.

Economic concerns have also been raised with respect to whether a few companies might end up controlling many of the intellectual property rights associated with the genes and to the transformation

processes, thereby gaining some monopoly power. If they did gain such power, they might charge farmers a high price for their seeds. Countries, however, can regulate companies and have their public research systems enter into joint ventures with the private sector to ensure freedom of access to seeds at reasonable prices.

Biotechnologies are just one of many potential means of increasing agricultural productivity in developing countries, and perhaps the greatest danger is that developing countries forgo the food and income growth that the technologies may afford them.[8] In 2008, approximately 125 million hectares of transgenic crops — about 8 percent of the total crop area in the world — were grown in 25 countries, 15 of them developing countries. However, planting of transgenic crops in Africa has been limited to South Africa and Burkina Faso to date.

Some have feared that the new seeds will cost too much for farmers in developing countries, as private firms attempt to capture their research costs through only selling seeds of crops that are hybrids or that have a "terminator gene" embedded in them. Hybrids or terminator genes would force farmers to purchase new seeds each time they plant or the seeds will not grow. Due to the concerns being raised on this issue, seed companies have not employed the terminator gene, although they have emphasized hybrids to protect their investment. The public sector has also been involved in biotechnology research in many countries to help ensure that transgenic seeds are available at a reasonable price or for open-pollinated varieties for which seeds can be saved and replanted.

Several studies have documented potentially large economic benefits that would accrue from increased use of biotechnologies in developing countries.[9] These benefits would be realized by consumers through lower food prices and through increased nutritional quality. Producers might also gain through lower costs of production. If developing countries do not pursue agricultural biotechnologies, they may be placed at a competitive disadvantage compared to countries that do pursue them. However, transgenic technologies are certainly not the only means of improving crop productivity, and many others such as

[8] See Per Pinstrup-Andersen and Ebbie Schioler, *Seeds of Contention* (Baltimore, Johns Hopkins University Press, 2000) for a more detailed discussion of issues surrounding biotechnologies and developing countries.

[9] See, for example, Clive James, *Global Status of Commercialized Biotech/GM Crops: 2008 ISAAA Brief No. 39* (Ithaca, N.Y.: ISAAA, 2008) and Guy Hareau, George Norton, Bradford Mills, and Everett Peterson, "Potential Benefits of Transgenic Rice in Asia: A General Equilibrium Analysis," *Quarterly Journal of International Agriculture*, vol. 44 (2005), pp. 229–46.

marker-assisted breeding will also be increasingly important in the future, both because they are less controversial but also because regulatory costs related to ensuring bio-safety are lower.

Organization of Agricultural Research

Public agricultural research systems in developing countries have a variety of organizational structures. Often there is a central station and several substations located in different geo-climatic zones. Research may be conducted at universities, but the proportion of agricultural research conducted at colleges and universities tends to be much less than in developed countries such as the United States.

The structure of the research system is influenced by historical forces including, among others, colonial history and major foreign assistance projects. Much agricultural research in developing countries is organized along commodity program lines: for example, a maize program, a rice program, a wheat program, or a sheep and goats program. Other cross-cutting research areas such as soil fertility, socioeconomics, and even plant or livestock protection, may have separate programs.

Some agricultural research systems have a mandate for extension or other programs designed to reach out to farmers. Even if extension is not included in the mandate of the national research institution, that institution still needs a mechanism to obtain information on the current problems facing farmers and for testing new technologies under actual farm conditions. This mechanism may involve on-farm research.

Each research system must determine the appropriate mix of on-farm and experiment-station research. Experiment station research is needed so that experiments can be run under controlled conditions that enable particular components of new technologies to be developed and tested without the confounding of numerous and possibly extraneous factors. However, the real-world robustness, profitability, and cultural acceptability of new technologies cannot be assessed without testing under actual farm conditions. Frequent contact between scientists and farmers increases the likelihood that constraints and problems facing farmers will be included in the development and evaluation of new technologies. Because extensive on-farm interaction is expensive and scientific resources are scarce in developing countries, each research system assesses at the margin the appropriate mix of on-farm or on-station research.

International Agricultural Research Centers: The 1960s saw the emergence of a set of international agricultural research centers (IARCs) that has now grown to a network of 15 institutions located primarily in Africa, Asia, Latin America, and the Middle East, as shown in Figure

12-3. The funding and operation of these "Future Harvest" centers is coordinated through the Consultative Group for International Agricultural Research (CGIAR), headquartered at the World Bank in Washington, D.C. Although the first center, The International Rice Research Institute (IRRI), was founded in 1960, the international center model drew on the historical experiences of the colonial agricultural research institutes that were effective in increasing the production of export crops such as rubber, sugar, and tea. The model also drew on the experiences in the 1940s and 1950s of the Rockefeller Foundation's wheat and maize programs in Mexico and the Ford and Rockefeller foundations' rice program in the Philippines. The results of the research and training programs of the centers are aimed not just at the country where the center is located, but at the neighboring region or even the world.

The first IARCs, IRRI and CIMMYT (International Center for Maize and Wheat Improvement), produced new varieties of rice and wheat that substantially increased yields, especially for rice in Asia. The first of several rice varieties, (IR-8), released by IRRI and cooperating national programs, responded to high rates of fertilizer and water application by producing more grain and less straw. Subsequent research has focused as well on improving grain quality, incorporating disease and insect resistance, and developing varieties for drier upland areas. The substantial yield boost experienced in parts of Asia in the late 1960s resulting from these new technologies was termed the Green Revolution (see Box 12-2).

The success of the green revolution in increasing yields and incomes in many areas led to the expansion of the international agricultural research center concept to the other commodities and regions identified in Figure 12-3. Maize, millets, tropical legumes, cassava, livestock, potatoes, and many other commodities have received emphasis. The research results from these newer centers have not been as spectacular as the early gains in rice and wheat, but these centers too have made significant contributions. For example, disease-resistant beans, cassava, and millet varieties are now being grown in several countries. These centers also provide a public link between research being undertaken in the private sector on modern biotechnology and national agricultural research systems in developing countries to help ensure that these national systems are not left behind.

To some extent, the dramatic breakthroughs in yields in the early years of the green revolution created unrealistic expectations that these gains would be repeated with regularity. Agricultural research is, in fact, a continuous process that generally produces small gains from year to year.

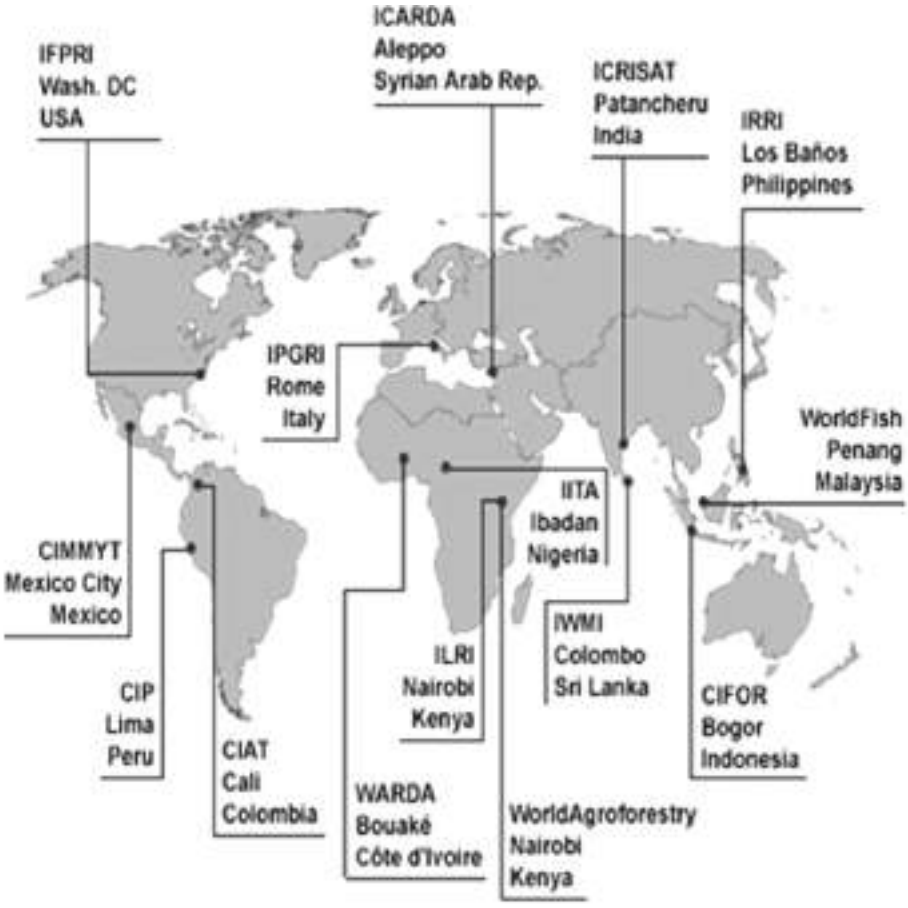


Figure 12-3. The "Future Harvest" International Agricultural Research Centers. (See facing page.)

The overall program and core funding for all 15 centers is managed by an organization called the Consultative Group for International Agricultural Research (CGIAR) whose members include the World Bank, the Food and Agricultural Organization of the United Nations (FAO), the United Nations Development Program (UNDP), and several national governments, regional banks, and foundations. These institutions provide the funds for the centers. The CGIAR, founded in 1971, is centered at the World Bank. The total budget for the 15 Future Harvest Centers was $520 million in 2007 when all funding sources are considered. In addition to these centers, there are a few related international research centers that play a similar role such as the World Vegetable Center in Taiwan, and the International Center for Insect Physiology and Ecology in Kenya.

Research Center – See Figure 12-3.	**Research Coverage**
Africa Rice (formerly WARDA)	Rice and rice-based cropping systems in Africa
Bioversity (formerly IPGRI)	Conservation of plant genetic material; bananas and plantain
CIAT — Centro Internacional de Agricultura Tropical	Phaseolus beans, cassava, rice, tropical pastures
CIFOR – Centre for International Forestry Research	Forest systems and forestry
CIMMYT – Centro Internacional de Mejoramiento de Maiz y Trigo	Wheat, barley, maize, high-altitude sorghum
CIP – Centro Internacional de la Papa	Potato, sweet potato, other root crops
ICARDA – International Center for Agricultural Research in Dryland Areas	Crop and mixed farming systems research, with emphasis on sheep, wheat, barley, broad beans
ICRISAT – International Crops Research Institute for the Semi-Arid Tropics	Sorghum, pearl millet, pigeon pea, chickpea, groundnuts
IFPRI – International Food Policy Research Institute	Food Policy
IITA – International Institute for Tropical Agriculture	Farming systems: Cereals, grain legumes, roots and tubers
ILRI – International Livestock Research Institute	Livestock diseases and production systems
IRRI – International Rice Research Institute	Rice
IWWI – International Water Management Institute	Irrigation
World Agroforestry	Agroforestry
World Fish Center	Fisheries and other living aquatic resources

Transfer of Research Results

The discussions of research categories, of national and regional experiment stations and on-farm research, and of international agricultural research centers all imply that research results may be transferred from one location to another. These transfers can occur internally in a country or across national boundaries. Let us examine the possibility and advisability of transferring new technologies or institutions.

Prior to the 1960s, little attention was focused on the importance of indigenous agricultural research in developing countries. It was thought that the possibilities for transferring technologies from developed countries were substantial and that, therefore, extension programs were needed to assist in this transfer. The relative lack of success with direct transfer of machinery, plant varieties, and other materials from developed to developing countries led to the realization that improved developing-country research capacity was essential. The desire to improve location-specific research was one of the driving forces behind the development of the IARCs mentioned above. However, many research results are regularly transferred from one country to another. What types of research results are transferable and what determines their transferability?

Materials such as improved seeds, plants, and animals; scientific methods, formulas, and designs; genes; and basic research output are all potentially transferable to some extent.[10] Each country must decide whether to simply screen these items and attempt to directly transfer them, to screen them and then modify and adapt them to their own environment, or to undertake a research program that is comprehensive enough to produce its own technologies.[11]

The choice among these transfer and research options will depend first on the relative costs of direct transfer of technology and of adaptive and comprehensive research. Transfer of research results involves costs of information and screening or testing. There may also be license costs or fees for patented items. Most of these transfer costs increase with the physical size and environmental diversity of the country. A country's own research costs are somewhat independent of size; for that reason, it may be more cost effective for larger countries to conduct their own research than for smaller countries.

Second, the complementarity between screening transferred technologies and conducting in-country research can come into play. It takes some scientific capacity just to bring in and screen research results from outside the country. Therefore, it may be cost-effective to have these scientists do some of their own adaptive research.

[10] See Yujiro Hayami and Vernon W. Ruttan, *Agricultural Development: An International Perspective* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1985), pp. 260–62.

[11] See Robert E. Evenson and Hans P. Binswanger, "Technology Transfer and Research Resource Allocation," in Hans P. Binswanger and Vernon W. Ruttan, eds., *Induced Innovation: Technology, Institutions, and Development* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1978), chapter 6. This section draws heavily on the ideas in Evenson and Binswanger.

On-farm potato variety trial of the International Potato Center (CIP).

Third, if the natural resource base in one developing country is similar to that in another country where the new technology is produced, then the chances of transfer will increase. New wheat varieties, for example, are often transferred from Argentina to Uruguay because those countries have similar wheat-growing regions. These similarities tend to reduce the cost of transfer and to increase the likelihood that the transferred technology will be physically and economically viable.

Fourth, some technologies are more environmentally sensitive than others are. For example, new plant and animal materials may be more environmentally sensitive than more basic research results, formulas, designs, etc. The International Agricultural Research Centers attempt to produce plant and animal materials that have broad environmental suitability. In many cases, it is necessary for the receiving country to then adapt these materials more specifically to its microclimates. Relatively basic advances in modern biotechnology have the potential for widespread applicability if the scientific and institutional capacities are created in developing countries to enable them to effectively utilize the research results.

Fifth, the availability of research results to transfer in is also important. For example, if a country has low labor costs and high capital and land costs, yet the technologies available to transfer in are large machines suitable for a resource environment with high labor costs and

abundant land, then the country will not find the outside technology suitable.

In summary, a developing country must assess several factors in deciding whether to transfer in research results from another country or from an international center. Agricultural research is a long-term investment. Research takes time, adoption of new technologies takes time, and research results eventually depreciate as insects and diseases evolve, the economic environment changes, and so on. Developing countries often attempt to bring in research results from other countries during the early stages of development in order to shorten this process and meet critical needs. Perhaps a 1 percent productivity growth rate can be accomplished through a relatively simple transfer process, though such productivity will depend on the conditions previously mentioned.[12] However, the requirements of modern rates of growth in food demand, often in the 3 to 6 percentage range, require the coexistence of at least some indigenous agricultural research capacity, and this capacity may be a combination of public and private.

Agricultural development today requires a research system with internal and external linkages that bring in appropriate technologies; screen, adapt, and produce new technologies and institutions; and perform both on-station and on-farm testing. The major components of such a research system are illustrated diagrammatically in Fig. 12-4. National and local experiment stations must interact with on-farm research and extension. This national research system also must maintain ties with the international research centers. Research in the larger national systems feeds into both the international centers and the smaller national research systems. If any of these linkages is weak or missing, agricultural productivity growth will be slowed.

Agricultural Research Spending

Spending on agricultural research occurs in both the public and private sectors. In the developing countries, the public sector undertakes more than 90 percent of agricultural research, with the bulk of that research occurring in the Asia and Pacific region (see Table 12-3). In 2000, more than $23 billion was spent in developed and developing countries on public agricultural research, with roughly a third ($7.5 billion) of those expenditures occurring in the developing countries in the Asia and Pacific region. In contrast, only a little over 6 percent of the total was spent in Africa, and the percentage spent there has been declining since 1980. Total spending on agricultural research in Africa has increased only

[12] Hayami and Ruttan, *Agricultural Development*, p. 260.

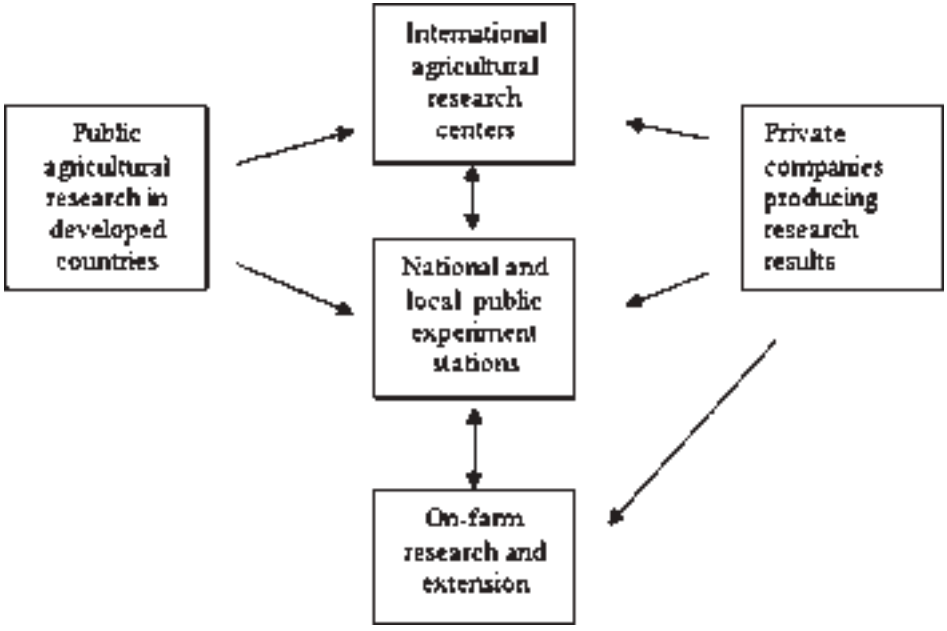


Figure 12-4. Components of a well-linked agricultural research system for developing countries.

TABLE 12-3. Total Public Agricultural Research Spending by Region

	Agricultural R&D spending (millions 2000 dollars)		Shares in global total (percentages)	
	1981	2000	1981	2000
Asia and Pacific (28 counties)	3,047	7,523	20.0	32.7
Latin America and Caribbean (27 countries)	1,897	2,454	12.5	10.8
Sub-Saharan Africa (44 countries)	1,196	1,461	7.9	6.3
West Asia and North Africa (18 countries)	764	1,382	5.0	6.0
Subtotal developing countries (117 countries)	6,904	12,819	45.4	55.8
Subtotal high income countries (22 countries)	8,293	10,191	54.6	44.2
Total (139 countries)	15,197	23,010	100.0	100.0

Source: CGIAR Science Council. *Science for Agricultural Development; Changing Contexts and New Opportunities.* (Rome, Italy: Science Council Secretariat, 2005.)

about one percent per year over the past several years despite increased malnutrition in the region.[13]

Agricultural research has become increasingly concentrated in a handful of countries worldwide.[14] The United States, Japan, France, and Germany accounted for more than two-thirds of the agricultural research in developed countries in 2000, while China, India, Brazil, Thailand, and South Africa accounted for more than half of the developing country total. If private support for agricultural research is included, the disparities in funding identified above are even sharper, with Africa accounting for less than one percent of total funding on agricultural research.[15] These numbers place increased importance on the technology transfer issues raised above.

ROLE of EXTENSION EDUCATION

Countries unable to develop the skills and knowledge of their farmers and their families find it difficult to develop anything else. The utilization of new technologies and institutions is critically dependent on a workforce that is aware of them and understands how to use them. Agricultural extension education can help motivate farmers toward change, teach farmers improved decision-making methods, and provide farmers with technical and practical information. Extension is complementary to other sources of information because it speeds up the transfer of knowledge about new agricultural technologies and other research results. It helps farmers deal with technological and economic change. Thus, as agriculture in a country moves from a traditional to a more dynamic, science-based mode, the value of extension education increases.

In extension education, farmers are the primary clientele and the programs are mostly oriented toward production problems they face. Extension accelerates the dissemination of research results to farmers and, in some cases, helps transmit farmers' problems back to researchers, Extension workers provide training for farmers on a variety of subjects and must have technical competence, economic competence, farming competence, and communication skills. Thus extension workers require extensive training and retraining to maintain their credibility with farmers.

[13] CGIAR Science Council, Science for Agricultural Development.
[14] CGIAR Science Council, Science for Agricultural Development.
[15] See Philip G. Pardey, Nienke Beitema, Steven Dehmer, and Stanley Wood, *Agricultural Research: A Growing Divide* (Washington, D.C.: IFPRI, 2006), p. 1.

Organization of Extension

Many types of organizational structures for extension exist in developing countries. A highly structured approach encouraged by the World Bank and applied in several countries is called the *training and visit (T&V) system.* The T&V system includes a single line of command, a set schedule of visits to farmers' groups, regular and continuous training of extension officers and workers by subject-matter specialists, and no non-extension responsibilities.[16] The T&V system facilitates discipline, accountability, and research linkages and experienced apparent success in some countries for a period of time.

Another, more common, extension structure is the village agent model that assigns extension "agents" to live in villages and provide one-on-one and group training of farmers on a variety of agricultural topics. An example that illustrates this structure is the extension service of the Colombian National Coffee Federation. That service has extension agents who operate on a fixed schedule of visits to farmers' groups, and who spend one day a week in an office receiving farmers and scheduling individual farm visits that coincide with days when they are visiting a particular location. Village extension agents are supported by regional subject matter specialists who also spend most of their time visiting farmers' groups and individual farms. Village extension agents are drawn from coffee farms and receive three years of training after high school. Extension programs are planned six months ahead and are developed jointly between the farmers' group and the agent.

Unfortunately, both the T&V and the village agent structures for extension have an uneven history of success. The T&V system suffers from its high cost and the disadvantage of not having local agents who can respond to farmer concerns as they arise. The village system suffers from the difficulty of funding a sufficient number of agents and adequately supporting them with supervision and training. Too often extension agents are poorly trained and little-motivated. They may not visit enough farms, and they become diverted into non-extension activities. The extension service itself may become politicized, corrupt, and unconnected to research. A well-functioning system needs clear lines of authority, adequate training, and financial rewards for personnel, or the system becomes relatively ineffective. Research and extension linkages are also essential and are facilitated if research and extension are housed in the same institution. Unfortunately, often they are not.

[16] See Daniel Benor, James A. Harrison, and Michael Baxter, "Agricultural Extension: The Training and Visit System," World Bank, Washington, D.C., 1989 for more details.

In recent years, many public extension services, especially in Latin America, have been eliminated or seen their funding cut drastically. These cuts were caused by a combination of budgetary pressures and perceptions that the extension services were not particularly effective. As a result of these and other inadequacies in publicly supported extension systems, non-governmental organizations (NGOs) are increasingly involved in agricultural extension. NGOs exist outside financial support from governments, with support from private individuals and groups in other countries or on private local support. In addition, private firms that sell products such as improved seeds and chemicals are heavily involved in technology transfer associated with their specific products.

Extension Methods

A variety of methods are employed to transfer research knowledge and technologies to producers. Individual farm visits, regularly scheduled group meetings, technology demonstrations that may involve a field day when hundreds of farmers are invited to observe the latest research results, and transfer of information through mass media are just some of the methods. Some technologies are transferred more effectively through intensive methods such as regular meetings, other are amenable to transfer through less intensive (and usually less expensive) methods such as field days and mass media. Each country must decide what is most cost effective for its public extension system, and each NGO will decide which approach allows it to best achieve its objectives. There is no one method that works best in every situation. Extension costs and effectiveness will depend on the type of technology, typography of the country, access to mass media, cultural and social factors, and many other variables.

SUMMARY

Agricultural research generates new or improved technologies and institutions that increase agricultural productivity, moderate food prices, generate foreign exchange, and reduce pressures on the natural resource base. Most studies have found the economic returns on public agricultural research investments to be high. Agricultural research can have distributional effects by farm size and tenure, by region, by income level, by factor of production, and so forth. Consumers, particularly low-income consumers, are major beneficiaries of agricultural research, as the poor may spend 80 percent of any income increases on food and food prices tend to fall as productivity increases. Agricultural research can influence nutrition by raising farm incomes, lowering food prices,

Extension field day in Peru.

and reducing the variability in food production. Agricultural research can generate technologies, institutional changes, and higher incomes that lead to reduced pressures on the environment. The public sector has a role to play in agricultural research because the private sector has inadequate incentives to conduct a sufficient amount of socially beneficial research, in part because often private firms conducting research cannot capture enough of the benefits. Intellectual property rights can help in creating incentives for private research investment.

Agricultural research can be classified into basic, applied, adaptive, and testing research. These categories are linked and dependent on each other. Research is conducted on national and local experiment stations and, to be effective, must contain an on-farm component. Since 1960, a system of International Agricultural Research Centers (IARCs) has provided new technologies and institutional changes suitable to several developing countries. These institutions helped to produce a green revolution that greatly increased the production of maize, rice, and wheat. Research can be transferred across national borders, but the ease of transfer depends on the type of research, the relative cost of transfer and indigenous research, the natural resource base, and other factors. Use of modern biotechnology has grown around the world in recent years but is yet to be widely adopted in developing countries.

Many types of extension systems exist, some more structured than others. Training for extension workers, incentives, clear lines

of authority, and strong linkages to research are each critical for an effective extension service.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Adaptive research
Agricultural education
Agricultural extension
Agricultural productivity
Agricultural research
Applied research
Basic research
Biotechnology
Experiment stations
Green revolution
Intellectual property rights
International agricultural research centers
Scale-neutral technology
Technology transfer
Testing research
Training and visit system

Looking Ahead

This chapter considered technical factors that can influence development of the agricultural sector. The following several chapters address sets of institutional issues that are equally important if agriculture is to progress in developing countries. We begin in the next chapter discussing land and labor policies.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1. What is the purpose of agricultural research in developing countries?
2. How does research influence agricultural productivity and food prices?
3. Under what conditions might research on a nonfood export crop have as much or greater positive effect on nutrition than research on a food crop?
4. Why might agricultural research tend to benefit large farms more than small farms?
5. Why might agricultural research increase the regional disparity in income in a developing country?
6. Why are consumers, especially poor consumers, often the major beneficiaries of agricultural research?
7. What factors influence the returns to particular factors of production following research?
8. How might agricultural research help improve the environment?
9. How might research result in institutional change?
10. Why should the public sector get involved in research? Why not leave it to the private sector?

11 Distinguish among basic, applied, adaptive, and testing research.
12 What is modern biotechnology?
13 What are the International Agricultural Research Centers and how does their work tie into the agricultural research systems in developing countries?
14 What is the "green revolution," when did it occur, and where?
15 What role does extension play in agricultural development?
16 How might research, education, and extension be complementary activities?
17 How can intellectual property rights influence production of agricultural technologies?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Alston, Julian M., George W. Norton, and Philip G. Pardey, *Science Under Scarcity: Principles and Practice for Agricultural Research Evaluation and Priority Setting* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1995).

Benor, Daniel, James Q. Harrison, and Michael Baxter, "Agricultural Extension: The Training and Visit System,." World Bank, Washington. D.C., 1989.

CGIAR Science Council, *Science for Agricultural Development: Changing Contexts and New Opportunities.* Rome, Italy: Science Council Secretariat, 2005.

Masters, William A., "Paying for Prosperity: How and Why to Invest in Agricultural Research and Development in Africa," *Journal of International Affairs*, vol. 58(2), 2005), pp. 35–64.

Pardey, Philip P., Nienke Beitema, Steven Dehmer, and Stanley Wood, *Agricultural Research: A Growing Divide* (Washington, D.C.: IFPRI, 2006).

Pinstrup-Andersen, Per and Ebbe Schioler, *Seeds of Contention* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 2000).

Ruttan, Vernon W., *Agricultural Research Policy* (Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1982).

Scobie, Grant M. and Rafael Posada T., "The Impact of Technical Change on Income Distribution: The Case of Rice in Colombia," *American Journal of Agricultural Economics*, vol. 60, February 1978, pp. 85–92.

CHAPTER 13

Land and Labor Markets

> The distribution of rights in land relates to the distribution of power, income, social status, and incentives. A land reform that changes this distribution is by definition a change that shakes the roots and not the branches of a society. — Philip M. Raup[1]

THIS CHAPTER

1. Discusses the meaning of land tenure and land reform
2. Explains why land reform and flexible land tenure systems are often necessary for agricultural development, yet difficult to achieve, and what the requisites are for a well-functioning land market
3. Describes the nature of agricultural land and labor markets in developing countries

MEANING of LAND TENURE and LAND REFORM

Land and labor are fundamental inputs into agricultural production, and while land is often distributed unequally, labor is not. Therefore we see large farms with land concentrated in the hands of a few, and small farms with excess labor. Typically a market develops in which labor is hired to work on larger farms or land is leased to small-scale landholders for rent or for a share of the output. An alternative is to subdivide large holdings through land reform or market-based redistribution efforts. In this chapter, we consider determinants and consequences of alternative land tenure systems and labor market structures. Well-functioning land and labor markets are crucial to agricultural development because land is a major input into production and poorly

[1] Philip M. Raup, "Land Reform Issues in Development," Staff Paper P75-27, Department of Agricultural and Applied Economics, University of Minnesota, St. Paul, 1975, p. 1.

functioning markets will lead to misallocation and inefficient use of this valuable resource. Evidence shows that the rural poor, particularly those with little or no land, will benefit more from an additional unit of land than will the rich: mechanisms to reallocate land can increase productivity and reduce poverty.

Land rights determine social and political status as well as economic power in developing countries. Secure access to land can enhance incomes, provide an important insurance function, and increase access to financial and non-financial services. *Land tenure* is a term used to refer to those rights or patterns of control over land. Land rights include rights to use and to exclude use, rights to output from the land, and rights to transfer the land or its output to others.

As population density increases, farming techniques change, and markets for agricultural products grow, pressures often develop to change existing land tenure arrangements. In societies where land has been held in common, permanent and enforceable individual rights to land may evolve. In countries where ownership patterns are highly skewed with a few people owning much and many owning little or no land, pressures often are exerted on the government to undertake a land reform or eliminate constraints to more equal land distribution by establishing well-functioning land markets. These pressures may arise from peasants who desire increased economic well-being or from those in power who hope that minimal concessions to the peasants will diffuse political unrest. A land reform is a dramatic attempt to change the land tenure system through public policies. Land reform may change not only rights and patterns of control over the land resource, but also the mode of production (whether semi-feudalistic, capitalistic, or socialist) and the agrarian class structure. Consequently, few subjects related to agricultural development are as controversial. In recent years, more attention has been focused on rights to land and how secure rights facilitate development of functioning land markets. Market-based measures have supplanted administrative approaches to land reallocations.

Land Ownership and Tenure Systems

A wide array of land ownership and tenure systems exists in the world. These systems reflect differences in historical influences, levels of income, culture, political and legal systems, climate, and other factors. The systems vary in size and organization of land holdings, they affect incentives to produce and invest, and they influence the distribution of benefits from agricultural growth. Examples of average size of landholdings from around the world are presented in Table 13-1. The larger holdings in Latin America compared to Asia and Africa are

Table 13-1. Median Holding Size, by Region

Region	Median Holding Size (Ha)	Gini Coeffient
East Asia	2.07	.51
Sub-Saharan Africa	2.18	.49
South Asia	2.32	.59
Mideast and North Africa	6.05	.66
Eastern Europe	8.69	.62
Latin America	17.70	.81

particularly evident. However, information on *average* land holdings masks important difference within countries; these differences are shown in Table 13-1 as gini coefficients.[2] While average holdings, for example, in Latin America are quite high, many landless and near landless families can be found in rural areas of the region. Latin America has the most unequal distribution of land in the world, while the distribution in Asia and Africa is relatively equal (see Table 13-1). In Latin America, as elsewhere in the world, the colonial past still influences land ownership patterns today (see Box 13-1).

Family farms, corporate farms, state farms, and group farms are major types of farm ownership, but organization of farm enterprises within these types can vary substantially. In many cases the owner of the farm is also the operator. In other cases, those who operate or work on the farm may earn a fixed wage or pay rent in cash or in a share of the farm output to the owner.

Small subsistence or semi-subsistence family farms are common in developing countries. Families often provide most of the labor, and cultivation is labor-intensive. Much of the output is consumed on the farm where it is produced. However, not all small family farms are subsistence or semi-subsistence farms; many are commercial farms producing substantial surpluses for sale. Those farmers that do consume most of what they produce are usually very poor. In some cases, family members work on other farms or in non-farm employment. The latter can lead to the small farms becoming part-time operations, especially as development proceeds over time with job opportunities growing in the non-farm sector.

Large-scale commercial family farms sell most of what they produce. While in developed countries these farms are highly mechanized

[2] The gini coefficient is a widely used measure of inequality that ranges from 0 (complete equality) to 1 (complete inequality).

BOX 13-1.
COLONIALISM and LANDOWNERSHIP

Many of the landownership patterns found in developing countries are the vestiges of colonial rule. The *latifundia* or extensive large-scale farms that currently exist in Central and South America alongside *minifundia,* or very small farms, are a direct descendent of colonial rule. The Spanish and Portuguese colonizers allocated large tracts of land to elites who formed tropical plantations or large haciendas. Both types of landholding were made possible through the direct enslavement of indigenous populations, the importation of slaves from Africa, or the *encomienda* system that gave indirect control over local populations to certain elites.

Some of the richest agricultural lands in Africa have landownership patterns that were established during the periods of European colonization. Because European countries coveted exotic tropical products, such as cocoa, coffee, tea, and tropical fruits, agricultural production in Africa was reorganized to help ensure production of these products. Large landholdings were allocated to European settlers, such as the tea and coffee plantations in eastern Africa; rarely were the land's original inhabitants compensated. In many instances, the land's original inhabitants were resettled to areas with lower agricultural potential, poor rainfall, and inadequate infrastructure. Areas that had been self-sufficient in food production became exporters of goods to Europe, while much of the indigenous population relied on rain-fed agriculture in marginal areas. An adequate labor supply was maintained sometimes through enslavement and sometimes through economic coercion.

In Asia, colonial rule led to similar forms of plantation agriculture. Japanese colonies in Korea and Taiwan produced for export to Japan; the Dutch colonized Indonesia; Spanish plantations existed in the Philippines; the British colonized much of the Indian sub-continent and other regions.

Following the end of colonial rule, many of these landownership patterns persisted, because of the political powers of the landed elite. Some of the land reforms undertaken prior to 1970 were designed to remove the less desirable aspects of these landholding patterns. Implicit forms of enslavement of labor, such as through the maintenance of indebtedness, were prohibited. In many countries, the result of these reforms has been to reduce labor use, increase mechanization, and leave the distribution of land largely unchanged. The legacy of colonial landholding patterns has been pervasive rural poverty in many regions of the world.

and often involve only a small amount of non-family labor, in developing countries the operations are usually more labor-intensive and use a high proportion of hired labor. The owner frequently does not live on the farm, but pays a manager to oversee day-to-day operations.

Corporate farms often produce a limited number of commodities in large-scale units. These farms may have their own processing and marketing systems. This type of farm is more prevalent in developed than in developing countries, but there are numerous examples of large corporate farms in developing countries. The fruit plantations found in Central American countries, banana plantations of the Philippines, and cocoa plantations of West Africa are a few examples.

State farms are usually large, owned and operated by the government, and run by hired labor. Managers are responsible to a government-planning agency that may set targets for production and direct the timing and method of key farming operations. Examples have existed recently in parts of China and the former Soviet Union. State farms usually suffer from inadequate incentives and ill-advised management decisions.

Group farms are communes, kibbutzim, collectives, or other types of farms that are operated by a group of people who work and manage the farm jointly. These group operations may also involve non-agricultural activities. Often, collectivized farms are characterized by over-investment in labor-saving capital-intensive technologies, since individuals do not receive the full returns from their labor. Special arrangements may be devised (for example a point system) to provide incentives for individual members to work harder. The kibbutzim of Israel are an example of a group farm system. *Cooperative* farms exist in some parts of the world, but cooperative purchase of inputs and marketing of outputs is a more common organization. The Mennonites in the Paraguayan Chaco are an example of privately held land whose owners organize cooperatives for input purchases and product marketing.

Not only do many types of land ownership and organization exist, but also types of tenancy or leasing arrangements. Farm families may lease all or a part of their land for a specified amount of cash or for a share of the production from the land. A farmer may be allowed to farm a piece of land in exchange for his or her labor on another part of the owner's land. In some countries, the village, tribe, or national government may own the land and grant use rights to individual families. This system is common in Africa where social groups allocate land to individuals who maintain control over it and its output as long as they cultivate it.

Tenancy arrangements affect the risk and transactions costs borne by tenants and landlords and influence incentives to work or apply inputs. A share lease, for example, spreads the production risk between the landlord and tenant, while a cash lease concentrates the risk on the

Cows feeding at a Kibbutz in Israel.

tenant. A cash lease implies lower transactions costs for the landlord than a share lease, since the amount received under the share lease has to be measured, and production has to be monitored. A tenant may have less incentive to apply additional fertilizer or even labor under a share lease than under a cash lease. To circumvent this disincentive, the landlord may share the cost of the fertilizer or place conditions on the amount of labor applied. In such cases, the landlord bears the transactions costs associated with monitoring input use and measuring the value of output. Thus, the use of a particular land- or labor-contracting mechanism may be a response to the presence of risk or transactions costs. These factors can explain why the land market may not dictate a single type of tenancy system even within a single country (see Box 13-2).

Types of Land Tenure Reform

Because many types of land tenure systems exist in the world, there are many types of land tenure reform. Prior to the 1970s, many if not most land reforms involved a movement away from feudalistic and semi-feudalistic land tenure arrangements toward capitalist or socialist ownership modes.[3] Feudalism was characterized by large-scale estates controlled by the traditional landed-elite with labor bonded to the estates through peonage or extra-economic forms of coercion.

Anti-feudal land reforms have eliminated feudalism in most of the world, and the farm types described above have replaced feudal

[3] See Alain de Janvry, "The Role of Land Reform in Economic Development: Policies and Politics," *American Journal of Agricultural Economics*, vol. 63 (May 1981), pp. 384–92.

BOX 13-2.
TENANCY, RISK, and TRANSACTIONS COSTS: THE CASE of SHARECROPPING

Sharecropping is a widely practiced form of tenancy whose existence can be attributed to risk sharing and transactions costs. Because agricultural production is risky, and both tenants and landowners desire to share risks, sharecropping represents a compromise between fixed-rent contracts, where the renter bears all the risk, and wage employment, where the landowner bears all the risk. Sharecropping also represents a response to the costly supervision of workers. Since under a wage system the worker receives wages based on hours worked rather than effort expanded, there is a tendency to shirk. Supervision is necessary, yet costly. Sharecropping returns some of these incentives to the tenant and also allows risk sharing.

models. In many countries, however, this post-feudal order has resulted in some large capitalist farms or estates controlled by an elite well-to-do class and a coexisting small-farm sector. In a few countries (for example, South Korea and Taiwan), the post-reform agricultural sector consists primarily of small family farms. And, in a few, such as Cuba, socialist farms still predominate. The form of the post-reform agrarian structure depends largely on the motivation and political ideology behind the reforms.

Land tenure reform today generally does not refer to the types of anti-feudal reforms instituted in many countries prior to the 1970s. In those reforms, prohibition of bonded labor and reductions in labor exploitation were achieved, but in many cases a significant redistribution of land was not. As de Janvry notes, countries like Colombia, Ecuador, and India had successful anti-feudal land reforms but very little redistribution of land.[4] Land tenure reform as a policy issue today usually relates to seeking a shift in the distribution of lands from large to medium-size and smaller landholdings. It also involves creation of more secure rights to land. Improved security empowers households to make better decisions, more effectively manage risks, and participate on a more equal basis in markets. Land tenure reform often involves market-based efforts to increase access to land, and well-defined, secure rights to land are needed for a well-functioning land market.

In the few remaining countries where socialist or group farms predominate (as opposed to capitalist farms of whatever type), future land reforms may involve a transition to increased capitalism as these countries struggle with the incentive problems that have plagued many types

[4] Alain de Janvry, "The Role of Land Reform in ..."

of group farms (see Box 13-3). Land reforms in socialist countries are difficult to achieve without a fundamental restructuring of the political system. The change in China from the socialized agricultural system to the market-based Household Responsibility System in 1979 was accompanied by political and economic upheaval.

Transactions Costs and the Agrarian Structure

No form of land tenure is universally efficient. Differences in natural resource endowments, in the availability of new technologies, and in institutional arrangements all influence risk, transactions costs, and the farmer's opportunity to exploit his or her managerial ability. If there were well-defined private property rights and a reasonably equitable distribution of land, perfect information, and zero transactions costs (especially the cost of enforcing contracts), markets would work perfectly and it would not matter as much what type of agrarian structure prevailed. Bargaining would occur among landowners, renters, and laborers; neither the returns to labor nor the overall economic efficiency of the agricultural system would depend on the type of agrarian structure.

In the real world, however, risk varies from country to country. Markets are not perfect. The cost of acquiring information and of negotiating, monitoring, and enforcing contracts can be high. People are willing to exploit others, labor hired on a time-rate basis may shirk (increasing the cost of supervision), the price of land may decline as farm size grows (due to fixed costs associated with land transactions), and larger landowners may have better access to markets and information.

Many of these risk and transactions cost factors confer an economic advantage to large farms. Owners of larger holdings can gain additional political advantage through collective action and can reinforce their advantage through the tax laws and pressures on the types of new technologies produced by the public research system. Owners of larger holdings have easier access to agricultural credit because the costs of administering a loan can be spread over more land, thus making the cost per hectare of large-scale loans lower than small-scale loans. The result can be additional gains for the elite, but reduced economic efficiency for the agricultural sector and the country as a whole. Land tenure reform may be needed in these cases.

ACHIEVING SUCCESSFUL LAND REFORM

A country can desire land tenure reform for a variety of economic, social, and political reasons, yet land reform, whether it involves change in land tenancy or ownership, is always difficult to achieve. Let's

BOX 13-3.
LAND REFORM IN EASTERN EUROPE

Following the collapse of Soviet-style models of central economic planning and control and the movement toward democracy in the late 1980s, governments in Eastern Europe were faced with the problem of how to reform their agricultural sectors. The organization of the agricultural sectors in these countries was rather similar: approximately one-third of the farms were state farms, and two-thirds were collectives (cooperatives). Most farm employees managed a household plot of about one-half hectare, while the state farms and collectives were large, about 2000 to 3000 hectares. Two paths of reform are illustrative of general trends in the region: Romania and Bulgaria.

In both countries, the rights of landowners prior to collectivization were recognized by parliamentary decree in February 1991. These decrees also established procedures for reclaiming these property rights. In Romania, land redistribution proceeded quickly. Local land commissions were established to hear household claims for up to 10 hectares. Some proof of the claim was needed. Whenever possible, claimants were given back the land actually owned, and when not, an alternative of equal size and quality was returned. Once in possession, the owner could sell it immediately, or purchase more land. Thus, a market for titled land, with very few institutional restrictions, was established. There was not an attempt to create farms of optimal size.

The Bulgarian redistribution proceeded much more slowly. Administrative delay hindered progress, and local commissions were very slow in forming. The laws implementing the distribution were very rigid, and the construction of "appropriate size holdings" through administration was attempted. The local commissions adjudicated claims, but a planning team reassigned plots. The law prohibited the purchase and sale of land for three years, which hindered development of a land market.

In both cases, most of the new landowners remained integrated into the collective management system. In Romania, the formation of a land market opened a period of holdings consolidation and resale, but actual exit from the collective was delayed until the infrastructure for individual management was developed. The slowness of the redistribution in Bulgaria guaranteed the existence of collective systems for many years.

Source: Karen Brooks, J. Luis Guasch, Avishay Braverman, and Csaba Csaki, "Agriculture and the Transition to Market," *Journal of Economic Perspectives,* vol. 5(4), Fall 1991, pp. 149–62.

examine briefly why land redistribution may be desired, why it may be difficult to achieve, how a country can measure whether a reform has succeeded, and what factors improve the chances of achieving successful land tenure reform.

Need for More Equitable Access to Land

The broad economic and development goals of most societies include desires for improved income growth (efficiency), equity (income distribution), and security (political and economic stability). A more equitable access to land and more secure rights to land can contribute to all three of these goals.

A skewed distribution of landholdings can hamper economic efficiency for several reasons. Large landholdings may not be farmed intensively, even in very densely populated countries; in fact, an *inverse* relationship between farm productivity and farm size has been found in many developing country settings.[5] Some landowners hold land for speculative reasons. Others are absentee landlords who provide little supervision of those working on the farm. If the farm is owned by the government, planning and management may be centrally and poorly controlled, and individual incentives may be stifled since farms are forced to respond to output and input quotas. Large farms may substitute machinery for labor, exacerbating an unemployment problem. Large farmers facing labor supervision problems often demand capital-ntensive innovations from the agricultural research system. As a result, new technologies are generated that do not reflect the true scarcity values of land, labor, and capital in the country.

Countries with large landholdings often have a coexisting sector of farms that are too small to provide an adequate living. These very small holdings of one or two hectares or less may have labor employed to the point at which its marginal product is very low. Thus, reducing the size of large farms and increasing the size of very small farms may be the only way to raise the marginal product of labor in agriculture, and thereby raise income per worker.

As discussed earlier, other land tenure problems, including the need for tenancy reform, may have to be solved to improve entrepreneurial incentives and to reduce risks facing farmers. For example, as population density increases, property rights for land pastured in common may need to be redefined to avoid overgrazing. Share or cash rents may need to be changed as new technologies become available. Lease lengths may need to be more securely established to encourage capital investment.

Apart from growth or efficiency concerns, land redistribution often is needed for equity reasons. The number of landless laborers is growing rapidly in many countries, along with associated poverty and

[5] See Dwayne Benjamin, "Can Unobserved Land Quality Explain the Inverse Productivity Relationship?" *Journal of Development Economics*, vol. 46 (1995), pp. 51–84.

malnutrition. The principal resource these people control is their labor, whose value is depressed by under-use of labor on large farms. Providing land resources to these people can be an effective means of raising incomes. As large farms are broken up, even those poor who do not receive land can benefit due to increased economy-wide demand for labor. Large farms convey political power to a small group. This group may distort economic policies in a direction that hinders overall economic growth and creates severe hardship on the poorest segments of society. Thus, to achieve development as defined in Chapter 1, addressing the land distribution problem may be necessary.

In addition to growth and equity concerns, land redistribution can enhance political and economic security or stability. In fact, expropriations of land and partial land reforms experienced in many countries in the past have probably occurred primarily for purposes of political stabilization. This stabilization can have positive and negative impacts on economic growth and equity. To the extent that land redistribution dampens political unrest and reduces the chances of revolution, it reduces the chances of a country's experiencing the extremes of death and suffering that can accompany a revolution. However, to the extent that a partial land reform achieves political stability without redistributing enough land or economic power to generate widespread growth and fundamentally reduce economic hardship and hunger, it may only perpetuate a status quo of chronic suffering.

Why Redistribution of Access to Land is Difficult to Achieve

Because of the political and economic power that accompanies landownership in many countries, it is difficult to conduct a meaningful redistribution of land. Historically, land reforms have most often been made possible only after significant social upheaval caused by revolution, the overthrow of colonial powers, or war. In the former Soviet Union and China, social revolutions destroyed the power of the landed elite prior to the institution of collectivizing land reforms. An army of occupation enforced the socialist reforms in Eastern Europe following World War II. The extreme economic, political, and social turmoil of the 1970s in China and of the 1980s and 1990s in the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe, once again created the conditions for land reforms in those countries. In capitalist countries such as Japan, the Republic of Korea, and Taiwan, defeats in war or occupation were followed by redistributive reforms.[6]

[6] See Clive Bell, "Reforming Property Rights in Land and Tenancy," W*orld Bank Research Observer*, vol. 5, (July 1990), pp. 143–66.

In countries with capitalist forms of social and economic relationships, land reforms are difficult to achieve because those holding the land rights also have strong political power. Urban consumers often align with landowners. Because large farms frequently have large marketed surpluses, consumers fear that steep food price increases may follow a dramatic reform. Small changes may be supported as a means of political stabilization, but large-scale restructuring of property rights is difficult. Occasionally, governments support redistributive land reforms in response to strong revolutionary pressures, such as Mexico (1940 to 1977) or the Philippines (1972 to 1975). Or, land reforms result following military overthrows of the government, such as in Peru (1969 to 1975). Land reforms within capitalist agriculture are usually slow to occur because compensation is required if they are to be accepted by those losing land. Unless the government's budget has a large fiscal surplus, which is rare in developing countries, or substantial foreign aid, gainers cannot compensate the losers sufficiently for the land reform to be politically viable.

Resistance to large-scale administrative land reforms has been strong, so that such reforms often only follow major upheavals. Decision makers in many countries, however, realize that an inequitable distribution of land is not conducive to broad-based economic growth. As a result, we see more experimentation with land market reforms, which begin with legislative steps to increase security of private land holdings. Over time, markets are created and land may move from less to more productive uses through sales or rentals.

Many countries have had land reforms in the sense that changes in the land tenure system have occurred. The mere fact that a change has taken place does not necessarily imply that a *successful* land reform has transpired. Many national leaders are interested in land reform because the reform may lead to increased political stability. However, unless there is evidence that incentives have been created for farmers to undertake hard work and increase their capital investment and unless poverty has been reduced and social status improved for the rural poor, a successful land reform has not occurred.

A successful land tenure reform should alter the incentive structure in rural areas. It should provide secure property rights that are recognized by all. Whether this structure has been altered is perhaps best measured by evidence of increased and continuous capital accumulation by small farmers in the form of livestock, farm buildings, equipment, and other improvements in land resources. Because these investments may be small in any one year, it usually takes a generation,

BOX 13-4.
LAND RESETTLEMENT and REFORM in ZIMBABWE

Prior to its invasion in 1890, land in Zimbabwe was held under communal tenure, and tribal leaders allocated rights to land. Members of Cecil Rhodes' Pioneer Columns were promised 3,000-acre holdings in exchange for assistance in colonizing the area. During the subsequent colonial period, Native Africans were relocated to low-rainfall, low-productivity land and were barred from landownership outside these tribal reserves. Large-scale resettlement without compensation continued through the early 1950s.

In 1965, the minority white government declared independence from Great Britain and continued enforcing restrictive conditions against Native Africans. The subsequent war of independence, which raged in the bush with increased intensity through the 1970s, used the "land question" as a uniting principal. Overcrowding and dwindling production on communal lands led to widespread rural poverty. The Lancaster House Agreements, which paved the way for independence in 1980, formed a basis for post-independence land reform. The British government allocated £44 million for purchase on a "willing seller, willing buyer basis." Robert Mugabe won the first free election and promised to resettle blacks on purchased white lands. Resettlement reduced civil conflict, provided opportunities for war victims and the landless, and relieved some population pressures on communal lands.

Between 1980 and 1990, the government obtained some 3 million hectares for resettlement and resettled roughly 54,000 households. The pace of resettlement slowed through the 1980s as attention moved towards providing agricultural services to communal areas. Farms in resettlement schemes had variable performance; many of those under private management did relatively well, while those that were managed under cooperative schemes performed less well. Critics of the resettlement program, however, noted that the most productive farm areas had been "resettled" by the President's political supporters.

The Lancaster House Agreements expired in 1990, effectively ending donor support of resettlement. Through the mid-1990s, few farms were resettled and government attention turned toward restoring macroeconomic balance and dealing with adverse consequences of severe drought. Following a major currency devaluation in late 1997, unrest grew and independence war veterans began to demand access to land. Government responded by listing some large-scale commercial farms for "compulsory" resettlement. Although owners would be compensated, the method of compensation was unclear and abandonment of the "willing buyer-willing seller" principle caused unease among owners of land and donors. "Listed" farms were said to be "underproductive," although government critics disputed many of these assertions. Between 1997 and 2000, resettlement became more contentious as rural interest groups increased pressure on the government through protests and forced seizure of white

BOX 13-4, continued

farms. In response to internal political pressure, government began a "fast track" resettlement process; between 2000 and 2003, government acquired more than 75 % of the nearly 4,500 white-owned commercial farms. By the end of 2003, fewer than 300 white farmers continued to farm.

Resettlement in Zimbabwe provides a number of lessons. Inequitable land access can create strong political forces, particularly following political change. The issue of compensation for lands remains complicated. While some white farmers obtained their lands through ancestral succession (their forebears had received land at no cost), many had purchased their land from others and were due fair compensation for their investments. As internal political pressure and the economic crisis grew, the Mugabe government felt increasing urgency for resettlement while resources to finance land purchase became scarcer.

Land reforms of the type practiced in Zimbabwe can have huge unsettling effects. As commercial farmers were forced out, agricultural production and export earnings dropped by more than 50%, further exacerbating economic problems and contributing to near famine conditions. Neighboring countries absorbed many of the displaced white farmers, spreading social problems around the region. The politicization of the process damaged the credibility of government and undermined popular support (at home and among donors) for the program.

Source: William Masters, *Government and Agriculture in Zimbabwe* (Westport, Conn.: Praeger, 1994); updated by press reports.

perhaps 25 to 30 years, to truly evaluate the success of a change in land tenure or redistribution.

Agricultural productivity also should increase in the long run. However, in the first five years following a land reform, productivity may stagnate for a couple of reasons. First, the mix of commodities produced may shift toward food crops and away from a heavy reliance on cash crops. This shift and other disruptions to the normal input and output marketing channels, credit flows, changes in technologies needed from the agricultural research system and so forth, can hinder productivity growth in the short run.

Marketable surpluses may decrease because the poorer segments of the rural population, who benefit from the land reform, have a high income elasticity of demand for food. As their incomes increase through more access to land, they consume more, and the aggregate marketed surplus may decline. Thus, short-term increases in agricultural productivity or marketable surpluses are not good measures of the success of land reform.

A land reform also can affect capital formation in the public sector. Countries with land tenure systems in need of reform often have poor rural schools and other public infrastructure. Large-scale landowners typically hesitate to tax themselves to support schools, roads, and so on. Countries in need of land reform usually find it easier to collect public revenues by taxing export crops or by placing tariffs on imports. Governments implementing land reform have an opportunity to restructure the tax system. The new owners of small plots have increased ability to pay taxes and may do so willingly if they see that the tax system is honest and the proceeds will be used for schools, roads, and other local infrastructure.

Peasant associations and other farm groups also are likely to be formed after a successful land reform. These associations can play an important role in promoting the development and adoption of new technologies for agriculture, improving marketing channels and so forth. The formation of these associations therefore is another test of a successful land reform.

Alternatives to Land Reform

The cost and political difficulty of attaining an effective land reform have led to alternatives to large-scale, administrative redistribution of lands. There is now an increasing body of evidence showing that market-based reforms are effective at increasing investments, increased productivity and more equitable outcomes.[7] Examples of market-based land redistribution efforts include fortification of sales and rental markets, encouraging cooperatives to redistribute lands to their members, sales or transfer of government lands, and creation of land banks.[8] These efforts generally require three complementary steps: (i) legal definition and assignment of property rights; (ii) creating the legal framework for efficient functioning of the markets themselves; and (iii) insuring that complementary markets, particularly finance and insurance, function efficiently. These steps can be costly and difficult, and a market-based reform that does not address all will likely fail in its objectives — to redistribute land toward more efficient users.

[7] See Klaus Deininger and Songquing Jin, "Tenure Security and Land-Related Investment: Evidence from Ethiopia," *European Economic Review*, vol. 50 (July 2006), pp. 1245–77; and Klaus Deininger and Songquing Jin, "Land Sales and Rental Markets in Transition: Evidence from Rural Vietnam,"*Oxford Bulletin of Economics and Statistics*, vol. 70 (February 2008), pp. 67–101 for examples.

[8] These changes have been called "Phase III" of the process of land reform by Alain de Janvry, Marcel Fafchamps and Elisabeth Sadoulet in "Peasant Household Behavior with Missing Markets: Some Paradoxes Explained," *Economic Journal*, vol. 101, no. 409 (1991): 1400–17.

Definition and assignment of property rights involves surveying lands, titling them, and creating a land registry so that perspective participants can examine the land's history of transactions including liens and competing claims. Legal reforms include determining who can participate in transactions, means of contract enforcement, removal on implicit or explicit restrictions on rental and transfer, etc. Implicit restrictions to rental, for example, may occur because without an adequate legal framework, squatters may possess strong claims to ownership. Land owners may be reluctant to rent to others because they fear losing claims to ownership. Weak and corrupt legal systems make it difficult to enforce property ownership rights and may slow the development of land markets. Issues such as women's rights to own and transfer lands can have efficiency and equity effects of subsequent market processes.

Finally, while land markets have the potential to efficiently redistribute lands, in the presence of distortions in credit and insurance markets, creation of land markets alone may not solve the problem of inequitable distribution. For example, if banks or other creditors are unwilling to lend money in relatively small amounts due to transactions costs associated with such loans, then the poor may not be able to finance purchase or rental of the small amounts of land they seek. Unequal distribution of productive assets such as capital can exacerbate such problems because the poorest may not have collateral to support a loan. Insurance markets are important because the poorest of the poor may be less willing to risk their assets as collateral.

AGRICULTURAL LABOR MARKETS

Labor is often the most valuable resource the rural poor possess. This labor can be used to cultivate their own lands, to process and market products after harvest, to produce non-agricultural goods, some for own consumption and others to be sold in markets, for child-care, cooking and other household activities. Alternatively, this labor may be sold or rented to others, both farm and non-farm employers. Agricultural labor markets exist because land markets alone can not balance out differences in land and labor endowments. Small-scale land owners or landless individuals supply labor to large-scale landowners who need more than their own family labor to carry out their farming operations. Labor markets help allocate resources into their most valuable uses by transmitting signals about resource scarcity across space and time. As labor is an important input to production and a key asset held by the poor, the conduct and performance of labor markets are especially important for broad-based agricultural growth.

BOX 13-5.
REFORM of CAPITALIST AGRICULTURE in COLOMBIA

Colombia presents an example of some of the pitfalls associated with land reforms in many countries. In the 1930s, there was a public outcry, mostly by urban consumers who desired cheaper foods, over the lack of productivity on the large landholdings of the rural elite. In 1936, Law 200 was passed that said that potentially productive but poorly cultivated or abandoned large holdings were to be expropriated by the government. This threat caused land productivity to rise for a short time, and virtually no land was confiscated. During the 1950s, there was a long period of civil conflict known as "La Violencia" that hastened the destruction of traditional social relations and weakened the political powers of the old agrarian oligarchy.

Following a peace pact, a new phase of land reform began. Law 135 of 1961 set forth an ambitious reform package that included full compensation to existing landholders. The gradualist approach doomed the package from the start. Political pressure from landed groups allied with urban consumer interests successfully diverted inputs, often with substantial subsidies, to large-scale farms. Land values on favored farms increased dramatically, making compensation financially impossible. By 1972, only 1.5 percent of all land in large farms had been redistributed.

Law 4 in 1973 declared an end to this redistributive reform and returned the country to the principles of Law 200. At the same time, a political coalition between large-scale farmers, a small but substantial family-farm sector, and urban consumers formed and created pressure for a rural development program that favored the first two groups. Landless and marginal farmers were politically and economically excluded.

The conditions for a successful land reform never really existed in Colombia. Shifting alliances between urban and rural power groups diminished the political will. A lack of clear conviction for redistribution, combined with the slow pace of reform, further inhibited the efforts. Policies favoring large farms, largely intended to diffuse political opposition, had the effect of destroying any prospects for real reform.

Casual versus Permanent Labor

Labor may be hired on a *casual* or temporary basis by the day or for some other short period of time such as for the harvest or weeding period. Alternatively, labor may be hired on a more permanent or longer-term basis, perhaps for months or years. Casual labor is usually paid in cash and in kind (for example food; many day labor wages include a meal for the worker). Laborers may be paid daily or on a piece-rate basis for certain tasks. Women are often paid less than men, even for the same task. Casual labor is characterized by strong *seasonality;* work-

ers tend to be hired during planting and harvest, when agricultural labor demands are highest. Longer-term labor may have supervisory responsibilities or perform tasks that require special care such as applying farm chemicals. Formal or informal contracts may be developed to handle seasonal fluctuations and risks associated with agricultural production.

Transactions Costs, Asset Inequality, and Labor Markets

Labor markets in developing countries often contain imperfections due to power imbalances, imperfect information and transactions costs. Power imbalances emerge when a single or small number of employers exist in an area. In such cases, the employers may exercise monopsony (single buyer) power over their employees and use fewer workers at lower wages than would exist in a competitive labor market. Large-scale plantations, such as those existing in Central America and in cocoa-producing areas in West Africa, may exhibit such power. Imperfect information and transactions costs also constitute major sources of labor market imperfections. Labor must be hired, with corresponding costs of search and contracting, and supervised. Supervision involves costs of monitoring and enforcement. Such costs may distort incentives for hiring and use of different types of labor

Given information imperfections, employers may be unaware of the reliability of workers, some of whom shirk their duties. As a result, costly supervision or other contractual mechanisms must be undertaken to ensure the worker performs his or her duties as expected. Share cropping and piece-work contracts are two such mechanisms commonly found in less-developed countries. One study of the effectiveness of such contractual arrangements conducted in the Philippines found that piece-rate and shared cultivation were associated with significantly higher worker effort than time-wage contracts.[9] Contracts that tie together labor, land use agreements, credit and other inputs together often represent responses to imperfect information, transactions costs and risk sharing.

Wages in agriculture, whether on a casual or a full-time basis, are relatively low. Throughout the developing world, people who rely on agricultural employment as their main source of income tend to be poor. Poverty rates are high among tobacco-estate workers in Zimbabwe and Malawi, day laborers on the Indian sub-continent, and among coffee

[9] See A. Foster and M. Rosenzweig, "A Test for Moral Hazard in the Labor Market: Contractual Arrangements, Effort, and Health, *Review of Economics and Statistics*, vol. 76 (1994): 213–27.

and other plantation workers in Central America. Government interventions into labor markets are often justified based on this observed poverty. Minimum-wage legislation for farm workers has been tried in a number of countries including Zimbabwe, South Africa, and several Central American countries. Minimum wages for farm workers tend to be difficult to enforce also because of high transactions and enforcement costs, and imperfect information endemic in rural areas of less developed countries. Other interventions include establishment of labor enforcement standards, provision of labor market information, investments in education and schooling to increase worker productivity, and promotion of non-agricultural job opportunities that compete with agricultural employment. As noted in Chapter 7, non-farm employment constitutes a large and growing share of the rural labor markets. As agriculture develops over time, it must compete with alternative employment opportunities in rural labor markets.

SUMMARY

Land tenure refers to the rights and patterns of control over the land resource. Land rights determine social and political status as well as the economic power of a large proportion of the population in developing countries. A land reform is an attempt to change the land tenure system through public policies. Land tenure systems vary in farm size and organization, affect incentives to produce and invest, and influence the distribution of benefits from agricultural growth. Family farms, corporate farms, state farms, and group farms are major types of farm ownership. Many types of tenancy or leasing arrangements also exist.

The post-feudal order has resulted in some large capitalist farms and a coexisting small farm sector in many countries. No form of land tenure is universally efficient. Land tenure reform is difficult to achieve because those holding the land rights have political power. Land tenure reform, including more secure rights over land, is needed for improved economic efficiency, equity, and political and economic stability. Unless there is evidence that incentives have been created for farmers to undertake hard work and increase their capital investment, and, unless poverty has been reduced and social status improved for the rural poor, a successful land tenure reform has not occurred. Changes in land tenure and more secure property rights should be accompanied by credit, marketing and other services, and new land owners should be taxed to support development. Market-based land redistribution efforts include fortification of sales and rental markets, encouraging cooperatives to redistribute lands to their members, reduced government ownership, and creation of land banks.

Labor is often the most valuable resource the rural poor possess. Labor markets in developing countries often contain imperfections due to power imbalances, imperfect information, and transactions costs. Government interventions into labor markets are often justified based on this observed poverty.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Capitalistic agriculture
Casual labor
Compensation
Corporate farms
Entrepreneurial incentives
Family farms
Group farms
Land reform
Land tenure
Marketable surplus
Permanent labor
Political stabilization
Property rights
Public capital formation
Semi-feudal land tenure
Socialist agriculture
Stale farms
Successful land reform
Tenancy reform
Transactions costs

Looking Ahead

In this chapter, we considered institutional changes related to land and labor. In the next chapter, we consider institutional changes related to inputs and credit policies. Governments often intervene in input and credit markets. We will examine the nature and advisability of these interventions.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1 What is land tenure?
2 What are the major ways farms are organized?
3 What are the major types of tenancy arrangements?
4 What is land reform?
5 How does an anti-feudal land reform differ from land reforms within a capitalist or socialist agrarian structure?
6 Why is a land reform often necessary?
7 Why is a land reform difficult to achieve?
8 Why are large land holdings in a densely populated country bad?
9 What are the requisites of a successful land reform?
10 What pressures might population growth or new technologies place on existing land tenure arrangements?
11 What alternatives exist to administrative land reforms?
12 How can more secure land rights improve agricultural productivity?

13 What distinguishes casual labor from permanent labor and why do both exist?

14 Why are transactions costs a problem in labor markets?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Bell, Clive, "Reforming Property Rights in Land and Tenancy," *World Bank Research Observer,* vol. 5(2) (July 1990), pp. 143–66.

Berry, Albert, and William Cline, *Agrarian Structure and Productivity in Developing Countries* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1979).

de Janvry, Alain, "The Role of Land Reforms in Economic Development: Policies and Politics," *American Journal of Agricultural Economics*, vol. 63 (1981), pp. 384–92.

Deininger, Klaus, and Hans Binswanger, "The Evolution of the World Bank's Land Policy: Principles, Experience, and Future Challenges," *World Bank Research Observer*, vol. 14, no. 2 (August 1999), pp. 247–76.

Deininger, Klaus, and Songquing Jin, "Tenure Security and Land-Related Investment: Evidence from Ethiopia," *European Economic Review*, vol. 50 (July 2006), pp. 1245–77.

Feder, Gershon, and Klaus Deininger, "Land Institutions and Land Markets," *World Bank Policy Research Working Paper Series*: 2014, 1999.

Ray, Debraj, *Development Economics* (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1998), chapters 12–13.

Wortman, Sterling, and Ralph W. Cummings, Jr., *To Feed This World: The Challenge and the Strategy* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1978), pp. 271–88.

CHAPTER 14

Input and Credit Markets

> To take maximum advantage of technological advances in farming systems, farmers must have access to recommended production inputs at the specific times and in the quantities and qualities needed; (and) access, if necessary, to outside sources of finance to purchase these inputs…
>
> — Sterling Wortman and Ralph W. Cummings[1]

THIS CHAPTER

1. Explains why it is important for farmers to have access to purchased inputs and to credit
2. Describes the nature of rural money markets and the determinants of rural interest rates
3. Discusses why governments tend to subsidize input prices and credit and why these subsidies are generally inadvisable

IMPORTANCE of NEW INPUTS

Successful agricultural development in most developing countries today requires increased output per hectare and per worker. This agricultural intensification depends in part on the availability and financing of new, often manufactured, inputs. Fertilizers and pesticides, new seeds, irrigation systems, mechanical power, and supplemental minerals and nutrients for animals are examples of these inputs. Uptake of these inputs links farmers with national and international markets and exposes them to the associated risks and rewards. As energy prices increase and demands for food grow over time, the cost of production and relative returns of different input mixes will be affected by internationally determined forces. Governments must address a series of issues related to production, distribution, pricing, financing, and

[1] Sterling Wortman and Ralph W. Cummings, Jr., *To Feed This World: The Challenge and the Strategy* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1978), p. 343.

regulation of inputs, and to the identification and encouragement of optimal on-farm input usage.

Role of Manufactured Inputs

Manufactured inputs have an important role to play in agricultural development because the potential for expanding the land resource is limited in most countries. This scarcity or inelastic supply of land means that its price tends to increase over time, both absolutely and relative to the price of labor. The induced-innovation theory described in Chapter 11 indicates that farmers will seek new agricultural technologies that will enable them to substitute lower cost inputs for those whose scarcity and price are rising. Agricultural research, described in detail in Chapter 12, will create the plant varieties that are responsive to these inputs. New, higher-productivity inputs include new seeds, fertilizer, irrigation, and pesticides, many of which will be produced domestically, but their prices will be affected by international events. Seeds, fertilizer, irrigation, and pesticides tend to be highly complementary inputs. To be more productive than traditional varieties, new varieties of wheat, rice, corn, and other food crops require more fertilizer and better water control than would be used under traditional practices. Water and fertilizer tend to induce lush plant growth and an environment favorable to weeds and other pests, thus raising the profitability of pesticides as well. If this package of inputs is available to farmers together with the necessary financing and information on usage, land and labor productivity can be raised. The result is an increase in output per hectare and per unit of labor applied, at least in those areas where the new inputs are suited and adopted. A description of these inputs will help better define their potential and limitations.

Seed. Seeds of high-yielding varieties are usually a relatively low-cost input. However, seed of superior varieties must be developed or identified, tested, produced and multiplied, monitored for quality, and distributed to farmers. The government often has a role to play in the development, testing, quality monitoring, and production of basic seed. Private firms can be involved in the multiplication of seeds and distribution to farmers. The exact roles of public and private bodies in a particular country may change as the seed industry develops. As hybrid seeds continue to spread for crops such as maize, rice and eggplant, the importance of the seed industry grows as farmers planting hybrids can not save and use their seed from the previous crop if they expect to maintain productivity. One of the concerns with genetically modified crops is that one or a few seed companies may own the intellectual

property rights associated with the new seeds and therefore may charge a significant seed premium (see Chapter 12 for further discussion). The government has a role to play in ensuring no undue exercise of monopoly power by seed companies.

Fertilizer. Higher-producing varieties require additional fertilizer, particularly nitrogen, phosphate, and potash. These nutrients can be obtained from natural fertility in the soil, animal and plant wastes, and leguminous plants that can fix nitrogen from the air. These natural sources often, but not always, must be supplemented by chemical fertilizers to provide the necessary quantities and precise mixtures required. In areas where the supply of natural fertilizers is relatively inelastic, as commercial fertilizers become less expensive and are available in relatively elastic supply, their use can be expected to increase.

World fertilizer prices can be volatile, and between 2002 and 2008 they trended upward, placing cost stresses on developing-country producers. Upward pressures on prices are caused by world-wide demand growth; increased costs of raw materials — especially natural gas, which is used to produce nitrogen, the main ingredient in all nitrogen fertilizers; and rising transportation costs due higher energy costs. Demand for fertilizers has grown throughout the world, partly due to income and population growth, and partly the result of more corn being planted in developed countries for use in ethanol bio-fuels. Fertilizer prices may remain high in the future as all of these factors continue to influence the market.

Water. Availability of irrigation water is a major determinant of the number of crops grown per land area per year, the inputs used, and hence production. Higher levels of fertilizer application require more and better-timed water input. Drainage is also important because few crops can tolerate excessive standing water or salinization. Several important factors complicate irrigation decisions. Irrigation infrastructure requires large financial investments, and governments often provide funds or encourage private entities to provide funds for such endeavors. Efficient water management requires proper pricing mechanisms: private users of water might over- or under-use irrigation water if it is not properly priced. Proper pricing is, however, complicated by difficulty in measuring the amount of water used. Water system management can have important direct effects on human health; malaria and schistosomiasis are common tropical diseases whose vectors thrive in standing water. Because of these considerations, development and management of irrigation and drainage systems often require a combination of public and private initiatives. Governments can seek to

expand and modernize irrigation and drainage facilities. They can design rules of water pricing to encourage economically sound water use. Farmers and villages themselves can develop smaller, often well-based, systems and the necessary canals for distribution on farms along with rules for water distribution.

Efficient water use is likely to grow in importance in many areas of the world as looming water shortages result from over-use of aquifers, damming of major river systems, and from climate change which affects rainfall patterns and temperature-based rates of evaporation. Several water danger zones are emerging in the developing world, including the Sahel region of Africa, the Horn of Africa, the entire Middle East, the Indo-Gangetic Plains in India and Pakistan, and the North China Plain.[2] In these areas, growth in demand or dwindling supplies or both is likely in the future to be associated with shortages and, unless solutions are found, dwindling agricultural production. Solutions include better management of existing supplies and new efficiency-enhancing technologies such as drip irrigation and drought-resistant plant varieties.

Pesticides. Farmers often find using pesticides (insecticides for insects, fungicides for diseases, and herbicides for weeds) highly profitable, as agricultural production intensifies through increased use of new seeds, fertilizer, and water. Sometimes these pesticides are applied as a preventative treatment and other times after a major pest problem develops.

Pesticides can have serious drawbacks, however. Some pesticides are toxic to humans and animals and result in poisonings in the short run or chronic health problems in the longer term. Applications with improper equipment or inadequate protective clothing exacerbate health problems. Improper storage and handling can create adverse health consequences. Chemical pollution can spread beyond the area where the pesticide is applied, with particularly deleterious effects on fisheries. Some pesticides kill insects that are beneficial to agriculture. Often, when pesticides are applied over a period of time, the target insects, diseases, or weeds develop resistance, making increased pesticide amounts necessary to maintain the same level of effectiveness.

Pesticides, despite these problems, will likely be needed for some time until new pest-resistant varieties, biological and cultural practices, and other substitute methods for pest control can be further developed.

[2] See Jeffrey D. Sachs, *Common Wealth: Economics for a Crowded Planet* (New York: Penguin Books, 2008), pp. 121–37.

BOX 14-1.
INTEGRATED PEST MANAGEMENT in ECUADOR'S HIGHLANDS

Potato producers in the Ecuadorian highlands face a number of important pests including Late Blight, Andean Weevil, and the Central American Tuber Moth. Late Blight is controlled through heavy applications of fungicides, while the latter two pests are controlled by spraying Carbofuran, a highly toxic pesticide. Farmers combine pesticides into a mixed "cocktail" containing as many as 12 chemical agents and spray their fields with up to eight applications in a single season. These cocktails are mixed without knowledge of interactions between active ingredients or of potential human health impacts. Farmers complained about the high financial cost of these applications and the health costs associated with chemical misuse IPM techniques were developed through a USAID-sponsored research project (IPM-CRSP) and included identifying and screening Late Blight-resistant varieties, use of insect traps, more targeted spraying of a low-toxicity alternative, field sanitation and cultural techniques, and the use of biological control alternatives. Local farmers were invited to participate in Farmer Field Schools and field days to learn about the techniques. Pesticide applications were reduced by half, and experience on farmer fields showed that the IPM package yielded more than $600 per hectare in net benefit compared to alternative practices. This example shows that IPM technologies can be profitable at the same time they reduce exposure to harmful chemicals.

Source: Alwang et al., "Developing IPM Packages in Latin America," in *Globalizing Integrated Pest Management: A Participatory Process*, ed. G.W. Norton, E.A. Heinrichs, G.C. Luther, and M.E. Irwin (Ames, Iowa: Blackwell Publishing, 2005).

Several of these methods, called integrated pest management or IPM, have already been developed and implemented for certain pests on certain crops in certain locations (see Box 14-1). Much additional research is needed, however, to make these practices more widely available in developing countries. Weed control is especially important to intensified production in Africa where labor for weeding is less abundant than in other regions.

Animal Inputs. As discussed in Chapter 7, livestock play an important role in farming systems in developing countries. Animal productivity is often low, and new inputs related to disease control, supplementary minerals and other feed supplements, improved shelter, and, in some cases, better breeds can make a difference. Inputs for controlling diseases and parasites are perhaps the most important; the significance of feed supplements, shelter, and new breeds varies from

country to country and by type of livestock. Because indigenous livestock have been adapted to their specific environments, the transfer in of new breeds is particularly complex, except perhaps for poultry.

Mechanical Inputs Agricultural mechanization is frequently a controversial subject. Tilling, planting, cultivating, and harvesting are still done by hand in large parts of the developing world, particularly in Sub-Saharan Africa and in hilly regions on other continents. In many areas of Asia and Latin America, animals are an important source of power. Even in countries where farming is more mechanized, power tillers and tractors are often restricted to tillage and a few other operations.[3] The controversy arises because machinery usually substitutes for labor or animals. In many developing countries, labor is abundant and its cost is low. Alternative employment opportunities outside agriculture are limited, so that labor displacement is undesirable; therefore, mechanization is most profitable in countries where land is abundant, labor is scarce, and capital is cheap; this situation would seem to exist in relatively few countries.

Does this mean that there is little role for agricultural mechanization? Not necessarily, but the types of mechanization should be different from what is observed in most western developed countries. Highly productive cropping systems, whether on small or large farms, can benefit from more precise planting depths and fertilizer placement, mechanically pumped irrigation water, mechanical threshing (but usually not harvesting unless labor is scarce), transport, power spraying of pesticides, and tilling when timing is critical for multiple cropping. Many of these mechanical devices, however, may be hand-held (e.g., sprayers) or stationary (e.g., pumps and threshers). Even in areas where labor is usually abundant, shortages can occur in certain seasons, which, if relieved through mechanization, could increase the overall demand for labor.

Individual farmers will consider the private profitability when deciding whether to invest in a machine. If very large farms exist in countries with surplus labor in agriculture, operators of these farms may prefer labor-saving machinery because it allows them to deal with fewer employees, and, given the transactions costs and capital subsidies that may exist, it may be more privately profitable to follow large-scale mechanization even if society as a whole would be better off without it. Such behavior is one of the reasons that land reform is so important to many developing countries (see Chapter 13).

[3] See Hans Binswanger, "Agricultural Mechanization: A Comparative Historical Perspective," *World Book Research Observer*, vol. 1 (January 1986), pp. 27–56.

Governments and foreign assistance agencies must be careful not to encourage non-optimal mechanization (from society's viewpoint) through ill-advised subsidies or other means. Mechanization is inevitable over time, but the type of mechanization should be appropriate given the relative endowments of land, labor, and capital. Certain government policies, such as those influencing exchange rates, indirectly affect the prices of capital-intensive inputs such as machinery. Impacts on relative prices of inputs should be considered during policy formulation.

Input Markets

Developing countries often subsidize the purchase of seeds, fertilizers, irrigation water, pesticides, and occasionally mechanical inputs. Is this a good idea? Generally speaking, it is not. Such subsidies can lead to losses in economic efficiency for the country as a whole, can be costly to the government, can discourage private-sector competition in the provision of these inputs, and, particularly in the case of pesticides, may lead to environmental damages from over-application.

Governments frequently become involved in multiplying and selling improved seeds to farmers at or below cost. In some cases, scarce research resources are diverted to multiplying seeds rather than developing new varieties. In other cases, research systems are forced to focus on selling seeds to pay for operating costs for the system. As a result, private firms, unable to compete with the government treasury, do not take on the function of multiplying and selling seeds. Without development of these private firms, the government must continue to be responsible for this function.

Fertilizer subsidies can be used in selected situations in which governments desire to increase the adoption of new inputs by groups of farmers that might not otherwise adopt them. Unfortunately, in many countries these subsidies are necessitated by the artificially low prices imposed on agricultural outputs for the purpose of keeping food prices down for urban consumers. Input subsidies help compensate farmers for income losses from these policies. While this combination of policies can have the desired effect, at least in the short run, high costs to the government and potential fiscal problems result in the long run, making the policies non-sustainable. Also, the economic efficiency losses associated with these policies can be substantial. Finally, studies show that from the farmer's perspective access to inputs can be more important than their prices. Subsidy policies and government involvement in input markets often lead to shortages of inputs and their rationing, which are harmful to long-run growth.

BOX 14.2.
MODERN INPUTS and ECONOMIC GROWTH

New technologies and inputs help achieve increases in agricultural output and income in rural areas of developing countries. This income is spent by the households on goods and services, some of which are produced locally and others which are imported into the region. These expenditures induce income growth in the non-farm economy, the so-called *multiplier effects*. By far, the largest portion of these multipliers is caused by household expenditures on consumer goods and services, though the effects resulting from increased use of farm inputs and in processing, marketing, and transportation of farm output are substantial contributors to regional growth.

Linkages between farms and suppliers of inputs also create spillovers into the local economy. Though seeds, agrichemicals, irrigation supplies, and farm machinery usually are not produced in agricultural regions, input supply services including technical advice, machinery repair, and a large proportion of irrigation construction and maintenance can be produced locally. These activities create opportunities for non-farm employment and income that is in turn spent locally. The creation and deepening of backward linkages from agriculture are important contributions to rural economic development.

Efficiency losses are also a problem for water and pesticide subsidies. The latter can create excessive use of toxic chemicals and can result in all the deleterious effects described earlier. In summary, input subsidies are generally inadvisable. The government can play a more constructive role by ensuring the availability of these inputs (including the improvement of rural roads), publishing price information to encourage competition, setting quality standards for seeds and fertilizers, requiring and enforcing labeling of input containers, and regulating use of toxic pesticides and transgenic seeds.

Role of Credit

Access to credit becomes important as a developing country moves from traditional to more modern agriculture. Credit helps farmers purchase inputs such as seeds, fertilizers, and chemicals. It facilitates purchase of durable productive inputs such as machinery, and helps households better manage their resources. Credit can be used for input purchases, investment, marketing, and consumption. Without credit, even high-return investments, long- or short-term, would be infeasible for many farmers. Loans enable farmers to better manage risks since they can borrow during bad years and pay back the loans during good years.

Even within cropping seasons, short-term credit is used to smooth consumption and provide cash at times of acute needs.

Without widespread access to credit, inputs associated with improved technologies can be purchased only by wealthier farmers. Capital formation and improvements on smaller farms can be hampered. Fewer farmers are able to purchase or even rent land. In cases where produce marketing requires cash outlays, lack of credit can disrupt marketing activities. Well-functioning rural financial institutions are essential to improving economic efficiency, reducing income risk, and meeting income distribution goals.

NATURE of RURAL MONEY-MARKETS and DETERMINANTS of RURAL INTEREST RATES

Finance in rural areas consists of three components: credit (borrowing and lending), saving, and insurance. These components frequently overlap, as savings can be used for capital purchases (and hence substitute for credit) or as a safety net or insurance substitute. Developing-country households use complex strategies to increase their productive capacity, share risk, and manage purchases of food and other goods over time. Access to finance helps determine the suitability of such strategies. Better understanding of rural financial markets requires consideration of the three components, and efforts to strengthen one component may be compromised by weaknesses in others.[4]

Credit facilitates the temporary transfer of purchasing power from one individual or organization to another. However, many types of lenders or *money-markets* exist, and credit institutions may or may not adequately serve the needs of a developing agriculture. Credit is often viewed as an oppressive or exploitive device in developing countries. We need to examine both the types of lending sources found in developing countries and the evidence of exploitive behavior associated with these money-markets.

Types of Money-Markets

Rural money-markets consist of two broadly defined lending sources: organized (or formal) and informal. Private commercial banks, government-controlled banks, cooperative banks, and credit societies are called organized credit sources. Public or private, these lending sources usually are regulated by the government and are open to audit and

[4] See Manfred Zeller and Richard L. Meyer, *The Critical Triangle of Microfinance: from Vision to Reality* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 2003) for more details.

inspection. In addition to credit, they may provide other financial services such as savings and certain forms of insurance. In general, formal money markets have historically not served well the needs of small- and medium-scale farmers in developing countries. As a result, over time many developing-country governments have intervened to promote better access to formal financial services, primarily credit. These programs were largely unsuccessful for many reasons, one of which was that they did not recognize alternative, informal credit sources that are found throughout the developing world.

Informal or unorganized credit sources include moneylenders, merchants, pawnbrokers, landlords, friends, and relatives. Some credit sources — e.g., landlords and merchants — combine other economic activities with lending. Except for absentee landlords, the relationship between borrower and informal lender is generally marked by personal contact, simple accounting, and low administrative costs.

Informal lenders are important sources of funds in many rural areas. These lenders usually know the borrowers personally, require little collateral, make consumption as well as production loans, are accessible at all times, and usually are flexible in rescheduling loans. However, these informal lenders also tend to charge high rates of interest and are frequently accused of exploitive activities. In cases where lenders are landlords, merchants, or both, they have been accused of using their position to tie borrowers to themselves by forcing their clients to rent from, borrow from, buy from, and sell to them. Thus, these agents are said to extract monopoly profits from their clients. Are borrowers consistently being exploited? It is important to examine this question because it has important implications for the role of more formal private and public credit institutions.

Do Informal Money-Markets Exploit Borrowers?

The issue of borrower exploitation revolves around the existence of usury or monopoly profits earned by the lenders. Hence we need to consider the factors that determine the interest rates charged by these lenders. The major components of rates of interest on loans are: (1) administrative costs, (2) the opportunity cost of lending, (3) a risk premium due to the probability of default in repayment, and (4) monopoly profit.

Administrative costs should not be too high for moneylenders, given simple contracting procedures and personal knowledge of clients. Many loans with small amounts of money per loan increase administrative costs, but these costs are probably not excessive. Opportunity costs of lending are low in rural areas because interest rates offered

by organized money markets tend to be low. Therefore, the critical factor in determining whether interest rates are generating monopoly profits in the informal money market is the risk premium or the probability of default. The risk premium for loans to small-scale, particularly tenant, farmers can be high. These farmers are close to the margin of subsistence, and a streak of bad weather or a serious illness can spell disaster. Without formal collateral, the risk of default grows. Because weather tends to affect all farmers in a given area, a spell of bad weather creates potential for simultaneous default of many borrowers. Therefore one would expect relatively high interest rates just to cover the risk factor. Exploitive situations do exist in which moneylenders extract monopolist gains. However, careful empirical studies seem to indicate that monopoly profits may not be as prevalent or large in informal credit markets as is often believed.[5] The reason is competition. The amounts of the loans are often small, and start-up costs required to become a moneylender are low. This ease of entry serves to keep interest rates at an appropriate level given the level of risk, administrative costs, and the opportunity cost of capital. If profit margins become large, incentives are created for new moneylenders to enter the business and compete away those profits.

High risks associated with loans to subsistence farmers, however, mean that lenders have incentives to maintain tight control over borrowers. Moneylenders who are also landlords or merchants have means of tying their clients to themselves through leases, consumer credit, and so forth. Other moneylenders may be hesitant to lend to someone who already owes substantial sums or who has defaulted to another. In summary, it appears that some exploitation by moneylenders does occur, particularly if the moneylenders control the land or the market. However, the magnitude of this exploitation may not be as great as is often believed. Evidence of high interest rates on rural loans is alone not sufficient to conclude that moneylenders are exploitive, since there are high costs associated with making these loans. Informal sources of credit serve a vital function in most developing countries because, without them, most small farmers would not have access to credit.

Organized Money-Markets and Transactions Costs

Why are small farmers in developing countries not better served by organized money-markets? Both private and public financial institutions

[5] See, for example, P. Bardham and A. Rudra, "Interlinkage of Hand Labor and Capital Relations: An Analysis of Village Survey Data in East Asia," *Economic and Political Weekly* (1978), pp. 367–84.

find that transactions costs are high. Loans, savings, and insurance needs are small, and the paperwork and time spent evaluating potential clients, collecting payments, and supervising loans in order to reduce risks of default are costly. In many cases, the government regulates the maximum interest allowed, and that rate will fail to cover the administrative costs and risk. Thus, where private and public sources of finance exist, they tend to deal with larger-scale farmers to reduce administrative costs and the chances of default (see Box 14-3).

The magnitude of these transactions costs is illustrated by a relatively successful bank that has provided credit for many years to the rural poor in Bangladesh. The Grameen Bank of Bangladesh targets households that own less than 0.5 acres of cultivable land.[6] The bank organizes its clients into groups and associations, provides credit without collateral, and supervises utilization of the loans. A maximum amount (the equivalent of about $150) is lent to individuals within a group of five members. Nearly three-fourths of the borrowers are women. Peer pressure together with close supervision ensures repayment rates of more than 90 percent. The interest rate charged is roughly 16 percent a year and the default rate has historically been less than 2 percent. The bank is subsidized, however, by the State Bank of Bangladesh and by the International Fund for Agricultural Development (IFAD). The interest on the loans would be around 5 to 10 percent higher than it is if the bank had, to break even, to borrow at the same rate as the other financial institutions in the country.[7] Because the default rate and the opportunity cost of capital are low, it is clear that most of the interest charged is to cover administrative cost. The bank could lower this cost with less supervision, but the default rate would likely rise and offset the cost saving.

The Grameen Bank also lends very little money for activities associated with crop production. In general, this type of *microcredit* lending serves mostly for livestock and poultry, for small-scale processing and manufacturing, and for trading and shop keeping. These activities are less risky than crop production. The Grameen Bank model has been improved upon through sequential experimentation, and micro-finance

[6] See Mahabub Hossain, "Credit for Alleviation of Rural Poverty: The Grameen Bank of Bangladesh," International Food Policy Research Institute Research, Report No. 65 (Washington, D.C., February 1988), for an excellent discussion of the Grameen Bank; see also Mark M. Pitt and Shahidur Khandker, "The Impact of Group-based Credit Programs on Poor Households in Bangladesh: Does the Gender of Participants Matter?" *Journal of Political Economy* (1998), pp. 958–96, for information on the impacts of such programs.

[7] Hossain, "Credit for the Alleviation of Rural Poverty," p. 11.

BOX 14-3.
ADMINISTRATIVE COSTS and LOAN SIZE

The cost of lending to farmers includes relatively large fixed costs to pay for administration and bookkeeping. To cover these costs, interest rates must be higher for smaller loans, even if all borrowers have equal risk of default. For example, if the variable cost of capital is 10 percent but the bank incurs a fixed cost of $10 to administer each loan, for the bank to break even on each loan it must charge a total of 20 percent interest to those who want to borrow $100 for repayment after one year. In contrast, those who want to borrow $1000 would have to pay only 11 percent.

organizations around the world are now flourishing without subsidization. These organizations and some of their organizing principles are discussed below.

One can see that small agricultural loans are costly and, as a result, most commercial lenders lend to larger farmers where the risk and administrative costs are lower. Government-supported credit programs often have subsidized interest rates in developing countries, but these rates tend to encourage loans to large farmers (many micro-finance institutions are an exception).

Transactions costs for private or public loan transactions can also be high because of fraud, favoritism, or embezzlement of funds from within the system. This situation arises most frequently when loans are subsidized, creating excess demand for credit and incentives for bribery.

GOVERNMENT-ASSISTED CREDIT PROGRAMS

Many governments use credit programs as part of their development program, and many international donors support these programs. Government-supported credit is based on the notions that (1) credit is critical to the adoption of new technologies, (2) moneylenders exploit farmers and public credit can provide them with competition, (3) credit can be combined with supervision and education to increase the capacity of farmers to use modern inputs, (4) subsidized credit can offset disincentives to production created by other policies that discriminate against agriculture, and (5) government-supported credit programs can lessen inequities in the rural sector.[8]

Subsidized credit provides an easy vehicle for transferring public funds to the rural sector. Examples of subsidized credit programs

[8]See Yujiro Hayami and Vernon Ruttan, *Agricultural Development: An International Perspective* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1985), pp. 398–403.

Bangladesh families have benefited from Grameen Bank loans.

abound in every region of the developing world. Dale Adams points to a number of studies of such programs in Honduras, Sudan, Jamaica, and elsewhere that demonstrate how ill-advised subsidized credit is from a development perspective.[9] Adams finds that while evaluations of subsidized credit programs often find favorable impacts on individual borrowers, a broader examination of the net effects of these programs usually finds few positive effects on economic development. They also can compromise the viability of the rural financial system.

Effects of Subsidized Credit

Subsidized credit creates excess demand for credit by lowering interest rates. In many cases, because interest rates are negative after controlling for inflation, the demand for credit is infinite. Subsidized credit erodes the capital available in financial markets and undermines rural financial institutions. Private banks cannot cover expenses (administrative costs, defaults, etc.) at low interest rates, yet they are forced to lower interest rates in order to remain competitive with public credit sources, even if not required to lower them by law. Thus, the survival

[9] See Dale W. Adams, "The Conundrum of Successful Credit Projects in Floundering Rural Financial Markets," *Economic Development and Cultural Change*, vol. 36 (January 1988), pp. 355–67.

of these private institutions is threatened. If they fail, additional government involvement and additional budget outlays will be needed. An equally important effect of subsidized loan rates is that they lower all interest rates and, hence, discourage private savings. If agricultural development is to be able to generate capital, then viable rural financial institutions are needed to both provide loans and mobilize savings.

Because subsidized credit generates excess demand for loans, credit is rationed and almost inevitably goes to the larger farms for which the administrative costs are lower. The phenomenon of successful impacts of subsidized credit on individual borrowers yet negligible effects on overall development exists because rationed credit means that few people are touched by the programs. Seldom is more than 5 percent of the potential credit recipients reached. Because the subsidized loans are valuable, the credit system can become politicized as large landowners offer favors to bank managers to obtain loans or financially support politicians to encourage continuation of the program. In addition to these distributive effects, default rates on subsidized loans tend to be high. Public sector lenders may be less familiar with the borrowers than are the lenders in the private sector. Because there are pressures to lend to larger borrowers, the productive potential of the loan may not be considered, leading to high default tales.

Innovations in Rural Finance

Since the early 1970s, a gradual revolution in lending to the poor has been occurring in a number of developing countries. As countries learn from their failures with subsidized credit programs, and as experience grows with targeted small, group-loan programs such as the Grameen Bank in Bangladesh, the large-scale provision of small loans to low-income people has expanded. As of 2001, more than 1,500 micro-finance institutions (MFIs) with 54 million members existed in 85 developing countries.[10] The Grameen Bank, however, while demonstrating that poor people can be good credit risks given a credit program structured with proper incentives, has remained somewhat constrained by its inability to operate entirely without subsidy. Since the late 1980s, the *poverty lending* approach of banks such as the Grameen Bank has been challenged by a more commercially-oriented *financial systems* microfinance approach.[11] While both approaches focus on the poor,

[10] Cecile Lapenu and Manfred Zeller, Distribution, Growth and Performance of Microfinance Institutions in Africa, Asia, and Latin America, IFPRI FCND Discussion Paper 114 (Washington, D.C.,2001), p. 111.

[11] See Marguerite S. Robinson, *The Micro Finance Revolution: Sustainable Finance for the Poor* (Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2001), p. 7.

the latter emphasizes savings services to the poor as well as loans.[12] A financial systems approach enables banks to generate sufficient resources to not only be sustainable but to provide opportunity for the economically active poor (as opposed to the extremely poor) to save and invest at a decent return during times when they are able to save. Examples of such micro-credit banking systems that have proven profitable are found in countries as diverse as Bolivia and Indonesia. Micro-financial institutions are also experimenting in offering the third component of the finance trinity: micro-insurance. Micro-finance institutions have incentives to help their clients manage risks, since a poor outcome may lead to default on loans.

These new experiences in providing finance to small-scale and poor farmers have been built on a number of principles. The first principle is recognition that credit, savings, and insurance are interlinked and efforts to provide one component should consider impacts on the others. Second, funds are fungible and can be used for things other than input purchases, such as consumption and other emergency needs. By better enabling risk management, access to financial services can improve income generation over time. A third principle is that for sustainability, credit providers should charge what the loans cost, which is usually more than is charged to large commercial borrowers because of the transactions costs on many small loans. Some of those costs arise from the necessity of screening credit applicants. The key innovation of microfinance is the use of joint group liability; loans are made to groups and if one member of the group defaults, the entire loan is considered to be in default. sing group liability, groups use local knowledge to screen members and moral suasion to enforce repayment. These factors reduce transactions costs and improve loan repayment rates. Commercially-oriented micro-finance provides formal competition for informal money lenders, and hence is most likely to succeed in precisely those areas where moneylender profits are excessive due to local monopoly power.

Lessons for Credit Policies

Several lessons emerge from the applied research on rural credit. First, adoption of new technologies often requires purchase of modern inputs. Consequently, credit availability has been found to be more important to development than the interest rate charged, and there is a

[12] Lapenu and Zeller, Distribution, Growth and Performance of Microfinance Institutions in Africa, Asia, and Latin America; note that of the 54 million members of MFIs world wide, 44 million are savers and 23 million are borrowers.

tradeoff between credit availability and subsidized interest rates. Second, the viability of rural financial institutions is jeopardized by subsidized credit. This weakening of rural financial markets can constrict both the supply of and demand for credit. The rural poor are penalized on their deposits as well as their loans.[13] Third, credit is *fungible*: in other words, it may not be used for its intended purpose. It's easy for subsidized production credit to be used for consumption items or nonproductive assets. This fungibility is not necessarily bad unless it raises the default rate, but should at least be understood by policymakers. Fourth, a key to reducing market interest rates is to reduce agricultural risk (and hence defaults) and the transactions costs associated with lending and borrowing. Higher income levels associated with economic development may help reduce the risk of defaults, as may certain crop insurance and other government policies discussed in Chapter 15. Improved roads and other means of communication, and in some cases, group borrowing and guarantee of loans, can help reduce transactions costs.

Because administrative costs per dollar lent to small farms are higher than to large farms, banks either must charge higher interest rates (or other hidden charges) to small farms than large, or give loans mainly to large farms. Thus, many countries need to pursue policies to make land more widely available to the poor or the credit system will also work against the poorest farmers.

SUMMARY

Successful agricultural development requires increased output per hectare and per worker. This agricultural intensification depends on the availability of new, often manufactured, inputs. Seed, fertilizer, pesticides, irrigation, mechanical power, and supplementary minerals and feeds are examples of these inputs. Manufactured inputs can substitute for inelastic supplies of land to increase production at a lower per-unit cost. A variety of issues must be resolved by each country, however, with respect to externalities associated with certain inputs such as pesticides, the appropriate types of mechanization, and the role of the government in producing, distributing, and financing inputs. Governments often subsidize inputs. These subsidies can discourage private competition for input supply, can be costly to the government, and may encourage overuse of inputs such as pesticides that create externalities.

[13] See Adams, "The Conundrum of Successful Credit Projects in Floundering Rural Financial Markets," p. 366.

Credit is essential as a country moves from traditional to modern agriculture. Credit from informal sources such as moneylenders is often viewed as oppressive. However, risks and administrative costs of loans to small farms are high and, given the typical competition among moneylenders, monopoly profits may not be as prevalent or as high as often portrayed. When moneylenders are also landlords or merchants, the chances of exploitation are greater. Formal private and public lenders do not serve a high proportion of the farmers because risks and transactions costs are high. Because governments frequently subsidize interest rates, rationed credit tends to go to the larger farms. The subsidies erode the capital in the financial system and, thus, the number of farms served. Low interest rates also discourage deposits and reduce the ability of formal private banks to compete. Credit, savings, and insurance are interlinked, and efforts to provide one component should consider impacts on the others.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Administrative costs
Exploitation
Fertilizers and pesticides
Fungibility
Grameen Bank
Group lending
Informal credit sources
Input subsidies
Integrated pest management
Irrigation systems
Mechanical power
Microfinance
Moneylenders
Money-markets
Monopoly power
New seeds
Opportunity costs of lending
Organized credit sources
Purchased inputs
Risk of default
Subsidized credit

Looking Ahead

Governments often intervene in agricultural markets to influence prices. In the next chapter we examine why governments intervene and the effects of those interventions. Efficient marketing systems are essential for agricultural development, and we consider the role that governments can play in improving the marketing system.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1 Why are manufactured agricultural inputs usually necessary for agricultural development?
2 What are some of the key manufactured inputs needed?
3 In what manner are agricultural inputs complementary in nature?

4 What are the advantages and disadvantages of pesticides?
5 Why is mechanization a controversial issue?
6 Why do governments subsidize the purchase of manufactured inputs?
7 Why is agricultural credit important to agricultural development?
8 How do organized and informal sources of credit differ?
9 Why might bankers be biased against small farmer loans in developing countries?
10 What factors would you examine if you were trying to assess whether interest rates charged in informal money-markets were exploiting borrowers?
11 What are subsidized interest rates? Are they a good idea for getting agriculture moving?
12 What might be one problem associated with the fact that credit is fungible?
13 Why do governments support credit programs?
14 How might transactions costs associated with rural financial markets be reduced?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Adams, Dale W., "The Conundrum of Successful Credit Projects in Floundering Rural Financial Markets," *Economic Development and Cultural Change,* vol. 36 (January 1988), pp. 355–67.

Adams, Dale W., Douglas H. Graham, and J. D. Von Pischke, eds., *Undermining Rural Development with Cheap Credit* (Boulder, Colo.: Westview Press, 1984).

Binswanger, Hans, "Agricultural Mechanization: A Comparative Historical Analysis," *World Bank Research Observer*, vol. 1 (January 1986), pp. 27–56.

Bouman, F. J. A. and R. Houtman, "Pawnbrokering as an Instrument of Rural Banking in the Third World," *Economic Development and Cultural Change*, vol. 37 (October 1988), pp. 69–99.

Hayami, Yujiro and Vernon W. Ruttan, *Agricultural Development: An International Perspective* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1985), pp. 398–403.

Hossain, Mahabub, "Credit for Alleviation of Rural Poverty: The Grameen Bank in Bangladesh," International Food Policy Research Institute, Research Report No. 65, Washington, D.C., February 1988.

Pingali, Prabhu, Yves Bigot, and Hans P. Binswanger, *Agricultural Mechanization and the Evolution of Farming Systems in Sub-Saharan Africa* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1987).

Robinson, Marguerite, *The Micro Finance Revolution: Sustainable Finance for the Poor* (Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2001).

Sachs, Jeffrey D. *Common Wealth: Economics for a Crowded Planet* (New York: Penguin Books, 2008).

Von Pischke, J. D., Dale W. Adams, and Gordon Donald, *Rural Financial Markets in Developing Countries: Their Use and Abuse* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1983).

Yaron, Jacob, "What Makes Rural Financial Institutions Successful?" *World Bank Research Observer*, vol. 9 (1; 1994), pp. 49–70.

Zeller, Manfred and Richard L. Meyer, *The Critical Triangle of Microfinance: from Vision to Reality* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 2003)

CHAPTER 15

Pricing Policies and Marketing Systems

> The links between price polices and food marketing take the food policy analyst to the very core of an economy and the most basic issues concerning the consequences of market organization for economic efficiency and income distribution. — C. Peter Timmer

THIS CHAPTER

1 Discusses the nature of markets, how and why governments tend to intervene in agricultural markets to affect prices, and the results of those interventions

2 Explains the importance of efficient marketing systems and describes how marketing systems have changed over time in developing countries

3 Considers the role that government can play in providing marketing infrastructure, market information, marketing services, and regulations

PRICING POLICIES

Food and agricultural prices are major determinants of producer incentives and real incomes in developing countries. These prices are influenced by government policies and by the efficiency of marketing systems. Pricing policies and marketing systems have changed significantly over the past thirty years, especially in response to domestic budgetary and global market pressures. The roles of government, processors, wholesalers, and retailers are changing. Governments in some

[1] C. Peter Timmer, "The Relationship Between Price Policy and Food Marketing," in *Food Policy: Integrating Supply, Distribution, and Consumption*, ed. J. Price Gittinger, Joanne Leslie, and Caroline Hoisington (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1987), p. 293.

developing countries continue to adopt pricing policies that reduce food prices for urban consumers even if farmers are forced to bear the costs. In other developing countries, increased integration into global markets has resulted in freeing up of prices and in new approaches to processing, marketing, and regulating farm commodities and products. Ironically, in many developed countries where farmers are a much smaller proportion of the population, government price interventions continue to support agricultural prices, often at the expense of taxpayers and consumers, and in some cases with deleterious effects on developing countries. Why do we observe these policies? How are they implemented, and what are their short- and long-run effects? These questions are addressed below, followed in the next section by a discussion of the roles of agricultural marketing systems and how those systems have changed over time.

Reasons for Price Intervention

Governments intervene into agricultural price formation for two major reasons: to change the outcomes in agricultural markets themselves, and to raise revenue to pay for roads, police, and other public services. These interventions have a large influence on the welfare of both farmers and non-farmers. Sometimes government policies reflect the long-run interest of society as a whole, helping to stabilize and raise income for many people, but often they reflect more narrow or short-run political objectives.

The long-run interest of most societies calls for policies that (1) contribute to economic growth, (2) improve income distribution or at least meet minimum nutritional needs of citizens, and (3) provide a certain measure of food security or stability for the country over time. Governments vary widely in what they actually do, and their choice of policies helps explain the wide differences in economic outcomes across countries and over time. The choice of policy is much influenced by how governments respond to key interest groups. Urban consumers want lower food prices, particularly the poor who spend a large fraction of their income on food. Employers also prefer low food prices, which allow them to pay lower money wages. But low food prices hurt agricultural producers, and reduce investment in agriculture, which lowers farm productivity over time.

In most developing countries, the balance of political power favors urban consumers and employers. Although farmers are in the majority, they are usually poorer, are often illiterate, and are geographically dispersed across the countryside. Thus, political power with respect to food prices is centered in urban-industrial areas.

As development proceeds and incomes grow, several factors may cause the balance of political power within countries to shift towards helping farmers, if necessary at the expense of consumers. First, food prices become less important in household budgets because the proportion of income spent on food declines with higher incomes. Second, the declining relative size of the agricultural sector makes it less costly for the government to succumb to pressures from farmers, while at the same time the reduced number and increased specialization of farms improves the ability of farmers to organize for collective action. Third, governments in richer countries have easier access to other sources of tax revenue outside the farm sector.

The form of government interventions into agricultural commodity markets also shifts as development proceeds. In the poorest countries, interventions often focus on international trade because that is easiest to control. Governments typically tax both imports and exports, and since poor countries often export farm goods and import manufactures, the result is a tax on farmers and protection for local industries. In somewhat higher-income developing countries, governments often introduce food-price subsidies, and increasingly try to support farm income as well. At the highest levels of economic development, perhaps the most important transition is towards increasingly well-targeted government programs that meet their political objectives with fewer side effects. For example, food price subsidies may be restricted to benefit only the poorest consumers, while farm subsidies may be made less distorting.

During early stages of development, agricultural policies are often highly inefficient, partly because governments have limited administrative capacity, but also because citizens who lose from bad policy may be unable to organize against them. Inefficiencies remain over time, but policies can improve as development proceeds, due partly to the structural transformation of the underlying economy but also to improvements in political accountability.

Methods of Price Intervention

Governments intervene to influence agricultural prices in several ways. They set price ceilings or floors and enforce them with commodity subsidies or taxes, manipulation of foreign exchange rates, commodity storage programs, restrictions on quantities traded, and/or other policy instruments. Let's examine how a few of these instruments work.

Suppose the government wants to lower the price of rice, an important food in the diet. The supply of rice must therefore be increased in the market relative to demand. Additional supplies can be created

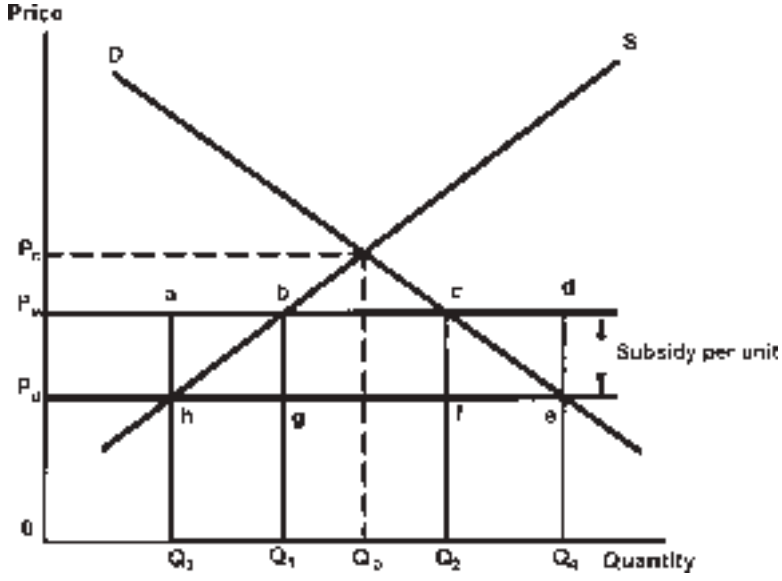


Figure 15-1. Economics of a price ceiling and consumer subsidy to lower agricultural prices.

by increasing imports or by stimulating domestic production. In either case, government revenues must be used to bridge the gap between the initial price and the desired *price ceiling.* Figure 15-1 presents an illustration of how the price ceiling and subsidy might work.

The supply and demand schedules would intersect at price P_0 and quantity Q_0 if there were no trade in rice. However, the country in this example is assumed to be a rice importer, so the world price of rice, P_w, is below P_o. Initially, at P_w and without government intervention, quantity Q_1 is produced domestically, Q_2 is demanded by consumers, and the difference, Q_2, – Q_1, is met by imports. If the government desires to artificially create a domestic price for rice, P_d, below the world price, it must pay a subsidy per unit of rice equal to the difference between the world price and the desired domestic price ($P_w – P_d$). This subsidy could be paid on a per-ton basis to commercial importers to cover their losses for importing rice at a price below what they pay on the world market, or it could be paid to a government agency that imports rice.[2] In either case, the direct cost to the government of the subsidy is ($P_w – P_d$) times

[2] C. Peter Timmer, *Getting Prices Right: The Scope and Limits of Agricultural Price Policy* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1986), p. 36.

($Q_4 - Q_3$), which equals area *adeh* in Figure 15-1. This kind of price ceiling program is common in many African and Asian countries. Consumers benefit but rice producers are hurt by the lower price of rice.

Sometimes the government prefers not to allow scarce foreign exchange to be spent on increased imports. In this case, farmers may be legally forced to sell their commodity to the government at a low price. For example, the government might force farmers to deliver Q_3 units of rice at P_d. Although nothing is imported, the demand for rice (Q_4) exceeds its supply (Q_3). The government must then ration rice to consumers. The shortage in the market provides incentives for farmers to sell their crop illegally on the *black market* for a higher price. Even if the government allows adequate imports to meet the projected demand at the lower price, if the price of the product is higher across the border, farmers will (usually illegally) sell in a neighboring country, thus further reducing domestic supplies.

One means to avoid reducing domestic production and illegal sales while at the same time supporting farm incomes is for the government to administer a two-price scheme in which producers are paid the world price but consumers pay only the subsidized price. This type of system is illustrated in Figure 15-1. Rather than paying *adeh* to importers, the government would pay $P_w bg P_d$, or a subsidy of ($P_w - P_d$) times ($Q_1 - 0$) to producers and a subsidy of *bdeg*, or ($P_w - P_d$) times ($Q_4 - Q_1$), to importers. Producers would still receive P_w, while consumers would face a price of P_d, thus the name *two-price scheme*. Of course an even higher subsidy could be paid to producers to further reduce imports and increase the producer price. The obvious difficulty with this scheme is its impact on the government budget. The subsidy costs have to be paid for by some means. Because of this cost, few major commodities are subsidized this way in developing countries, although related schemes are common in developed countries such as the United States and Japan, and in Europe. Two-price wheat programs have been operative, however, at various times in Brazil, Egypt, Mexico, and a few other low-income countries. Table 15-1 lists examples of past food subsidy programs in developing countries.

Developing countries often have food subsidy programs that are targeted toward the poor or to nutritionally vulnerable groups. These subsidies can be implemented through ration shops, ration cards, food stamps, or other means. Usually only the very poor are eligible, to keep the cost down, but in some cases ration shops, which sell basic grains and other staples, are located in poor neighborhoods under the theory that only the poor will frequent them. Alternatively, self-targeting can be achieved by subsidizing foods that the poor tend to buy, such as

TABLE 15-1. EXAMPLES of EXISTING or PREVIOUS CONSUMER PRICE SUBSIDY PROGRAMS in DEVELOPING COUNTRIES

Country	Principal foods subsidized	Type of program	Food distribution	Actual coverage (implicit targeting)
Bangladesh	Wheat and rice	Price subsidy	Targeted & rationed	Mostly urban
Brazil	Wheat	Price subsiidy	General	Total population
China	Rice	Price subsidy	General	Mostly urban
Colombia	Selected processed food	Food stamps	Targeted & rationed	Poor households with pre-schoolers or women who are pregnant or lactating
Egypt	Wheat	Price subsidy	General	Total population
Egypt	Rice	Price subsidy	Rationed	Mostly urban
Egypt	Sugar, tea, frozen meats fish, and certain other foods	Price subsidy	Rationed	Total population
India	Wheat and rice	Price subsidy	Rationed	Total population
Mexico	Maize and certain other foods	Price subsidy	General	Mostly urban
Morocco	Wheat	Price subsidy	General	Total population
Pakistan	Wheat	Price subsidy	Rationed	Mostly urban
Philippines	Rice and oil	Price subsidy	Targeted & rationed	All households in areas selected for high level of poverty
Sri Lanka				
(up to 1977)	Rice	Price subsidy	Rationed	Total population
(from 1979)	Rice	Food stamps	Targeted & rationed	50 percent of population biased toward the poor
Sudan	Wheat	Price subsidy	General	Mostly urban
Thailand	Rice	Price subsidy	General	Total population
Zambia	Maize	Price subsidy	General	Mostly urban

Source: Per Pinstrup-Andersen, *Food Subsidies in Developing Countries* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1988), p. 6.

starchy staples or maize. Substantial savings can result from targeting: in Sri Lanka, targeting and program modification reduced outlays for consumer food subsidies from 15 percent of total government expenditures to less than 3 percent.[3] The impact of targeted subsidies on agricultural prices and incentives depends on how they are financed, but food subsidies need not have adverse effects on agricultural incentives.

Another common price-policy instrument in developing countries is the export tax. The purpose of an export tax is to raise government revenues or reduce domestic commodity prices. The effects of the tax are illustrated in Figure 15-2. Because the country exports the commodity, the world price, P_w, is shown above the price, P_0, which would have prevailed domestically if there were no trade. If exports were freely allowed, this world price would prevail in the domestic market, and a total quantity of Q_2 would be produced domestically, Q_1 would be demanded by domestic consumers, and the difference ($Q_2 - Q_1$) would be exported. Then, if an export tax equal to $P_w - P_d$ were imposed, the domestic price would fall to P_d, consumers would increase con-sumption to Q_3, producers would reduce the quantity supplied to Q_4, exports would decline to $Q_4 - Q_3$, and the government would earn an export tax revenue of ($P_w - P_d$) times ($Q_4 - Q_3$) or the area *bcfg* in Figure 15-2. Poor countries may impose export taxes because they lack an alternative source of revenue. In the Figure 15-2 example, the country is unable to influence the world price P_w, because it is a small producer in the world market for the commodity. Domestic producers pay the cost of the tax through lower prices. If the country is a large producer, such as Brazil in the coffee market, its exports and any export tax influence the world market price. Therefore, part of the burden of the export tax can be passed on to consumers in other countries.

Governments follow many types of pricing policies; those described above are among the most common and direct pricing instruments employed in developing countries. Another common direct-pricing policy is the attempt to stabilize commodity prices through a *buffer-stock* program. With such a program, supplies are purchased by the government if the price drops below a certain minimum floor level, and then dumped on the market if the price rises above a certain ceiling level. The purpose of the program is to stabilize short-run prices rather than alter the long-run price.

[3] Per Pinstrup-Andersen, "The Social and Economic Effects of Consumer-Oriented Food Subsidies: A Summary of Current Evidence," *Food Subsidies in Developing Countries* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1988), Chapter 1, pp. 13–14.

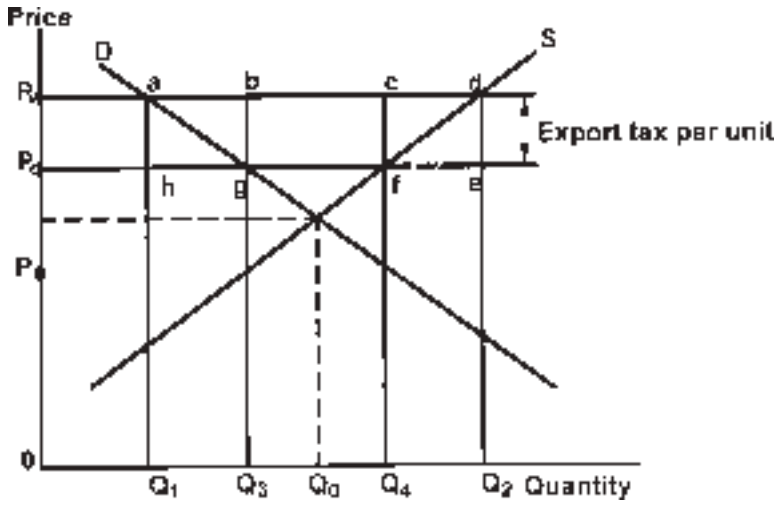


Figure 15-2. Economics of an export tax to raise revenue.

Perhaps the most common indirect pricing policy in developing countries is to overvalue the foreign exchange rate. The foreign exchange rate is the value of the country's currency in relation to the value of foreign currency: for example, the number of Mexican pesos that equal one U.S. dollar. If the official foreign exchange rate implies that the local currency is worth more than it actually is, and if exports occur at the official rate, then this overvalued exchange rate acts as an implicit export tax. However, it does not provide tax revenue to the government. More discussion of the trade effects of direct and indirect pricing policies is found in Chapters 16 and 18.

Interventions to shift either the supply of, or demand for, agricultural products also affect prices. Income transfer and employment programs are examples of policies to shift demands. Policies that steer investments into different sectors, credit programs, agricultural research, and land reforms all affect supplies. The net effect is to change equilibrium prices in markets. Governments can examine price trends and shifts and treat them as indicators of an underlying problem. In some cases, the problem is induced domestically but, in other cases, it is driven by international forces. For example, the rapidly increasing food prices experienced by most developing countries in 2008 were driven more by international than domestic supply and demand factors.

Prices provide important indicators of sector performance. However, policies that attack the symptom — such as rapidly rising prices — by, perhaps, directly imposing price controls, can create long-run

damage to economic growth. A preferred price intervention would be to address the causes of the problem by either investing in productivity-enhancing technologies or by making more imports available. If demand lags behind supplies, then programs to stimulate demands, such as food stamps, might be contemplated. In general, it is preferable to directly address the causes of undesirable price trends rather than to directly intervene in the price formation process, for reasons discussed below.

Short- and Long-Run Effects of Pricing Policies

A few of the direct, short-run effects of food and agricultural pricing policies are illustrated in Figures 15-1 and 15-2. As producer and consumer prices are raised or lowered, changes in production and consumption occur. Producer incomes, foreign exchange earnings, price stability, and government revenues are also directly influenced by price policies. These and other direct and indirect, short- and long-run effects of pricing policies are summarized in Table 15-2.

An important short-term effect of many price policies is to transfer income from producers to consumers. Within consumer groups, the poor tend to be the most sensitive to food prices, since they spend proportionately more income on food. The poor are usually targeted either indirectly because a food they eat is subsidized, or directly by being provided food stamps or access to ration shops. However, studies show

TABLE 15-2. SUMMARY of PRICE POLICY EFFECTS

Direct short-run effects of price policies

1. Changes in consumer and producer prices
2. Changes in quantities produced and consumed
3. Changes in exports, imports, and foreign exchange earnings
4. Income transfers between and among consumer and producer groups
5. Government budget effects
6. Price stability effects
7. Changes in marketing margins and their effects on efficiency of resource allocation

Indirect and long-run effects of price policies

1. Employment changes
2. Incentives for capital investment
3. Incentives for technical change
4. Changes in health and nutrition
5. Long-run changes in allocation of resources in production, storage, transportation, and processing

that even well-targeted price subsidy programs are associated with large "leakages" to the non-poor. These leakages imply higher program costs to the government and create distortions.

A major feature of both direct and indirect effects of many price policies is the influence of those policies on efficiency of resource allocation, depending on the program. In the short run, resources are diverted to less-productive uses because of the subsidy or tax. Additional indirect or long-run misallocation of resources can result as investments and structural changes occur that expand less-efficient sectors of the economy at the expense of more-efficient ones. In addition, efficiency losses occur due to the resource costs associated with collecting taxes or administering the policy. Food stamp and ration shop programs have fewer distortionary impacts because they shift food demands among recipient groups rather than working through price signals.

Distortions in the normal price differences for a commodity across locations, between points in time, and at different levels of processing can influence storage, transportation, and processing of the commodity. For example, urban prices are normally expected to be higher than rural prices for the same food commodity because of transportation costs. If the government sets a ceiling price that is equal in both rural and urban areas, transporting the good from the rural to the urban area may no longer be profitable. In fact, in some cases governments have been known to set urban food prices lower than rural prices, with the result that food, supplied by imports, is transported from urban areas to rural areas.

Likewise, ceiling prices can discourage the normal seasonal storage of a crop if prices are not allowed to rise to cover storage costs. Also, if a government reduces the price margin allowed between farm and retail levels, processors and marketers can be forced out of business.

Pricing policies may be implemented through government procurement agencies with *monopsonistic* (single buyer) power. Thus, opportunities are created for illegal garnering of rents by government employees, and inefficiencies can arise that may force additional reductions in farm prices. These often unintended results of pricing policies can be particularly severe in countries with poor communications and underdeveloped legal systems.

Other indirect effects of pricing policies include employment changes, incentives to develop and adopt new technologies, and changes in health and nutrition. If total revenues for one sector or commodity are raised through pricing policies, more people may be employed. Also, producer incentives to press private firms or public research agencies

for new technologies as well as incentives to adopt technologies may be enhanced. Consumer price subsidies can have important impacts on health and nutrition. In cases where they are financed through government tax revenues and not by depressing producer prices, they can be an effective means of transferring income to targeted groups.

Once price policies are instituted, they are difficult to repeal. Urban consumers in numerous countries have reacted in negative and sometimes violent manners to government attempts to lower subsidies. In summary, price-policy effects are pervasive and influence the efficiency of the production and marketing systems.

MARKETING FUNCTIONS and DEFICIENCIES

Marketing transforms products over time, space, and form through storage, transportation, and processing. Through marketing, goods are exchanged and prices are set. Markets communicate signals to producers, processors, input suppliers, and consumers about the costs of buying, selling, storing, processing, and transporting. These major marketing functions and their linkages to price policies are summarized in Figure 15-3.

In the earliest stages of development and in remote areas, a high proportion of the population lives on farms and is relatively self-sufficient. The demand for agricultural marketing services is limited. As development proceeds, with resulting increased living standards and urbanization, the size and efficiency of the marketing system become more important. Unless marketing services are improved concurrently with the development and spread of new technologies, improvements in education and credit, and the other factors discussed in this section of the book, economic development will be hindered. An inefficient marketing system can absorb substantial private and public resources and result in low farm-level and high retail-level prices.

Marketing System Deficiencies in Developing Countries

Private marketing systems in many developing countries operate relatively well, in that prices are influenced by underlying supply and demand conditions. Products are stored, transported, processed, and exchanged in roughly the amounts expected given prevailing costs, except where governments have intervened with price policies. Price rigging by opportunistic marketing agents is generally not a serious problem. However, because marketing costs can be high and some price distortions do occur, marketing system deficiencies may retard the rate of agricultural growth and influence the distribution of the benefits of

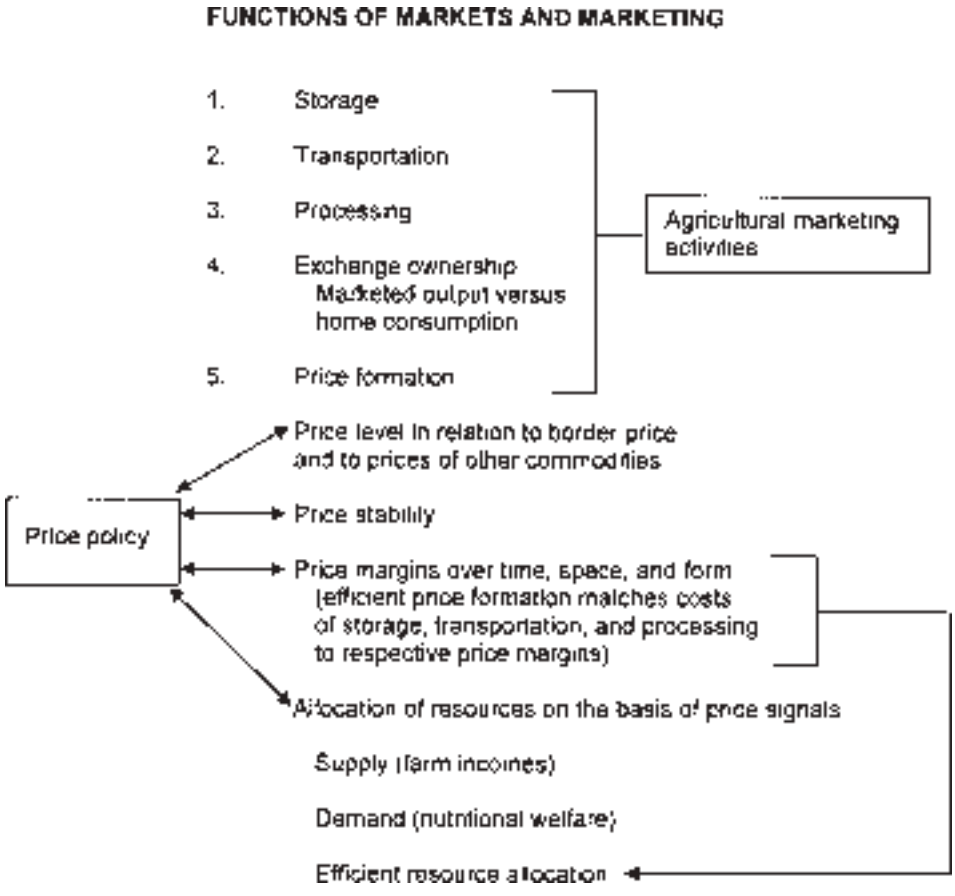


Figure 15-3. Links between agricultural price policy and agricultural marketing. (*Source*: C. Peter Timmer, "The Relationship Between Price Policy and Food Marketing," in *Food Policy: Integrating Supply, Distribution, and Consumption*, ed. J. Price Gittinger, Joanne Leslie, and Caroline Hoisington (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1987), p. 294.)

that growth. Let's consider the nature of these deficiencies before turning in the following section to the possible public role in solving them.

The principal weaknesses in marketing systems in developing countries are: (1) infrastructure deficiencies which raise the cost of transport, (2) producers' lack of information, (3) the weak bargaining position of producers of certain commodities, and (4) government-induced market distortions. The magnitude of each of these deficiencies differs across regions and by country, and is changing for the better in many

countries, but severe problems are found in some countries, particularly in Sub-Saharan Africa. The most visible effect of these weaknesses is to create a large spread between the prices producers are paid for their products and the retail prices. Marketing system deficiencies also create wide variations in producer prices within countries and within years. Examples of producer/retail price spreads and of intra-country price variations are presented in Table 15-3 for selected countries in Africa and Asia. The Sub-Saharan African countries have larger price spreads than do the Asian countries, indicating **more-deficient** marketing systems.

Good communications (e.g., roads, railroads, telephones, postal services) and storage infrastructure are crucial to a well-functioning agricultural marketing system. The availability and quality of rural roads, in particular, have a strong influence on marketing costs and on the willingness of farmers to adopt new technologies and sell any surplus production. A farmer who has only a few hectares may still have to market several tons of output to generate revenue needed to apply new seeds, fertilizers, and other modern inputs. Telephones, postal services, radio stations, and so on, increase access to information. Modern storage facilities are important, to minimize rodent, insect, and water damage while commodities are being held. Most storage occurs on the farm or at facilities owned by private traders. Storage may also be provided by the government for buffer stocks and food distribution programs.

Producers require information to improve market efficiency and reduce transactions costs, as discussed in Chapter 11. Unequal access to information can give a competitive advantage to particular groups of farmers or traders who have more information. When roads, basic telecommunications, and news services are lacking or are available only to a few, those with better information on market prices, crop prospects, prospective changes in international forces, and so on, can earn higher profits, and in some cases, gain political power as well. Thus, access to information is of fundamental importance for agricultural development. The wireless communications revolution is having a profound effect on information availability and, hence, marketing efficiency. Low-cost cell-phones are widely available in developing countries, even in relatively remote rural areas. Vegetable producers from China to Brazil now receive price information through cell-phones. Coffee producers in the Guatemalan highlands use beeper technology to receive up-to-the-minute price information. These innovations lower the cost of attaining information, enable farmers to retain more value on their

TABLE 15-3. PRODUCER/CONSUMER and REGIONAL PRICE SPREADS, SELECTED AFRICAN and ASIAN COUNTRIES

Country	Commodity	Producer/consumer[a] Price spread	Regional[b] spread
Nigeria	Maize	54.5	35.6
	Rice	57.0	72.9
	Sorghum	59.8	45.9
Malawi	Maize	48.2	21.9
	Rice	55.1	68.2
Tanzania	Maize	38.2	25.7
	Rice	56.6	61.3
	Sorghum	48.1	35.5
Kenya	Maize	42.0	30.0
Sudan	Sorghum	61.2	48.2
	Wheat		52.1
Indonesia	Rice	84.0	71.9
India	Rice	82.0	68.9
	Wheat	79.5	65.9
	Sorghum	80.0	63.5
Bangladesh	Rice	79.0	75.0
Philippines	Rice	87.8	82.7
	Maize	71.5	64.2

[a]Producer price/retail price X 100 [b]Lowest price/highest price X 100

Source: Raisuddin Ahmed, "Pricing Principles and Public Intervention in Domestic Markets," Chapter 4, in *Agricultural Price Policy for Developing Countries*, ed. John W. Mellor and Raisuddin Ahmed (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1988), p. 67.

farms, and enhance planning for deliveries, lowering waste and improving efficiency.

The structure of agricultural markets is usually such that the number of middle agents is smaller than the number of producers. Economists hold differing views on whether relatively fewer such intermediaries result in monopolistic power on the part of the intermediary and an unfair bargaining advantage. One needs to be cautious in drawing

Roadside market in Bangladesh.

conclusions. Because the more efficient traders and processors tend to deal in large volumes, there are naturally fewer of these people than there are producers. On the other hand, in most countries with private marketing systems, ease of entry is such that there are still enough processors and other middle agents to provide competition for each other. Examples of collusion and monopolistic power, however, undoubtedly exist for certain products, particularly in isolated areas, where information is costly, and where social and cultural factors play a contributing role. This form of market power is undergoing pressure from the telecommunications revolution described above.

A common marketing problem for producers of major commodities in some developing countries is a situation in which government-controlled marketing organizations (often called *parastatals*) are given monopolistic power and legal authority to purchase all of a product while setting its price as well (see Box 15-1). As discussed in the price-policy section, these tightly controlled markets can have negative effects on producer incentives and market efficiency. Agricultural economic systems are inherently complex. A large amount of information is transmitted through market signals, and decisions made by central marketing boards and parastatal agencies can create serious market distortions. If these types of government agencies are a cause of, rather than a solution to, marketing problems in developing countries, how might the public sector improve marketing efficiency? This issue is addressed in the following section.

THE ROLE of the PUBLIC SECTOR in AGRICULTURAL MARKETING

The primary role of the government is to provide the infrastructure required for an efficient marketing system, particularly roads; a market information system; a commodity grading system; and regulations to ensure the rights of all participants. The underlying rationale for government involvement is the presence of public goods and market failures creating externalities. Public goods provide benefits to society as a whole but would be supplied in less than the socially desirable amounts by the private sector alone. Externalities involve often unintended positive or negative effects of the actions of one person (firm) or persons (firms) on other people.

BOX 15-1.
COMMODITY MARKETING BOARDS in SUB-SAHARAN AFRICA

In some Sub-Saharan African states, publicly-sanctioned monopolies still purchase and export agricultural goods. These marketing boards serve as the sole buyers of major exports, purchase crops at administratively determined prices, and sell them at prevailing world market prices. These state marketing agencies are vestiges of the colonial period, and their origins and histories vary considerably. Many were established during the Great Depression of the 1930s or World War II. Their official mandates were almost invariably to benefit producers by reinvesting revenues in agriculture and, especially, stabilizing producer prices.

As the colonial governments were confronted with growing needs for revenues, they quickly found ways of diverting marketing board funds away from agricultural development and into general revenue coffers. Following independence, African governments continued to use the commodity marketing boards as extensions of their normal revenue-generating arms, and the initial purposes of the boards were ignored. Examples are found in Ghana and Nigeria immediately following independence.

Since colonial times, these boards have been used to transfer resources from agriculture into "modernizing" and mostly urban development. They have served political objectives by raising revenues, increasing employment of favored groups, and keeping primary commodity prices low to benefit urban and industrial concerns. The boards never really fulfilled their mandate to improve and stabilize conditions in agriculture. In combination with other policy distortions, they contributed to the stagnation and decline of agriculture in many African countries.

Provision of Infrastructure

The private sector can be expected to build many of the required storage facilities, processing plants, and so on, but investments in roads, seaports, airports, and, in most cases, telecommunications, will require government involvement. One firm, or even a small group of firms, will lack the incentives to build sufficient roads, not just because of their high cost but because of the difficulty of excluding others from or charging for their use. Roads are a public good that serve all industries, consumers, and national defense.

Several studies have estimated the economic importance of roads to agriculture in developing countries. For example, Spriggs estimated a benefit/cost ratio of 8 for surfaced roads in the eastern rice regions of India.[4] Ahmed and Hossain estimated that incomes were roughly one-third higher for villages with better infrastructure, compared to those with poor infrastructure, in Bangladesh.[5] Fan and Chan-Kang found that even low-quality rural roads in China are excellent investments, with a 5-1 benefit cost ratio.[6] The evidence in numerous countries suggests that investments in infrastructure have greatly narrowed farm-retail margins.

Provision of Information

Provision of accurate crop and livestock reports requires investments in data collection and dissemination. Production and consumption data may be poor quality, but accurate data on marketed quantities, qualities, and prices can give essential information for formulating agricultural policies and for decisions by individual economic agents.

To ensure equal access to information, data need to be collected in all-important markets and disseminated on a regular basis. Information on current market prices, crop prospects, and factors influencing demand can be spread through radio broadcasts and newspapers once the government reports are released. An efficient, competitive market requires widespread access to information. Otherwise, a small group

[4] John Spriggs, "Benefit-Cost Analysis of Surfaced Roads in the Eastern Rice Region of India," *American Journal of Agricultural Economics*, vol. 59 (May 1977), pp. 375–79.

[5] Raisuddin Ahmed and Mahabub Hossain, Developmental Impact of Rural Infrastructure in Bangladesh, International Food Policy Research Institute, Research Report No. 83 (Washington, D.C., October 1990), p. 70.

[6] See Shenggen Fan and Connie Chan-Kang, Road Development, Economic Growth and Poverty Reduction in China, International Food Policy Research Institute, Research Report No. 138)Washington, D.C., 2005). Chapter 4 in this research report contains an extensive review of research findings about infrastructure and income growth in developing countries.

of large-scale farmers, traders, or processors can gain market power at the expense of small farmers, particularly those in remote areas. These agents can then use the resulting profits to influence political and economic policy to favor themselves. The result is both efficiency losses (reduced economic growth) and distributional inequities.

In economies highly oriented toward subsistence production, markets offer few premiums for higher-quality products. As interregional communication, and particularly export trade, develops, quality standards increase in importance because buyers need to compare the products of many different sellers, often without seeing the product before the sale. In markets using modern technology, purchases are often made electronically or over the phone, something that can only happen with a recognized system of grades and standards.

Threshing, drying, cleaning, storage, and processing practices for crops and feeding, slaughtering, storage, and other practices for livestock influence the quality of the final product. Unless grades and standards are established with corresponding price differentials, then producers and processors have little incentive to incur the costs of producing higher quality goods.

Regulations

Market regulations related to factors affecting health and safety, but also to weighing practices and other legal codes that influence the enforceability of contracts, are important to a well-functioning marketing system. The purposes of many of these regulations are to ensure basic honesty and reduce transactions costs in marketing. As discussed in Chapter 11, development brings with it a reduction in personal exchange and associated social and cultural constraints on behavior. Increased impersonal exchange requires new institutional arrangements to substitute for the rules of behavior that had been imposed previously by a more personal society.

The importance of market regulations does not imply a need for heavy involvement of government marketing boards or other public trading agencies. Banning private marketing activities does not improve the welfare of either farmers or consumers. While there is a role for the government in the activities discussed above and perhaps in implementing a price stabilization scheme, more extensive public monopolization of domestic marketing functions tends to produce high marketing costs and large market distortions.

THE CHANGING STRUCTURE of FOOD MARKETS

At the retail level in developing countries, there has been a restructuring in urban areas, which began in earnest during the 1990s, toward increased involvement of large wholesalers and supermarkets in food marketing. In a few cases, the supermarkets are owned by multinational companies and, in most cases, the result has been higher quality products and more efficient (lower-cost) marketing. These markets are, however, increasingly forcing small-scale retailers out of business just as they did in many developed countries. Before the advent of supermarkets, local brokers or small-scale wholesalers brought relatively undifferentiated commodities from the rural areas to small shops or central markets in the urban areas. In most of the developing world, this structure still predominates. However, increasingly, large and often specialized wholesalers bring products from the rural areas to larger processors, supermarkets, and food service chains in urban areas.[7]

As market structures change, they do so unevenly in the developing world, with urban retail markets changing before rural markets, and certain geographic areas undergoing a more rapid transformation than others. For example, according to Reardon and Timmer, the degree of transformation is greatest in South America, East Asia outside of China, and North-central Europe. The second wave of market change is occurring in Central America and Mexico, Southeast Asia, South-central Europe, and South Africa, and the third wave is just beginning in South Asia, China, Eastern Europe, and parts of Africa.[8]

The market transformation tends to include five sets of changes: (1) a shift from raw commodities to more specialized products, (2) rapid organizational change involving consolidation in the processing and retail segments of the food system with the rise of supermarkets, (3) institutional change in the markets with the rise of contracts and private grades and standards for food quality and safety, (4) rapid technological and managerial change among suppliers, wholesalers, and retailers, and (5) distributional and technological impacts of the wholesale and retail market changes back on farmers.

Efforts are needed to prepare poor and small-scale producers to access these new marketing channels; improve quality, adhere to size

[7] See Thomas Reardon and C. Peter Timmer, "Transformation of Markets for Agricultural Output in Developing Countries Since 1950: How Has Thinking Changed?" Chapter 13 in *Handbook of Agricultural Economics, Volume 3: Agricultural Development: Farmers, Farm Production, and Food Markets,* ed. R.E. Evenson, P. Pingali, and T.P. Schultz (Amsterdam: Elsevier, 2006).

[8] Reardon and Timmer, "Transformation of Markets for Agricultural Output..."

and other standards, and develop organizational and contracting skills. Off the farm, impacts of this retail revolution on participants in traditional supply and retailing channels are not well-understood, but may be substantial. Reardon and Timmer provide a detailed synopsis of what has occurred in food markets in developing countries since the 1950s, and the reasons for those changes.[9]

The growth in demand for horticultural products that has occurred as incomes have grown over time, especially in Asia, has produced opportunities for small-scale producers if they can organize intermediate-level assembly of high quality products to fill contracts with wholesalers and even retailers. Efforts to organize small vegetable and fruit producers into cooperatives and other group associations for this purpose, has the potential to significantly raise incomes. The public sector can assist by providing information to meet the demands in the market chain for these relatively high value products (see Box 15-2).

BOX 15-2.
DEVELOPMENT of VEGETABLE MARKET INTERMEDIARIES in NEPAL

Marketing of horticultural products is a major challenge in Nepal because of the large number of smallholder producers in geographically isolated areas with poor infrastructure. High transaction costs in aggregating production to marketable volume and limited market information constrain efficient and competitive marketing. The large number of small producers hinders quality control and coordinated production scheduling. Abundant family labor reduces labor supervision costs, but a mechanism is needed to coordinate product marketing beyond the farm level. With public support, a series of local marketing and planning committees (MPCs) have been established to manage community market collection centers. Through these collection centers, produce is sold to traders who have access to larger, more lucrative markets than are available locally. This institutional mechanism has been highly successful and grown rapidly since 2003. The MPCs provide information to help their members plan market-led production and they provide loans for agricultural inputs. They also lobby the government to influence policy. Each MPC has representatives from five to 12 farmer groups, each of which has 15-20 members. When an MPC is well-established, it can register as a cooperative and gain legal backing that makes available more attractive financing options.

[9] Reardon and Timmer, "Transformation of Markets for Agricultural Output..."

SUMMARY

Food and agricultural prices are major determinants of producer incentives and of real incomes in developing countries. Governments in those countries often adopt pricing policies to reduce food prices for urban consumers at the expense of producers. Political leaders devise policies to meet society's objectives and the demands of interest groups, to generate revenue, and, in some cases, to line their own pockets. Governments can influence agricultural prices by setting price ceilings or floors and enforcing them with subsidies, taxes, manipulation of exchange rates, storage programs, quantity restrictions, and other policy instruments. These interventions influence producer and consumer prices and incomes, production and consumption, foreign exchange earnings, price stability, government revenues, the efficiency of resource allocation, employment, capital investment, technical change, health and nutrition, and marketing margins.

Marketing refers to the process of changing products in time, space, and form through storage, transportation, and processing. Goods are exchanged and prices are determined in markets. The importance of these functions increases as markets become more commercialized. Developing countries often have marketing systems characterized by deficient infrastructure, inadequate information, weak bargaining position for producers for certain commodities, and government-induced distortions. The government can help solve certain marketing deficiencies, particularly the lack of roads and information. The public sector can provide a system of grades and standards as well other regulations. These contributions can help reduce transactions costs that rise as markets become less personal. Governments should avoid the larger parastatal marketing agencies that tend to introduce marketing distortions.

Private marketing systems have gradually evolved over the past 50 years in developing countries, with many countries currently experiencing a shift from raw commodities being sold in small shops to more differentiated food products being assembled and processed by larger wholesalers. Supermarkets are increasingly opening in the urban areas of the richer developing countries. This market consolidation is likely to continue at a fast pace in the future, and will have profound impacts on producers, consumers, and middle agents.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Buffer-stock programs
Competitive market
Export tax
Externalities
Foreign exchange rate
Grading system
Infrastructure
Interest groups
Market information
Market regulations
Marketing board
Marketing functions
Marketing margin
Middle agents
Monopsony
Parastatal
Price ceiling
Price distortions
Price floor
Price formation
Pricing policies
Public good
Resource allocation efficiency
Supermarkets
Time, space, and form
Two-price programs

Looking Ahead

This chapter concludes the discussion of technical and institutional factors that can influence development of the agricultural sector. The following set of chapters moves beyond the agricultural sector and considers international trade, macroeconomic forces, international capital flows, and other policies that feed back on agricultural development. We begin in the next chapter by considering the importance of international trade. Problems faced by developing countries with respect to agricultural trade, and potential solutions to those problems, are explored.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1. Why do developing country governments frequently set agricultural prices below market levels?
2. Why do governments get involved in stabilizing prices?
3. What are the direct short-run effects of price policies in agriculture?
4. What are the indirect and long-run effects of price policies in agriculture?
5. Draw a graph to illustrate the effects on supply and demand of a price ceiling set above the market equilibrium price.
6. Draw a graph to illustrate the effect of a price support to farmers set above the market equilibrium price.
7. What are the major food marketing functions? Why are these functions necessary to get agriculture moving in developing countries?
8. What are the major deficiencies in agricultural marketing systems in developing countries?

9 What role might the government play in improving an agricultural marketing system?

10 Discuss the potential role of buffer stocks in an agricultural development program in a developing country.

11 Why might government marketing boards and parastatals create inefficiencies in resource use?

12 Why do governments in developing countries use export taxes on agricultural commodities more frequently than do governments in more developed countries?

13 Why does the increasing impersonal exchange that accompanies development imply a need for increased government regulation?

14 Why are marketing grades and standards important?

15 Why does increased market information improve marketing efficiency?

16 What has happened to the growth of supermarkets in developing countries over the past few years and why?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Anderson, Kym, and Yujiro Hayami, *The Political Economy of Agricultural Protection* (Sydney: Allen and Unwin, 1986).

Byerlee, Derek, and Gustavo Sain, "Food Pricing Policy in Developing Countries: Bias Against Agriculture or for Urban Consumers?" *American Journal of Agricultural Economics,* vol. 68 (November 1986), pp. 961–69.

Fan, Shenggan, and Connie Chan-Kang, *Road Development, Economic Growth and Poverty Reduction in China,* International Food Policy Research Institute, Research Report No. 138 (Washington, D.C., 2005).

Gittinger, J. Price, Joanne Leslie, and Caroline Hoisington, eds, *Food Policy: Integrating Supply, Distribution, and Consumption* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1987).

Krueger, Anne O., Maurice Schiff, and Alberto Valdes, "Agricultural Incentives in Developing Countries: Measuring the Effects of Sectoral and Economywide Policies," *World Bank Economic Review,* vol. 2 (September 1988), pp. 255–71.

Pinstrup-Andersen, Per, ed., *Food Subsidies in Developing Countries* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1988).

Reardon, Thomas, and C. Peter Timmer, "Transformation of Markets for Agricultural Output in Developing Countries Since 1950: How Has Thinking Changed?" Chapter 13 in *Handbook of Agricultural Economics, Volume 3: Agricultural Development: Farmers, Farm Production, and Food Markets,* ed. R.E. Evenson, P. Pingali, and T.P. Schultz (Amsterdam: Elsevier, 2006).

Streeten, Paul, *What Price Food? Agricultural Price Policies in Developing Countries* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1987).

Timmer, C. Peter, *Getting Prices Right: The Scope and Limits of Agricultural Price Policy* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1986).

Timmer, C. Peter, Walter P. Falcon, and Scott R. Pearson, *Food Policy Analysis* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1983), Chapter 4.

PART 5

Agricultural Development in an Interdependent World

Wheat being loaded on a ship.

CHAPTER 16

Agriculture and International Trade

> The evidence over the past four decades is suggestive … that improved trade opportunities for developing countries … could make an important contribution to growth and hence poverty reduction over time. — William R. Cline[1]

THIS CHAPTER

1 Explains why countries trade
2 Describes the recent experience of developing countries with trade and why trade patterns change as economic development occurs
3 Discusses problems that impede developing countries from realizing their trade potential with respect to agriculture

WHY COUNTRIES TRADE

The role of international trade in economic development was one of the first questions ever addressed by economists, and has been hotly debated throughout history (see Box 16-1). Today, despite some views to the contrary, most scholars agree that relatively open trade is helpful for successful economic development, and that government trade restrictions generally make growth slower and less sustainable. In this chapter, we ask why open trade facilitates growth, and also why so many governments choose to restrict trade despite its potential economic benefits.

Need for Imports and Exports

Trade facilitates development because it helps a country obtain greater benefits from its productive resources by exporting what it

[1] William R. Cline, *Trade Policy and Global Poverty* (Washington, D.C.: Institute for International Economics, 2004), p. 45.

BOX 16-1.
HISTORICAL ROOTS of INTERNATIONAL TRADE DEBATE

Trade among countries has existed for thousands of years, most of that time in a very loosely structured system. By the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, money, goods, and credit markets had developed to facilitate trade and colonial expansion. An economic doctrine known as *mercantilism* encouraged exports but discouraged imports. The preferred form of payment was gold rather than goods. A wide range of restrictive trade policies was implemented including tariffs, licenses, export subsidies, and general state control of international commerce. As the Industrial Revolution spread in the late 1700s, mercantilist ideas were increasingly questioned. Raw materials for expanding factory output were imported, and markets for the output were sought abroad. Technological advances in transportation and communications further stimulated trade.

A strong movement toward economic liberalization began in the early 1800s. Perhaps the most important factor in the movement was the unilateral removal of trade restrictions in the United Kingdom. The world's leading economic power at the time, the United Kingdom, repealed its Corn Laws in 1846, ending the world's first major price-support program for agricultural commodities. Britain then sought worldwide trade liberalization, with some success. World trade was relatively free until World War I, although several countries, including the United States and Germany, followed selective protectionist policies. World War I changed the trading environment. Industries, including agriculture, that had expanded during the war, suffered slack demand and falling prices afterward. Governments attempted to protect these industries by introducing protectionist policies during the 1920s and 1930s that the world is still struggling to remove today. Persistent protectionist policies for agricultural products are especially evident.

can produce relatively easily and importing items that are relatively more difficult to produce. Most countries import and export the same goods year after year, but especially in agriculture there can be wide fluctuations in the quantities traded due to temporary shortages or surpluses. Absorbing change through fluctuations in trade volume can help keep domestic prices more stable than they would be with no change in quantities traded. Furthermore, most countries also run persistent trade surpluses or deficits from year to year, with offsetting flows of capital into or out of the country. Net inflows of foreign investment are matched by trade deficits, and net outflows are linked to trade surpluses. When investment flows change, there may be a sudden need to alter trade patterns accordingly.

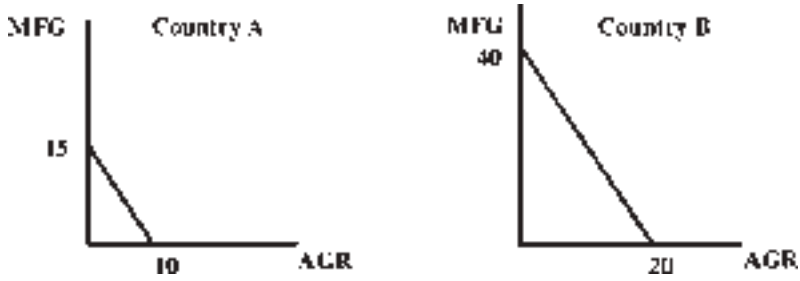
Comparative Advantage

Surprisingly, the rationale for trade does not depend on absolute cost differences between countries. Absolute cost differences determine a country's wealth, not its pattern of trade. Trade is driven by *relative* cost differences among goods within each country, as countries export goods whose cost is relatively low in terms of other goods. This *principle of comparative advantage*, first articulated by David Ricardo in 1817, states that it is best for each country to export those goods for which it has the greatest relative cost advantage and to import goods which are relatively more costly. The principle implies that one country could produce all goods at lower cost than other countries, yet it would still raise its standard of living through trade, exporting what it produces relatively best (see Box 16-2). What counts is the *opportunity cost* in terms of *other goods*.

Despite the logic of comparative advantage and the historical evidence of gains from trade, governments routinely intervene to limit imports and exports. Contemporary economists usually explain these interventions in terms of differences in lobbying power among those who gain and those who lose from these interventions, as described in the next section. Other observers, however, may argue that trade restrictions are actually in the country's national interest. Proponents of trade restrictions often claim that trade opens the economy to increased exploitation by the more-developed countries, by multinational corporations and other actors in international markets, and by the wealthy elites within their own countries. Another important argument against open trade has been that the terms of trade, or the prices received for exports from developing countries compared to the prices paid for imports, tend to decline over time (see Chapter 6 for a discussion of this "structuralist" perspective). Prices for developed-country products are also said to be high because of monopolistic behavior by sellers of developed-country products that are imported by developing countries, and protectionist measures by governments in the more-developed countries. Some have also argued that dependence on international markets for food endangers national security since international markets are volatile and unpredictable. Finally, advocates for trade restrictions have argued that "infant industries" may need to be protected from international competition in order to survive. The solutions to these perceived problems are import-substitution policies that try to move a country towards self-sufficiency. Examples of these policies are direct import restrictions, setting of foreign exchange rates above the market equilibrium (which discourages exports for reasons discussed below),

BOX 16-2.
ILLUSTRATION of the PRINCIPLE of COMPARATIVE ADVANTAGE

To illustrate the principle of comparative advantage, consider two countries, each of which can choose how much to produce of two kinds of outputs: manufacturing (MFG) and agriculture (AGR). The production possibilities frontier (PPF) for each country is shown below, indicating the maximum (or total) amount of MFG and AGR that each country can produce given their resources and technology. For simplicity, both PPFs are shown as straight lines. In our example, country A can produce 15 units of MFG and no AGR, or 10 units of AGR and no MFG, and any combination in between such as 7.5 MFG and 5 AGR. Country B can produce up to 40 units of MFG and no AGR, or 20 units of AGR and no MFG, or any combination in between.



Each country can potentially gain from trade by exporting what it can produce at a lower relative cost as compared to the other country. In this example, the relative cost of production is shown by the slopes of the PPF lines. In country A, each unit of AGR costs 1.5 unit of MFG to produce, whereas in country B that same unit would cost 2 units of MFG. As a result, a trader could buy a unit of AGR in country A for a bit more than 1.5 units of MFG, and sell it to someone in country B for a bit less than 2 units of MFG, producing a total gain from trade of almost .5 units of MFG per unit of AGR that is exported from A to B.

How the gains from trade are divided between the countries depends on the relative bargaining power and the demands for MFG and AGR in each country, but the overall size of the gains and the direction of trade depend only on differences in relative costs. It does not matter whether A is always less productive than B, or AGR is always less productive than MFG. Country A can still exploit its comparative advantage, in this case by specializing in and exporting AGR to obtain more of both goods than it could produce in self-sufficiency. Likewise, Country B can exploit its comparative advantage (relative cost advantage) in MFG by specializing in and exporting MFG to Country A.

and export taxes that discourage exports and stimulate production for the local market instead.

Although most economists favor freer trade, there are debates within economics regarding (1) the degree to which any gains from trade will, in fact, be retained in the developing country and be relatively broadly distributed; and (2) the magnitude of the efficiency losses resulting from attempts to become relatively self-sufficient through import-substitution policies. Few dispute the *potential* for gains from trade, most desire that any gains be broadly distributed, and most agree that increased trade can result in both gainers and losers even if total gains are larger than total losses.

In recent decades most countries have chosen to be relatively open to international trade, with some variation in the degree of openness. Most empirical evidence supports the view that trade restrictions typically limit economic development. In fact, when the world or a group of countries wants to punish a nation, the first step taken is often to refuse to trade with it.

Gainers, Losers, and the Politics of Trade Policy

Despite the potential for significant economic gains from trade and accompanying specialization, international trade policies are a frequent topic of bitter dispute. Policy makers, farm groups, consumer advocates, labor leaders, and environmental groups constantly debate the benefits and costs of trade restrictions that affect exports, imports, the balance of payments, prices, jobs, and the environment. A major reason for such contentiousness is that some people will lose from freer trade even as others gain. Much of the tendency for governments to restrict trade stems from the fact that trade restrictions can generate highly concentrated and easily visible gains, while spreading their cost broadly among the population over time. For example, protecting a particular industry generates immediate high-wage employment and other benefits in that sector, at a cost that is spread over many other activities in the country. Advocates for the protection can readily identify the winners and tell their story, whereas the losses can be seen only through abstract reasoning and aggregate statistics.

The groups which are best able to act collectively and lobby policy makers tend to see trade policies enacted in their favor, even though doing so may impose even greater costs on other, less influential groups. Agricultural lobbies are particularly strong in Europe and Japan, and have obtained relatively large income transfers from other sectors. Within the United States, some commodity groups such as those for sugar and cotton have been particularly successful in securing

government benefits over time. Representatives of various sectors may lobby together for favorable policies, forming coalitions either within or across larger political parties and interest groups.

An important fact about trade policy is that, while the debate often focuses on foreign countries, the actual effect of a policy change occurs mainly within the restricting country. Any trade restriction may have some impact on world prices and hence economic conditions in foreign countries, but most of its effect is on domestic prices and income transfers among the country's own citizens.

DEVELOPING COUNTRY EXPERIENCE with TRADE

During the 1950s and 1960s, import-substitution policies predominated in many developing countries. These inward-oriented policies helped produce a decline in the ratio of exports to GDP in many developing countries until the early 1970s. Since that time, the ratio of exports to GDP has generally increased, paralleling an overall expansion in world trade. However, many developing countries still pursue import-substitution policies. Countries that followed these policies for several years, for example Argentina, India, and Egypt, tended to grow more slowly than those that followed more open-trading regimes, for example Malaysia, South Korea, and Botswana. While it is difficult to generalize based on a few cases, studies that have examined the overall statistical significance of trade restrictions have generally found a negative impact on economic growth.

It is often difficult to classify a country as relatively open or relatively restricted because policies change over time. Many African governments, for example, imposed increasingly restrictive agricultural trade policies on themselves in the 1970s, and then moved to more open agricultural trade in the 1990s.[2] The Mexican economy was quite closed until 1985, but has been relatively open since then. Even South Korea, which is often cited as an example of a successful export-oriented economy, has imposed substantial restrictions on trade from time to time. Trade intervention is usually a matter of degree.

Changing Structure of Trade

Total trade has grown for developing countries over the past 30 years. But the share of agricultural exports in developing country trade has declined steadily from about 60 percent of total exports in 1955 to about 20 percent in recent years. This lower share partly reflects the import-

[2] For details see Kym Anderson and William A. Masters, eds., *Distortions to Agricultural Incentives in Africa* (Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2008).

substitution policies mentioned above, but it mainly reflects the impact of income growth, with faster increases in both demand and supply of manufactures than of agricultural products at the global level, as well as increased domestic demand for food within developing countries. Nevertheless, several developing countries still depend on a few agricultural exports for a major share of their foreign exchange earnings.

The dramatic shift in export composition towards manufactures is best illustrated by Southeast Asian countries such as Indonesia, Malaysia, The Philippines, Singapore, and South Korea, with the data shown in Table 16-1. As these countries invested in human and physical capital, their comparative advantage in exports shifted from land-intensive and low-skill labor-intensive activities such as agriculture, to more skill-intensive and capital-intensive products such as manufactures. Agricultural exports were often a very important source of foreign exchange earnings in the past, but other sectors grew faster over time.

As countries develop, their agricultural sectors do not disappear, but tend to become more specialized. Tropical countries have a natural comparative advantage in relatively heat-tolerant tree crops such as coffee, cocoa, tea, rubber, and bananas, or other crops that grow year-round such as sugar. Technological change can affect where crops grow best, as shown for example by the increased exports of citrus and soybeans from developing countries.

Increased demand by more-developed countries for many of the agricultural exports of developing countries are limited due to relatively small income elasticities of demand for those commodities, and in some cases, to the development of synthetic substitutes (e.g. for rubber, jute, sisal, cotton). On the other hand, domestic demand for food within the developing countries often increases rapidly with development. Not only are populations growing, but a high proportion of any income increases are spent on food. The quantity consumed increases, and the mix of foods shifts toward more expensive products (often meats and vegetables, wheat, and certain other grains rather than roots). As a result, the more rapidly growing, middle-income countries have actually become less self-sufficient in food production over the past two decades, even as their agricultural production and incomes have risen. Their increased imports have come partly from other developing countries, and partly from high-income food exporters such as the United States.

Some countries have reacted to increased domestic demand for food by setting artificially low prices for food commodities and overvaluing their exchange rates to tax exports and lower the prices of imports. These policies tend to be counterproductive, as they discourage

TABLE 16-1.
STRUCTURE of EXPORTS for SELECTED SOUTHEAST ASIAN COUNTRIES, 1965–2005

	Percentage share of total merchandise exports									
	Agricultural Commodities					Manufactured Products				
Country	1965	1975	1985	1995	2005	1965	1975	1985	1995	2005
Indonesia	46	12	6	7	5	0	1	13	51	47
Malaysia	50	34	18	6	2	5	17	27	75	75
Philippines	25	10	5	1	1	6	12	27	41	89
Singapore	26	12	4	1	0	30	42	51	84	81
South Korea	9	2	1	1	1	59	81	91	92	91

Note: Indonesia data for 1965 are missing; values shown are for closest available year (1962).
Source: World Bank, World Development Indicators 2009 (online at www.worldbank.org/data).

production. The effects of exchange rate manipulation are discussed in more detail in Chapter 18.

Trade, Employment, and Capital Interactions

Employment growth is crucial for economic development. While few people are totally idle, there is clearly underemployment in most developing countries. By underemployment we mean people working only part-time or in very low-productivity jobs. Several possible linkages exist between trade and employment. One such linkage is the effect of trade on overall growth through more efficient resource allocation, assuming faster growth entails more employment. A second linkage is that export industries in countries in early stages of development tend to be labor-intensive, consistent with the Factor Endowment Theory of Trade (see Box 16-3). Thus, increased exports might lead to greater employment. A third possible linkage is that trade policies might influence the degree of labor intensity in all industries. For example, trade policies might encourage capital-intensive industries through subsidized capital-goods imports.

Empirical evidence suggests that increased exports from developing countries, including agricultural exports, have positive employment implications. Those countries that have followed import-substitution policies (e.g. India) have suffered greater employment problems than more open economies. Research in several countries by the International Food Policy Research Institute (IFPRI) indicates that an export-oriented agriculture increases the demand for hired labor, raises family incomes, and benefits both landowners and landless laborers.[3] Small-scale farmers who produce sugarcane, non-traditional vegetables, and other cash crops for export usually maintain some production of subsistence crops as insurance against market and production risk, but these farmers also benefit from the additional income from the cash crops.

The Role of Trade in Agricultural Development

Agriculture has many roles to play in economic development, and trade can affect the relative importance of these different roles. In fact, an outward-looking trade orientation helps solidify the role of agriculture in development, especially if the outward orientation is accompanied by an agriculture- and employment-based growth strategy. Removal of impediments to trade will facilitate exports, and thus will enhance

[3] Several studies conducted by Joachim Von Braun and others at the International Food Policy Research Institute involved farm and household surveys in Guatemala, The Gambia, Rwanda, and elsewhere.

BOX 16-3.
FACTOR ENDOWMENT THEORY of TRADE*

The Factor Endowment Theory of Trade (often called the Heckscher-Ohlin-Samuelson Theory because it is derived from their work) argues that because countries have different factor endowments, they adopt different production techniques, and the result is profitable trade. A country with relatively abundant labor (compared to land and capital), will have a low wage rate relative to land prices, rents, and interest on capital-borrowing. Such a country will find it optimal to adopt labor-intensive rather than capital-intensive technologies. The opposite would be true for capital-abundant countries. Without trade, the price ratio of labor-intensive goods to capital-intensive goods will be lower in the labor-abundant country than in the capital-abundant country. Opening the country up to trade would mean that the labor-abundant country would export labor-intensive goods in exchange for capital-intensive goods. Trade will have the effect of increasing the demand for the abundant factor, thus bidding up its price, and increasing the supply of the scarce factor (in the form of imported goods), thereby reducing its price. Trade is expected to reduce factor price differences between countries.

*This discussion is drawn from David Colman and Trevor Young, *Principles of Agricultural Economics: Markets and Prices in Less Developed Countries* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1989), pp. 232–34.

the foreign exchange contribution of agriculture. An open-trading regime helps provide accurate signals of relative resource scarcity to producers and to investors; the abundance of labor usually found in most developing countries signals the need for employment-intensive investment. With no bias in favor of capital-intensive industries, demands for capital-intensive manufacturing processes can be met through imports, increasing the importance of agriculture's labor contribution.

The food and fiber contribution of agriculture under an outward-looking strategy is usually of most concern to policymakers. Fear of excessive reliance on imports to meet domestic food needs can lead to protectionist policies. But protection raises the cost of food, and combining freer trade with more investment in domestic agricultural production usually results in faster and more stable economic growth. Of course, if growth in demand exceeds domestic food production, then imports may be needed to fill the gap, but these imports should be viewed as evidence of success in generating employment and income growth. Income growth will enhance food security and open trade will reduce reliance on often unstable domestic food production.

TRADE IMPEDIMENTS

The variety of agricultural trade strategies that exists in developing countries reflects differences in resource endowments, history, food security, sources of government revenues, balance of payments, and so on. This variety also indicates differences in perceptions about the ability of markets to generate prices consistent with desired income distributions. Virtually no country in the world operates with a completely free-trade regime. Most developing countries employ trade policies that discriminate against the agricultural sector, as discussed in Chapter 15. Domestic trade policies, however, are just one of the impediments to agricultural trade. In this section we discuss the major constraints to trade, and in Chapter 17 we suggest potential solutions to trade problems. Impediments to agricultural trade for developing countries can be classified into three major categories: (1) external demand constraints, (2) restrictive trade policies at home, and (3) market instability.

External Demand Constraints

Developing countries have long been concerned that as producers of primary products they face relatively inelastic demands in more-developed countries. With inelastic demands, additional exports may result in a fall in world prices for the commodities. While individual countries face relatively elastic export demands, when several countries that export the same products (e.g. cocoa, coffee, bananas, etc.) all try to increase exports simultaneously, prices might fall by a higher percentage than export quantities increase. Thus, their collective export revenues could decline, even as export quantities grow. An important recent example is the coffee crisis that began in the late 1990s as Vietnam, Indonesia, and other relative newcomers to coffee production began to expand their exports. World prices of coffee fell to around $.50/lb compared to average prices of $1.20/lb during the 1980s. Prices during the early 2000s were so low that an estimated 540,000 workers in Central America lost their jobs as coffee farms discontinued harvesting.[4] After 2004, coffee prices partially recovered as supplies tightened, but temporary job losses caused permanent harm to many households. Sustained declines in export prices can cause worsening terms of trade in the long run as well. Historical evidence suggests that the terms of

[4] See Panos Varangis, Paul Siegel, Daniele Giovannucci, and Bryan Lewin, "Dealing with the Coffee Crisis in Central America: Impacts and Strategies," The World Bank Development Research Group, Policy Research Working Paper 299 (March 2003).

trade for developing countries may indeed have declined over time, as their output growth has outpaced increases in demand.[5]

Trade Restrictions in More-Developed Countries

The demand for certain LDC agricultural exports is affected by trade restrictions in more-developed countries (MDCs). The MDCs are more protectionist of their agricultural than of their industrial products. Whereas LDCs often discriminate against agriculture, MDCs often support farm prices above market equilibrium levels in hope of supporting farm incomes (see Chapter 15). Thus, MDCs have to restrict imports to avoid supporting the whole world's prices. Restrictions particularly affect exports from temperate and subtropical areas of LDCs that compete with MDC agricultural products: commodities such as beef, certain fruits and vegetables, and sugar.

Raw tropical products such as cocoa and coffee face few restrictions because they do not compete with more-developed country production. However, semi-processed products, such as cocoa paste and certain fibers such as cotton, do face restrictions. Developing countries would like to export more processed commodities because those products have a higher unit value and provide more employment.

Quotas and tariffs are two of the more common import restrictions placed on agricultural commodities by MDCs. An example of how an import tariff works to increase price in the country imposing it and to reduce imports from the exporting countries is illustrated in Figure 16.1. The tariff increases the price that domestic consumers must pay for imports, which also raises the price they are willing to pay to local producers as well. In Figure 16.1, the country imposing the tariff is small in the world market so the tariff does not alter the world price. However, if is country is large in the world market, such as the United States with sugar, a tariff (or a quota that would act just like the tariff in its effects on the market) would depress the world price as well.

It is estimated that if the more developed countries removed all barriers to market access for agricultural products from other countries, the world would gain about $44 billion (in 2001 dollars), about a

[5] Gross terms of trade do not take into account differences in costs of production between the products. However, it is difficult to draw a firm conclusion about the net terms of trade because improved technologies have reduced the cost of producing the exports as well. It is possible for the gross terms of trade to decline but the net terms of trade and comparative advantage for agricultural products to improve.

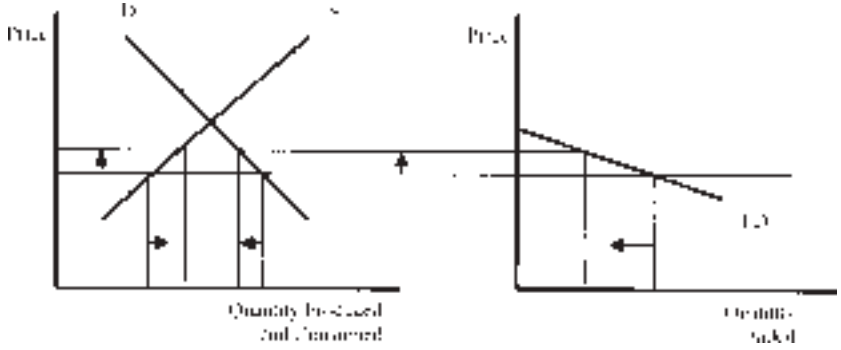


Figure 16.1. Effects of an import tariff.

quarter of which would accrue to developing countries.[6] If all tariffs and subsidies were removed by more developed countries, the largest individual country winners would be Brazil, Argentina, and India.

Subsidized agricultural prices in the more developed countries encourage increased production in those countries while high prices discourage consumption. If production exceeds consumption, stocks accumulate unless they are exported at subsidized prices. The additional volume of exports can depress world prices, making production elsewhere even less attractive. Dairy products and wheat are examples of subsidized exports of high-income countries. Urban consumers in developing countries can benefit from these policies, at least in the short run, due to lower prices, but farmers in those countries are faced with production disincentives and lower incomes. These price distortions, though benefiting MDC farmers, are globally inefficient. They create conditions for lower growth worldwide. One of the purposes of negotiations under the auspices of the World Trade Organization (discussed in Chapter 17) is to reduce these trade restrictions.

Restrictive Trade Policies at Home

Many developing countries proclaim food self-sufficiency as an objective, but employ direct and indirect policies that, on net, tax farmers, subsidize consumers, and increase dependence on food imports. Examples of direct policies that influence agricultural trade are export

[6] Thomas Hertel and Roman Keeney, "What is at Stake: the Relative Importance of Import Barriers, Export Subsidies, and Domestic Support," in Kym Anderson and Will Martin, eds., *Agricultural Trade Reform and the Doha Development Agenda* (Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2005), pp. 49–52.

Developed countries protect rice producers at the expense of producers in developing countries.

taxes and subsidies, import tariffs, export and import quotas, import or export licenses, and government-controlled marketing margins. Multiple and overvalued exchange rates and high rates of industrial protection are the principal indirect means of discriminating against agriculture.

Agricultural export taxes are one of the oldest and most common trade interventions in developing countries. Export taxes tend to raise the prices of the products to foreign buyers and reduce the prices received by domestic producers. Producers of cocoa in Ghana, cotton in Mali, coffee in Togo, tobacco in Tanzania, and tea in India — to name just a few products and countries — typically receive much less than the border prices for their products. Some of this difference is due to marketing system inadequacies (see Chapter 15), but a significant portion is caused by export taxes.

Some taxation of export crops involves direct taxation of products as they move through ports. Alternatively, public marketing agencies are established that control marketing margins or set farm prices lower than market equilibrium. These agencies, often called marketing boards or parastatal marketing agencies, were discussed in Chapter 15. They are granted monopoly power for buying and selling the commodity, and they may set quotas for exports or imports.

Export taxes are prevalent in the developing countries because they are a relatively easy tax to institute and collect compared to alternatives

such as income or land taxes. Export taxes generate government revenues and, in some cases, reduce exports and encourage the shifting of production from exports to domestic food crops.

Occasionally, developing countries impose export taxes in attempts to exploit monopoly power that they believe they hold in world markets. If a country is a large enough exporter in the world market to affect the world price, it can use a tax to raise the world price. Although the volume of trade would be lower following the imposition of the tax, the hope is that additional income is earned at the expense of purchasing countries because the price is higher. Ghana has used this rationale for its export tax on cocoa, Brazil for a tax on coffee, and Bangladesh for a tax on jute. Although some world price increase is possible, the ability of individual developing countries to exploit monopoly power for particular commodities is quite limited. Higher prices create incentives for increased production in other countries as well as for the development of substitute products.

Developing countries sometimes use export quotas to partially or totally restrict exports. These restrictions force the sale of the products in domestic markets, thereby reducing prices to consumers. The result, however, is to discourage domestic production and to generate profits for those holding the quota rights.

Import tariffs and quotas are also used on agricultural products in developing countries, and are commonly employed on industrial products as well. When an import tariff or quota is imposed on industrial goods, the prices of the goods are raised relative to those of agricultural goods, creating an indirect tax on agriculture. Another significant source of indirect taxation is exchange rate misalignments that result from both macroeconomic policies and direct industrial protection policies. When fiscal and monetary policies (see Chapter 18) lead to a higher rate of inflation at home than abroad, the value of the local currency falls. If governments fail to adjust the official exchange rate downward, the currency becomes *overvalued.* An over-valued currency makes exports from a country more expensive and imports into it cheaper. Thus, fewer goods are exported and more imported. The additional supply of agricultural products on the domestic market reduces farm and consumer prices. Exchange rate overvaluation is common in developing countries and historically has been particularly severe in several African countries including Nigeria, Ghana, and Tanzania.

Countries sometimes establish a *multiple exchange rate system.* With this system different commodities are traded at different rates. For example, the government allows one rate of exchange for a commodity it wants to keep inexpensive in the country and another for a commodity

it wants to make expensive. Multiple exchange rate systems often discriminate against the agricultural sector.

Accurately measuring the effect of government policies on the prices received by farmers is difficult, in part because governments typically implement many different policies at once. The results of research to compare actual farm level prices with what farmers would have received under free-trade policies, across countries all around the world, are summarized in Table 16-2. The results in the table are averages for 75 countries, which together account for over 90 percent of the world's population, total income, and agricultural income. Policy effects were estimated for the major products in each country in each year, totaling more than 70 different products with an average of almost a dozen per country. Not all countries had data for the entire 1955–2007 period, but the average number of years covered is 41 per country.

The data in Table 16-2 illustrate how governments in Africa, Asia, and Latin America imposed heavy taxes on their farmers during the 1960s and 1970s. In the 1980s, a wave of reform known as structural adjustment led many of these governments to reduce average tax burdens, by lifting both exchange-rate distortions and direct trade restrictions. Some of these policy changes were imposed by foreign lenders so that borrowing countries could expand exports and repay their debts, but many were adopted voluntarily by developing-country governments seeking faster economic growth. Changing domestic socioeconomic conditions also led to policy change, particularly when higher incomes and other trends raised the relative political power of a country's farmers as opposed to its food consumers and taxpayers.

This rising political influence is reflected in Table 16-2 in the switch from taxing farmers to subsidizing them in Asia and Latin America, and in the particularly rapid rise in subsidy rates in the highest-income countries of Asia. This transition towards farm subsidies is a bit of a paradox in that farmers have greater political influence and more support from government after they are fewer in number and have already escaped extreme poverty. The situation may seem unusual, but as discussed earlier, lobbying is facilitated by smaller numbers, and richer countries can afford support easier than poor countries. Factors such as benefits and costs per person help explain why regions differ in the average tax or subsidy rates shown in the table.[7]

[7] Several recent papers analyze these data, including William A. Masters and Andres F. Garcia, "Agricultural Price Distortion and Stabilization: Stylized Facts and Hypothesis Tests," in *Political Economy of Distortions to Agricultural Incentives*, ed. Kym Anderson (Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2009).

TABLE 16-2.
AVERAGE RATES of GOVERNMENT TAXATION or SUPPORT to AGRICULTURE in SELECTED COUNTRIES, by REGION, 1955 TO 2007 (percent of undistorted prices)

	1955-59	1960-64	1965-69	1970-74	1975-79	1980-84	1985-89	1990-94	1995-99	2000-04	2005-07
Africa	-14	-8	-11	-15	-13	-8	-1	-9	-6	-7	-2
Asia	-27	-27	-25	-25	-24	-21	-9	-2	8	12	58
Latin America	-11	-8	-7	-21	-18	-13	-11	4	6	5	8
Europe and Central Asia	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	13	20	17	18
Western Europe	44	57	68	46	56	74	82	64	44	37	17
United States and Canada	13	11	11	7	8	13	19	16	11	17	10
Australia and New Zealand	6	8	10	8	8	11	9	4	3	1	2
Japan	39	46	50	47	67	72	119	116	120	120	74
Developing countries	-26	-23	-22	-24	-22	-18	-8	-2	6	9	25
High-income countries	22	29	35	25	32	41	53	46	35	32	16
All countries	1	3	6	0	2	5	17	18	17	18	15

Source: Kym Anderson, *Distortions to Agricultural Incentives: A Global Perspective, 1955 to 2007.* (New York and Washington: Palgrave Macmillan and the World Bank, 2009).

Note: Each observation is a weighted average among commodities in selected countries, with weights based on gross value of agricultural production at undistorted prices.

Policy changes that influence prices can lead to large responses in farm income and agricultural production. The output responses to price changes for different commodities in Africa and the rest of the world are indicated in Table 16-3. Production of individual crops whose area planted can vary quickly is more responsive than that of total agricultural output, but substantial shifts have occurred among commodities produced as prices changed.

Heavy taxation of agriculture and trade restrictions constrain agricultural growth. By reducing farm incomes they hasten the exodus of people from rural areas, creating social costs in urban areas, as sewer, water, health systems, and other infrastructure are stretched to their limits. Lower incomes in agriculture also reduce farmers' incentives to invest in land improvements such as irrigation and farm buildings, to adopt new technologies, and to support rural schools with local resources.

Arguments against a relatively free trade regime often are based on anticipated effects of trade on income distribution. The basic concern is that the benefits of trade may accrue to the wealthiest segments of society. While there is reason for concern that a disproportionate amount of economic gains from trade might go to the wealthiest, historical evidence suggests that a high proportion of the benefits from trade *restrictions* also accrues to them. Trade restrictions provide a

TABLE 16-3. SUMMARY of OUTPUT RESPONSES to PRICE CHANGES

	Percentage change in output with a 10% increase in price[a]	
Crop	African countries	Other developing countries
Wheat	3.1 – 6.5	1.0 – 10.0
Maize	2.3 – 24.3	1.0 – 3.0
Sorghum	1.0 – 7.0	1.0 – 3.0
Groundnuts	2.4 – 16.2	1.0 – 3.0
Cotton	2.3 – 6.7	1.0 – 16.2
Tobacco	4.8 – 8.2	0.5 – 10.0
Cocoa	1.5 – 18.0	1.2 – 9.5
Coffee	1.4 – 15.5	0.8 – 10.0
Rubber	1.4 – 9.4	-0.4 – 4.0
Palm Oil	2.0 – 8.1	–

[a]The lower end of the range shows short-term supply responses, and the upper end shows long-term responses.*Source:* World Bank, *World Development Report 1986* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1986), p. 68.

fertile environment for powerful domestic interest groups to pressure for advantages. The benefits of quota rights, export and import licenses, and subsidized inputs provide economic incentives for people to lobby for these privileges. Visible corruption often emerges as well. It is naive to assume that governments are simply selfless protectors of social welfare. They are politicians and civil servants who respond to pressures from private individuals and interest groups.

While many government employees act with the overall public good in mind, they may also be just as concerned with their own self-interest as people are in the private sector. Self-interest can encompass monetary gain, re-election, promotion, or other rewards. And, even when there are no conflicts of public and private interests, administrative complexities associated with trade restrictions can lead to waste, costly time delays in marketing, and other types of inefficiency.

Market Instability

Government officials in developing countries often argue that trade restrictions are needed to counter food insecurity and income risks associated with international trade. Price instability in international commodity markets is indeed very large, but prices would also fluctuate domestically in the absence of trade.

Why are agricultural prices so variable? The central reason is that demand for most primary commodities is relatively inelastic. As weather changes and other factors cause supply to shift back and forth against an inelastic demand curve, prices vary substantially for small changes in quantity supplied (see Figure 16-2). A shift back in food supply against an inelastic demand at a time of low food stocks was responsible for a rapid rise in world food prices during 2007–08, which in turn led many food-surplus countries to restrict exports and food-deficit countries to seek self-sufficiency. When trade restrictions are imposed in such a situation, however, prices in local markets become even more volatile than world prices, because domestic demand tends to be even more inelastic than world demand.

One way for governments to reduce their country's vulnerability to fluctuations in commodity prices is to diversify, by investing in a wider range of agricultural products and in other sectors. When these new enterprises are profitable, the result is sustained growth and greater stability. Unfortunately, some attempts at diversification impose taxes on successful industries while promoting less successful ones. Such promotion can reduce growth and worsen instability. Both diversification and stabilization are often most successful when they are driven by new technologies and accompanied by marketing improvements. These

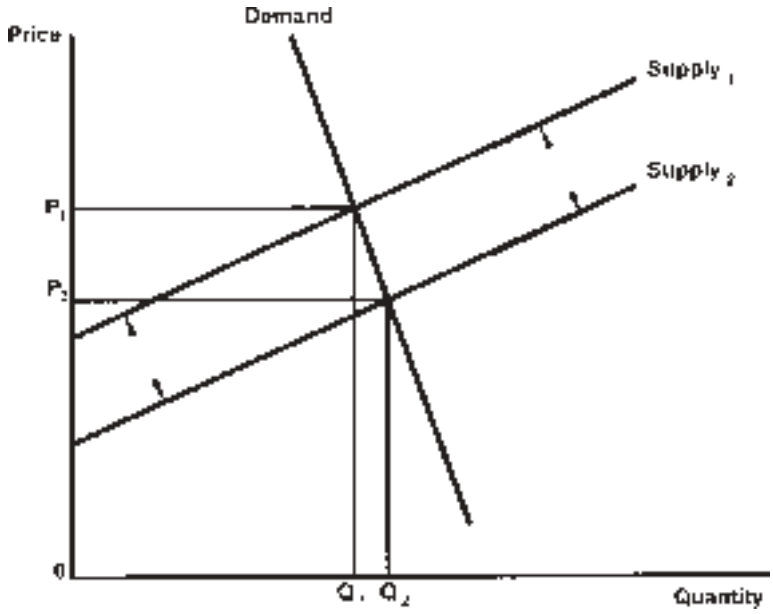


Figure 16-2. Small changes in the supply of agricultural products can result in large changes in price.

changes can make production of major field crops more stable, and can facilitate introduction of products for which markets are growing such as such as non-traditional fruits and vegetables. Diversification may be associated with higher levels of exports, but less overall exposure to single market risks.

SUMMARY

Proponents of trade restrictions argue that as countries become more integrated into the world economy, they open themselves up for exploitation by more-developed countries. Trade proponents of freer trade argue that it facilitates development and permits more efficient use of resources. It gives countries access to goods and services that otherwise would be unavailable or more expensive. Even well-motivated efforts to restrict trade, however, often serve merely to benefit the wealthy. Most developing countries do trade and also follow some restrictive trade policies. Many developing country exports come from agriculture. The preponderance of evidence supports the view that a relatively open trading environment is more conducive to economic development than a highly restrictive one.

Developing countries have a comparative advantage in several agricultural products, particularly tropical ones. They often become less self-sufficient in food in the middle stages of development. Trade tends to have favorable employment implications.

External demand constraints, market instability, and internal direct and indirect trade restrictions all impede exports from and imports into developing countries. Lack of access to developed country markets is probably the most severe external problem. Governments impose internal trade restrictions to raise revenue, to distribute income to particular groups in response to pressures from interest groups, to exploit monopoly power for certain export crops, and for reasons of food security. Indirect restrictions such as overvalued exchange rates are often greater sources of discrimination against agriculture than are direct restrictions such as export taxes and quotas.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Comparative advantage
Export taxes
Foreign exchange rates
Free Trade
Import substitution
International commodity agreement
International trade
Mercantilism
Multiple exchange rates
Overvalued exchange rate
Protectionism
Quotas
Tariffs
Terms of trade

Looking Ahead

A variety of steps can be taken to enhance international trade. The next chapter considers those steps including the role of regional groupings of countries, multilateral trade negotiations, and other changes in domestic and international policies.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1. Why do countries trade?
2. Why do some argue that the terms of trade turn against developing countries over time?
3. What is comparative advantage?
4. Has agriculture as a percent of total earnings increased or declined for developing countries over the past 30 to 40 years?
5. Why might a country's comparative advantage for particular products change over time?
6. Identify the possible linkages between trade and employment.
7. What are the major external trade impediments facing developing countries?

8 Why is world price instability a problem for developing countries?
9 What are the major direct and indirect agricultural trade restrictions employed by developing countries?
10 Why do developing countries impose trade restrictions?
11 Why does as overvalued exchange rate hurt agricultural exports from a country?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Anderson, Kym and Will Martin, eds., *Agricultural Trade Reform and the Doha Development Agenda* (Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2005).

Colman, David and Trevor Young, *Principles of Agricultural Economics: Markets and Prices in Less Developed Countries* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1989), Chapter 11.

Johnson, D. Gale, *World Agriculture in Disarray*, 2nd ed. (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991).

CHAPTER 17

Trade Policies, Negotiations, and Agreements

…the WTO at least provides a system of rules for world trade. … The rules may not be perfect, but they are certainly better than no rules at all. — Eugenio Diaz-Bonilla and Sherman Robinson[1]

THIS CHAPTER

1 Explores solutions to internal constraints to trade
2 Discusses trade negotiations, regional cooperation, and other international solutions to trade problems
3 Considers means of reducing price, production, and income instability problems associated with trade

REDUCING INTERNAL BARRIERS to INTERNATIONAL TRADE

Barriers to expanded international trade in agricultural products are both self-imposed by developing countries and externally-imposed on them by protectionist policies in more developed countries. We begin by considering what developing countries can do internally to solve their trade problems. Trade restrictions are imposed within developing countries in attempts to distribute benefits to particular groups, to generate government revenues, and to offset economic instability and food insecurity. Removing these restrictions may require institutional change to facilitate reform, alternative revenue sources to replace trade taxes that help pay for public services, and bridge financing to pay the adjustment costs associated with short-term losses before long-term gains arise.

[1] Eugenio Diaz-Bonilla and Sherman Robinson, "The WTO can Help World's Poor Farmers," *International Herald Tribune*, March 28, 2001.

Institutional Change to Facilitate Reform

As seen in the previous chapter, a principal motive for trade restrictions is to redistribute income within the restricting country, transferring real income to one sector at the expense of others. Reforming such policies requires a shift in political influence, which usually comes from changes in social institutions. Civic organizations, the media, legal procedures, and administrative practices all help determine whether a particular sector — such as sugar refiners or steel producers — have the political influence needed to obtain favorable trade restrictions. Often, reforms arise not because favored groups lose some of their power, but because other groups acquire more influence of their own, and use that to obtain countervailing policies that level the playing field. Helping more groups acquire some influence often involves lowering transactions costs and facilitating access to information among those who are relatively powerless. Doing so can help those individuals engage in collective action (especially informal lobbying and protesting), and thereby pressure the government for more favorable policies.

A concerted and sustained effort is often needed to reform policies that benefit powerful groups. Transparency and accountability in government, facilitated by a free media and an independent judiciary, are often essential to constrain unscrupulous behavior. Policy prescriptions mentioned in earlier chapters with respect to land tenure, environmental policy, price policy, and research policy are also relevant for trade policy.

One external means of encouraging internal policy reforms is for an organization such as the World Trade Organization (WTO) to help countries enter mutual commitments to favorable policies, and for lenders such as the International Monetary Fund (IMF) to require trade reforms as conditions for loans. This type of activity is viewed by many as meddling in the internal affairs of developing countries. And to a certain extent it is. It certainly places a high burden on an institution such as the WTO or IMF to get its interventions right, lest it cause more harm than good. Often, however, international actors can help a government to undertake reforms that are known to be desirable but may not be politically feasible for them to accomplish without an external partner.

Alternative Revenue Sources

Export taxes and import tariffs are among the easiest mechanisms for raising government revenues in developing countries. They can be replaced with less-distorting revenue sources, such as income taxes, property taxes, and value-added taxes, but this kind of fiscal reform requires

a large increase in record-keeping and accounting information about the domestic transactions to be taxed. Converting quantitative restrictions (quotas) to export taxes or import tariffs as an intermediate step to their removal, while not removing the distortion, would at least provide more revenues to the government rather than to private individuals.

Foreign debt reduction would reduce the pressure on developing country governments to generate revenues. The nature of debt problems in these countries and potential solutions are discussed in Chapter 18. Most of these solutions require action on the part of both more- and less-developed countries. Several developing countries have and will continue to realign their exchange rates to encourage more exports. But this solution will be insufficient for most countries without additional assistance from more developed countries.

Bridge Financing for Adjustment Costs

Developing countries often find it difficult to undertake necessary long-term policy reform because the short-term consequences are so severe. Devaluation of an overvalued exchange rate raises the cost of imports and reduces the cost of exports. While these cost changes improve the foreign-exchange balance and may improve economic efficiency, they also mean that fewer goods are in the domestic market and that there may be severe price increases in the short run. Food prices may rise, real incomes fall, and a disproportionate burden may be placed on the poorest members of society.

International organizations can play a role in providing financial assistance to help offset short-term *cost-of-adjustment* problems associated with policies or structural adjustment programs. In fact, multilateral donors, led by the World Bank, instituted social funds as a means of providing some protection to the poor during structural adjustment programs.[2] Since the losers from policy reform can block changes that would help many more people in the long run, assistance aimed at facilitating adjustment can have significant benefits over time.

REMOVING EXTERNAL CONSTRAINTS to INTERNATIONAL TRADE

The primary methods that have been suggested as potential solutions to external trade constraints include trade negotiations and special preferences, regional cooperation, and product diversification.

[2] See Carol Graham, *Safety Nets, Politics, and the Poor* (Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institution, 1994).

Countervailing trade restrictions to offset the external constraints also have been suggested, but they can generate their own set of problems.

Trade Negotiations and Special Preferences

Bilateral and multilateral negotiations have provided opportunities for liberalizing external restrictions on developing country trade. Bilateral negotiations occur when one country negotiates preferential trade arrangements with a second country either for specific goods or for whole categories of goods and services. For example, nation A might grant nation B preferential access to its sugar market — that is, reduce or remove restrictions to sugar imports from nation B — in exchange for special access to nation B's wheat market. Or, nation A, a more-developed country, might simply grant a special preference to nation B, a less-developed country. Numerous variations of bilateral trade negotiations and special preferences are found.

Since World War II, the primary focus for trade negotiations has been multilateral rather than bilateral under the auspices of the General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade (GATT) and, since 1994, the World Trade Organization (WTO). The GATT, signed in 1947, replaced a series of bilateral agreements that segmented world trade before the war. More than 100 countries were signatories to the GATT, and currently about 150 countries are members of the WTO, its successor organization. The GATT and WTO have attempted to foster adherence to the principle that countries should not discriminate in the application of tariffs.[3] Nondiscrimination implies that bilateral preferential agreements are not allowed. The rules allow for exceptions for developing countries. Several developed countries maintain preferential trading arrangements with particular groups of developing countries for certain categories of products. For example, the United States instituted a Caribbean Basin Initiative that eliminated tariffs and quantitative restrictions for many agricultural products from Caribbean countries. Several countries in West Africa have had special preferences with France. Some developing countries have called for more generalized preferences to be granted to countries with incomes below a particular level.

The GATT contained provisions related to consultation and negotiation to avoid disputes, rules concerning non-tariff as well as tariff barriers, and agreements to periodic multilateral negotiations to lower trade barriers. Over time, success in reducing tariff barriers increased

[3] Nondiscrimination has been called the most-favored national principle, that a country should apply to other countries the same tariff levels that it applies to its most-favored nations.

the importance of non-tariff barriers. Non-tariff influences on trade include, but are not limited to, certain types of health and safety regulations (see Box 17-1), domestic content restrictions, complex customs formalities and reporting requirements, and rules on intellectual properties.

Eight rounds of multilateral trade negotiations took place under the GATT. Most of the early rounds involved negotiations on tariffs and on rules for trading blocs such as the European Community (EC). The middle rounds increasingly focused on non-tariff issues. Agricultural trade restrictions received relatively little attention until the Uruguay Round from 1986 to 1994.[4] They are at the heart of the Doha Round negotiations under the WTO, also called the Development Round.

Developing countries have felt that trade negotiations have focused too little on developed country trade restrictions that affect developing countries. Since 1964, they have met periodically under the auspices of the United Nations Conference on Trade and Development (UNCTAD), a permanent organization within the United Nations, to develop proposals for trade arrangements more favorable to developing countries. These discussions led to calls for a *new international economic order* (NIEO). The NIEO contains provisions for improved access to

BOX 17-1.
ENVIRONMENTAL, HEALTH and SAFETY REGULATIONS

Environmental or health and safety regulations can have a significant effect on trade. The United States prohibits the importation of products that have certain pesticide residues. Fresh or frozen beef is prohibited from countries that have a history of foot-and-mouth disease. Clearly, governments are wise to regulate trade in products potentially injurious to public health. More-developed countries usually have tighter environmental and food-safety regulations than less-developed countries. These regulations raise the cost of production so that, without corresponding restrictions on trade, not only might there be environmental or health threats, but developed country producers might be placed at a competitive disadvantage. However, environmental or health and safety restrictions appear sometimes to be used arbitrarily to protect the economic health of an industry when the true human health hazard is seriously in doubt. As a result, recent multilateral trade negotiations have included tighter rules on when such restrictions can be applied.

[4] Tariff rounds are frequently named after individuals or after locations where the initial discussions in the in the round take place. The Uruguay Round began with a meeting in Punta del Este, Uruguay, in 1986.

developed country markets through a generalized system of trade preferences and for a set of mechanisms aimed at reducing price and foreign exchange earnings instability.

Aside from some compensatory financing schemes for stabilizing foreign exchange (discussed below), some specific trade preferences, and a few other measures, UNCTAD proposals for a NIEO went largely unheeded. The Uruguay Round of the GATT produced the first serious attempt to address agricultural trade restrictions, including some of particular concern to developing countries. The reason for finally considering agricultural restrictions had little to do with agricultural development problems per se. By the mid-l980s, budget costs, shrinking foreign demand, and world surpluses that threatened a global trade war forced agricultural issues to the top of the GATT agenda. The Uruguay Round negotiations highlighted the divisions among more-developed countries and between more-developed and less-developed countries with respect to trade policy, and also illustrated the diversity of interests among less developed countries. Net-exporting developing countries were very concerned about market access and effects of developed country export subsidies. Net-importing developing countries, while concerned about market access, were also concerned about possible rising prices in world markets, particularly for food grains.

The Uruguay Round ended with a very modest reduction in trade barriers, but success in reorienting the trade debate in several respects. Prior to the Uruguay round, trade in many agricultural products was unaffected by the tariff cuts that had been made for industrial products in previous rounds. In the Uruguay Round, there was agreement to convert all non-tariff agricultural trade barriers to tariffs. These tariffs were subject to bindings that limit countries' ability to increase them. The round also contributed to a shift in domestic support for agriculture away from those policies with the largest potential to affect production and, therefore, to affect trade flows. Countries accepted commitments to reduce expenditures on export subsidies and not to apply new subsidies to unsubsidized commodities. Because the base periods chosen had generally high protection, the way non-tariff barriers were converted to tariffs, and the modest percentage reductions agreed to, the overall reduction in trade barriers was small.[5] However, the base was established to build on in future negotiations.

[5] Developed countries committed to reducing tariffs by 36% from the levels in the late 1980s, developing countries 15%. The Uruguay Round allowed countries to institute "tariff-rate quotas." A tariff-rate quota applies a lower tariff to imports below a certain quantitative limit (quota), and permits a higher tariff on imported goods

The Uruguay Round resulted in separate agreements on (a) sanitary and phyto-sanitary (SPS) measures to protect humans, animals, and plants from foreign pests, diseases, and contaminants; and (b) intellectual property rights to protect patents, copyrights, and other such rights from infringement abroad. Both of these measures have been difficult for developing countries to accept. The SPS rules can be credited with increasing transparency of countries' SPS regulations and providing a means for settling disputes. Still, the rules can be manipulated to some extent to create barriers to trade that may not be related to SPS concerns. The rules state that science should be the deciding factor as to whether an imported good poses a threat, but science can still be debated. Intellectual property rights are monopoly rights that are granted to create incentives for private individuals and firms to innovate. However, they also can lead to companies charging high prices to poor countries for drugs and production inputs.

World Trade Organization

The WTO was created in 1994 to replace the GATT, and strengthen the enforcement of international trade rules and the settling of trade disputes. For example, a single country can no longer block the formation of a dispute resolution panel, or veto an adverse ruling by blocking the adoption of a panel report. However, it can still be difficult to get countries whose practices have been successfully ruled against to change their behavior, because the only sanction which the WTO can impose when a member government is found to have violated its WTO commitments is to give to other governments the permission to impose limited, specific retaliatory sanctions.

The WTO matters mainly as a framework for negotiation. Despite concerns of developing countries that the WTO is dominated by more developed countries, the WTO does give developing countries more say than they would have outside it. It is also more open than the GATT. Partly for this reason, more developing countries have joined the WTO than were members of the GATT. Because developing countries can vote as a bloc or blocs, they can force issues more strongly than before. Future negotiations under the WTO are likely to succeed only with some concessions to developing country concerns. In the 2001 meeting in Doha, Qatar, developed countries agreed to place export subsidies

Footnote 5, *continued*

after the quota has been reached. The purpose was to ensure that historical trade levels could be maintained, while creating some new trade opportunities. However, the effect has been to slow the rate of trade liberalization.

higher on the agenda. They also agreed to some relief on intellectual properties, such as for drugs to fight AIDS. The Doha Round has been called the Development Round, to indicate international commitment to addressing concerns of developing countries. In the 2003 Ministerial level WTO meeting in Cancun, Mexico, a group of 21 developing countries (which altogether represented about two-thirds of all the world's farmers) called for tighter domestic support restrictions for developed countries and more flexibility for special and differential treatment for developing countries. Their strong position was one of the reasons leading to a breakdown of that meeting, but it marked a negotiating milestone in that, for the first time, several developing countries negotiated as a block and were able to affect the outcome.

The WTO faces significant obstacles in its role as an international forum for trade negotiations. Some poor countries fear that developed countries will use labor standards as a protectionist tool. Others are concerned that little progress will be made to strengthen anti-dumping rules, and to continue to remove protectionist policies on textiles and apparel. The Europeans want stronger environmental rules than either the United States or developing countries would like, the latter preferring environmental issues to come under separate, non-trade agreements.

Most would argue that the WTO is at least potentially more a friend than a foe for developing countries. It has been estimated that global free trade would confer income gains of about $150-200 billion annually to developing countries and reduce the number of extremely poor people.[6] About half of those gains would arise from removing restrictions (e.g., tariffs and quotas) on exports from developing-country products to developed-country markets, especially in agricultural goods, textiles, and apparel. The gains would be roughly twice the amount that developing countries currently receive through foreign development assistance. However, in the Doha Round negotiations neither developed nor developing countries have sought the degree of trade liberalization that would come close to generating this level of benefits. Almost half of what developing countries could gain from free trade would come from their own tariff reductions, because about a third of their exports are to other developing countries and because their tariffs are higher than those of the developed countries.[7] In July 2008, Doha

[6] William Cline, Trade Policy and Global Poverty, Institute for International Economics, Washington, D.C., 2004.

[7] Kym Anderson and Will Martin, eds., *Agricultural Trade Reform and the Doha Development Agenda* (Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2005), p.12.

Round negotiations broke down over agricultural trade issues, especially a dispute over a mechanism that would allow poor countries to institute tariff protection for specific products if prices drop too low or there is a surge in imports. As of mid-2009, formal negotiations are still at an impasse. Global recession has hindered the restart of talks, as most countries find it politically difficult to discuss reducing trade barriers during economic downturns. The future of the Doha Round remains cloudy at this time.

Regional Trade Agreements

International trading relations are increasingly influenced by regional organizations and trading blocs. The economic union in Europe and the North American Free Trade Area (NAFTA) are examples, but so too are the more loosely integrated free-trade areas that have been established in the Asian-Pacific countries, the Andean countries and the Southern cone countries in Latin America, in Southern Africa, and elsewhere. *Free* trade *areas* are trading blocs whose member nations agree to lower or eliminate tariffs and perhaps other trade barriers among themselves, but each country maintains its own independent trade policy toward nonmember nations. Free movement of production factors, such as labor, are usually not included.[8]

One of the recommendations in the NIEO proposed by UNCTAD was for increased *collective self-reliance* among developing countries. Reduced trade restrictions among a group of those countries could allow for increased specialization, economies of scale (particularly for manufacturers), and competition that reduces costs of production and improves economic efficiency. Occasionally a group of countries can gain some market power through closer economic integration. However, exercise of that power usually creates incentives for one member country to undercut another in terms of production or prices. The power is then eroded and the cohesion of the group jeopardized.

Regional economic groupings can be helpful to developing countries, but their usefulness is limited somewhat by the fact that gains from trade among themselves often are constrained by the similarity of products produced among different countries in a region. For this reason, there has been interest in developing countries to link to more

[8] Free movement of factors is allowed in a tighter form of economic integration such as a Common Market or an Economic Federation or Economic Union. One type of regional economic integration that is tighter than a free trade area but looser than a Common Market is a "Customs Union" in which member countries agree to a common trade policy against all outside countries.

developed countries in these groupings. NAFTA is a good example, with Mexico linked to the United States and Canada. Trade liberalization under NAFTA has been accompanied by substantially larger volumes of trade of agricultural commodities among the three countries. NAFTA eliminated many tariffs and quantitative restrictions among the participants beginning in 1994, and provides for progressive elimination of tariffs and other trade barriers between the countries over a 15-year period. Both exports and imports are up in each of the three countries more than would have been otherwise. The result has been gains from trade as well as resource adjustments within individual commodity sectors. Despite these gains, extending NAFTA to include first Central America and the Caribbean and then all of South America has been controversial. Developing and more-developed countries fear for loss of jobs, and there is little question that expanded regional trade would force many adjustment costs. Some also fear that the signing of regional trade agreements will lessen incentives for countries to enter into meaningful multilateral negotiations at the global level.

REDUCING INSTABILITY

Many trade policy debates focus on price variability rather than average price levels for traded goods and foreign exchange earnings. Some of the main strategies advocated to deal with price risk include: diversification, commodity agreements, compensatory financing, and enhanced use of market information.

Product Diversification

Many countries that receive a high proportion of their export earnings from one or two commodities could likely moderate the effects of external trade restrictions by some diversification of exports. The terms of trade can turn against any single product as substitutes are developed (e.g. for jute and sisal) or new technologies shift supply out against a relatively inelastic and slowly shifting world demand (e.g. peanuts). Also, even if progress is made through negotiations in opening up market access for commodities such as sugar or cotton or reducing explicit or implicit export subsidies for commodities such as peanuts, total removal of developed-country policy distortions is unlikely. Diversifying the production of export and food crops can help not only to reduce the terms-of-trade problems arising from external constraints, but may reduce risks associated with price, production, and foreign exchange variability.

The difficulty for developing countries is in deciding how much to diversify away from a commodity for which it has a strong

An international agreement was in effect for coffee several years ago.

comparative advantage. Diversification out of agriculture is a natural consequence of economic development that may eventually increase exchange-earnings stability, but too much diversification within agriculture can be a costly means of achieving stability.

Commodity Agreements and Buffer Stocks

Historically, a widely-discussed approach to reducing price variability for individual commodities has been to develop international commodity agreements. Several of these agreements have been concluded over the past 30 years for commodities such as wheat, sugar, coffee, and cocoa. However, few of these agreements have been effective for very long.

Some early international commodity agreements, like one for wheat that operated from the late 1940s through the 1960s, attempt to restrict variation in price without influencing the price level. Other agreements, such as those for coffee and sugar, have attempted not only to stabilize prices but also to keep prices high, by restricting production through trade quotas. However, when production varies, these quotas can actually serve to destabilize world prices. A third type of commodity agreement involves *buffer stocks.* With a buffer-stock scheme, when supplies are high, the commodity is bought up and stored. These buffer stocks are intended to provide protection against a time when supply of the commodity drops for some reason. If there is a shortage, stocks would be released on the market to keep prices down. The agreement might

specify a minimum and a maximum price, a buffer stock of say 15 percent of world production, a tax on imports or exports to build up the stocks, and perhaps some quotas for producing countries.

With most commodity agreements, exporters and importers have difficulty agreeing on an appropriate target price range. The agreements also have proven expensive to administer, especially buffer-stock programs with their high costs of storage.

Compensatory Financing Schemes

Schemes aimed at stabilizing expenditures or earnings are an increasingly popular alternative to direct intervention in commodity markets. The simplest approach has been compensatory financing schemes (CFS), as illustrated in Figure 17-1. A reference line is set for each country for its total export earnings or earnings from particular commodities. Upper and lower acceptable bounds are set around the reference line. When earnings go below the lower bound, the CFS fills in the shortfall by providing cash or credit to the particular country. When earnings are in excess of the upper bound, developing countries may pay back what was previously taken out. If the repayments shown by shaded regions above the top line exactly equal the borrowing shown by shaded regions below the bottom line, plus interest, then the CFS would exactly break even over time. Of course, it is nearly impossible to set reference lines at these break-even levels. Commodity price trends are unpredictable, and participating governments have a strong incentive to lobby for a more favorable choice of reference lines.

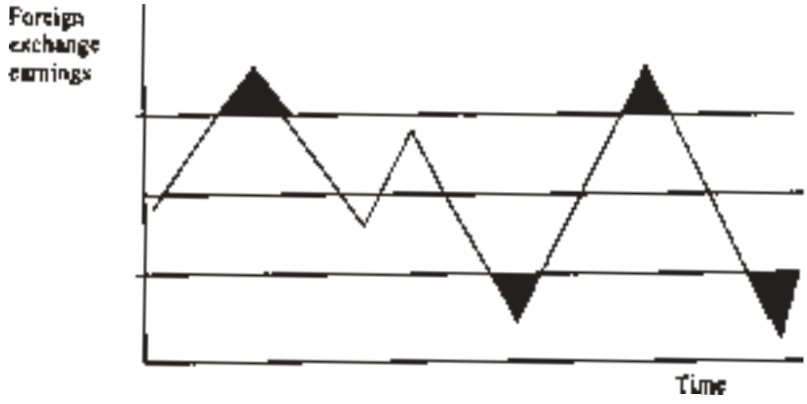


Figure 17.1. Example of a compensatory finance scheme.

Although CFS programs rarely break even, they have been widely used by donor agencies to help developing countries. For example, one CFS operated by the Compensatory Financing Facility (CFF) of the IMF was established in 1963 to provide financial assistance to member countries experiencing temporary export shortfalls. To use the CFF, the IMF must be convinced that the country will seek means to correct its balance of payments problem in the case that export earnings shortfalls are caused by structural problems. Countries also can borrow against the CFF when adverse weather and other circumstances beyond their control result in high cereal import costs. This component of the CFF, called the *cereal import facility,* was set up in 1981, but has been relatively little used.

A second important compensatory finance scheme was the STABEX, run by the European Community (EC) as part of the Lomé Convention.[9] The STABEX scheme was restricted to African, Caribbean, and Pacific countries and was aimed at stabilizing export earnings for 48 agricultural products. Usually only exports to the EC were covered. A reference line was set for each commodity, based on the average value of exports for the products in the preceding four years. To qualify for compensation, export earnings had to fall at least 6.5 percent below the reference line. All loans were interest free and the least-developed countries repaid nothing. The major commodities supported were cotton, sisal, coffee, cocoa, and peanuts. Major beneficiaries were Senegal, Sudan, Cote d'Ivoire, Mauritania, and Tanzania.

Enhanced Use of Market Information, Insurance, and Derivatives

The difficulty of implementing any of the stabilization approaches discussed above has led to the development of new, more market-based interventions. At the simplest level, governments seek to increase the flow of market information to facilitate commodity trading and storage. Governments can also help traders use well-regulated futures and options markets. These contracts are called derivatives, because they represent the right to buy or sell something else: they are derived from the commodity but are not the product itself. Important derivative

[9] The EC's economic arrangement with African, Caribbean, and Pacific countries, which replaced former colonial preference schemes, was originally spelled out in the Lomé Convention of 1975 and revised several times before being itself replaced by the Cotonou Agreement of 2000. Other arrangements include free access for many African, Caribbean, and Pacific products to EC markets and the European Development Fund, which administers foreign aid to these countries.

markets exist in London, New York, Sydney, and elsewhere; the largest futures market ''exchange'' is in Chicago. With futures markets, commodities can be bought and sold for delivery at a future date. Farmers or exporters can fix a price for goods to be sold later, thus reducing the risk. This activity is called *hedging.* Alternatively, sellers can insure against extremely low prices and buyers against extremely high prices by trading in options on futures contracts. Farmers or exporters can insure against low prices by purchasing an option to sell if prices fall to a specified level. If prices fall below that level, they can exercise their option to sell at that price. If prices rise above it, they lose what was paid for the option, but they can sell the products for the higher price.

The usefulness of international futures and options markets is limited for developing countries because internal commodity prices may not follow the same pattern as commodity prices in Chicago, New York, etc. However, if trade becomes more liberalized in the future, these markets may become more useful.

SUMMARY

External demand constraints, market instability, and internal direct and indirect trade restrictions all impede exports from and imports into developing countries. Lack of access to developed-country markets is probably the most severe external problem. Governments impose internal trade restrictions to raise revenue, to distribute income to particular groups in response to pressures from interest groups, to exploit monopoly power for certain export crops, and for reasons of food security. Indirect restrictions such as overvalued exchange rates are often more significant sources of discrimination against agriculture than are direct restrictions such as export taxes and quotas.

Trade negotiations were undertaken under the GATT beginning in 1947, but only recently addressed in any substantial way the restrictions on agri-cultural products that are so important to developing countries. The WTO was formed during the Uruguay Round of negotiations to replace the GATT and currently has roughly 150 countries as members. Developing countries have more say in the WTO then they had under GATT. Regional economic groupings of countries such as NAFTA have also become more prevalent and have increased regional trade, although their effects on total trade are less certain. International commodity agreements, compensatory financing, product diversification, and enhanced use of market information may help developing countries deal with economic instability.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Compensatory finance
Doha Round
Free trade area
GATT
International commodity agreement
International trade
Multi-lateral trade negotiations
NAFTA
Product diversification
Protectionism
Quotas
Tariffs
Terms of trade
Trade preferences
Uruguay Round
World Trade Organization (WTO)

LOOKING AHEAD

The macroeconomic environment strongly influences agricultural production incentives, agricultural trade, and employment. Domestic macroeconomic policies affect key prices in the economy, including exchange rates, interest rates, wages, food prices, and land prices. Government revenues, taxation, borrowing, and inflation all influence agriculture. In the next chapter we will consider the effects of both domestic macroeconomic policies and the world macroeconomic relationships. Particular attention is devoted to world capital markets and the debt crisis facing many developing countries today.

OUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1. Why do developing countries impose trade restrictions?
2. What is the GATT and why have developing countries felt that it has focused too little on their problems?
3. What is the WTO and why was it created?
4. What is the difference between multi-lateral and bi-lateral trade negotiations?
5. What are components of the new international economic order (NIEO) called for by developing countries under UNCTAD?
6. What is the purpose of a compensatory finance scheme and how might one work?
7. Why might product diversification be helpful to developing countries?
8. What is a free trade area? Give an example.
9. How do buffer stocks relate in international commodity agreements?
10. How might enhanced information help reduce internal trade restrictions in LDCs?
11. Why does as overvalued exchange rate hurt agricultural exports from a country?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Anderson, Kym and Will Martin, eds. *Agricultural Trade Reform and the Doha Development Agenda* (Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2005).

Cline, William, *Trade Policy and Global Poverty* (Washington, D.C.: Institute for International Economics, 2004).

CHAPTER 18

Macroeconomic Policies and Agricultural Development

> In the long run, macroeconomic forces are too pervasive and too powerful for micro-sectoral strategies to overcome. When they work at cross-purposes, as they do in many developing countries, an unfavorable macroeconomic environment will ultimately erode even the best plans for consumption, production, or marketing.
>
> — C. Peter Timmer, Walter P. Falcon, and Scott R. Pearson[1]

THIS CHAPTER

1 Discusses the importance of government policies associated with taxation, spending, borrowing, interest rates, wage rates, the money supply, and exchange rates in influencing the performance of the agricultural sector

2 Examines why governments in less-developed countries tend to pursue specific types of macroeconomic policies

3 Describes the significance of the inter-relationships among macroeconomic policies across countries; international capital, labor, and product markets; and domestic agricultural markets

MACROECONOMIC POLICIES and AGRICULTURE

Macroeconomic policies have a strong influence on output prices, factor prices, marketing margins, and, hence, on incentives for agricultural producers, consumers, and marketing agents. Foreign exchange rates, for example, affect export and import prices and quantities and, thus, output and input prices. Interest rates determine the cost of investments in machinery and equipment and, when combined with wage

[1] C. Peter Timmer, Walter P. Falcon, and Scott R. Pearson, *Food Policy Analysis* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1983), p. 215. This chapter updates ideas in *Food Policy Analysis*, especially in the first section.

rates, the capital intensity of production. Interest rates also influence the cost of storage.

The macroeconomic environment conditions the rate and structure of agricultural and urban-industrial growth. Job creation and income growth and distribution are as much a function of macroeconomic policies as are policies and projects targeted at specific sectors. The short-run effects of macro policies on employment and income distribution can be quite different from their long-term effects. Real incomes of urban consumers can be sharply reduced in the wake of macroeconomic policy adjustments aimed at reducing public debt or controlling inflation. Policymakers often seek means of softening short-run income and nutritional consequences of policy changes needed for long-term growth.

Understanding the effects of macroeconomic variables on food and agriculture is important for designing economically and politically viable short-and long-run policies. When macro policies create distortions such as over-valued exchange rates, heavily subsidized interest rates, and inflationary fiscal and monetary policies, agriculture is usually discriminated against and long-term prospects for development are compromised. Pressures build for major macro-policy reforms that, even if unintentionally, usually help the rural sector by increasing farm incomes and rural employment. Price increases and lower subsidies, however, necessitate painful adjustments by urban consumers. The pervasive nature of these macro-policy effects makes it imperative for those interested in agricultural development to understand how the macro-economy works.

Describing a Macro-economy

The "macro-economy" is the aggregate of all economic activity in the country. It is the sum of all individual goods and services, at the prevailing "macro prices" for foreign currency, capital, and labor that cut across all sectors. The value of the activity at current exchange rates, interest rates, and wage rates can be added up in terms of demand, supply, or income (see Figure 18-1). A country's gross domestic product (GDP), a measure of its domestically produced national income, will, in theory, be identical regardless of whether it is calculated by summing demands, supplies, or incomes. In practice, differences in measurement errors lead to different measures of income, depending on the adding-up technique used. Macroeconomic policies in developed countries often focus on managing the demand side of the economy. Governments implement policies to stimulate private consumption or investment, use public expenditures to create demand, and closely

Demand Description	Supply Description	Income Description
Consumption	Agricultural production	Wages
+	+	+
Private investment	Industrial production	Interest
+	+	+
Government expenditures	Production of services	Rents
+	+	+
Excess of exports over imports	Government production	Profits
↓	↓	↓
Gross domestic product	Gross domestic product	Gross domestic product
+		
Net income transfers abroad		
↓		
Gross National Product (GNP)		

Figure 18-1. Three descriptions of a macro-economy.

manage trade. Policies in developing countries frequently are more concerned with managing aggregate supply. Governments in developing countries tend to use the types of policies described in Chapter 15 to manage agricultural supply; similar policies affect the other productive sectors. Numerous developing countries have attempted to stimulate supply by involving the government directly in the production of goods and services.

Demand equals supply when the components in Figure 18-1 are expressed in real terms (inflation is netted out). The basic factors of production (land, labor, and capital) together with management, earn incomes when they produce goods and services. These incomes are spent on the components of aggregate demand; hence total income equals GDP. Developing countries are often very concerned about the distribution of total income among wages, interest, rents, and profits, and undertake policies to manage this distribution.

The prices of goods and services are generally expressed in the country's currency units. The monetary value of a good or service can change due to inflation even when its real value has not changed. Policies that create inflation can change real values as well, though often indirectly. The causes of inflation are discussed below, but many of inflation's effects are, in a sense, unintended results of fiscal and monetary policies. We turn our attention to these policies first, highlighting their effects on agriculture. Then we consider the effects of macro-price policies, particularly those policies related to exchange rates, interest rates, and wage rates. Finally, we consider the effects of macro policies

on rural-urban terms of trade and land prices. The major macroeconomic and agricultural policy connections are summarized in Figure 18-2; these connections are described below.

Fiscal and Monetary Policy

Fiscal policy is the use of taxes and spending by government to influence employment, income growth and distribution, and other objectives. *Monetary policy* is the use of the money supply and the interest rate to influence these things. The two kinds of policy are closely related. In particular, since the government can print money and never goes bankrupt, expanding the money supply or borrowing from foreigners can be tempting alternatives to raising taxes. Governments differ substantially in their ability and willingness to run budget deficits, and in the way these deficits are financed.

Governments in developing countries often go into debt because of their many pressing needs and limited tax revenues. Tax collection, particularly income tax collection, is difficult and costly, and taxes are easy to evade in countries with poor information systems. Consequently,

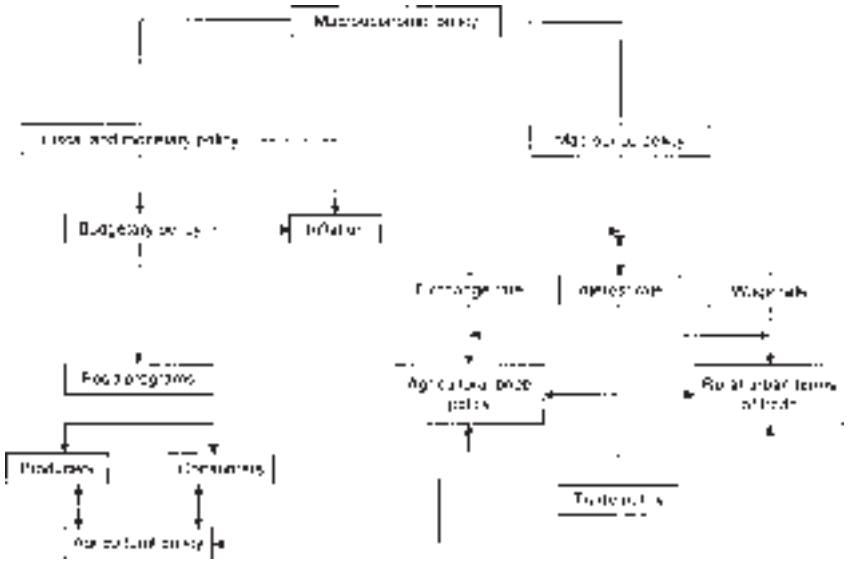


Figure 18-2. Major connections between macroeconomic policy and food policy. (*Source*: Based on Fig. 5-1 in C. Peter Timmer, Walter P. Falcon, and Scott R. Pearson, *Food Policy Analysis* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1983), p. 223.)

developing countries raise large proportions of their tax revenues from export taxes, import tariffs, and sales taxes, as these taxes tend to be easier to collect than others.

Because agriculture is usually the largest sector in the economy in developing countries, it generally provides more revenue to the government than it receives in return in the form of government programs. However, there are usually substantial budget allocations to the agricultural sector. Programs for producers include items such as irrigation systems, roads, agricultural research and extension, market information, and certain output or input subsidies. Programs for consumers include items such as targeted and non-targeted food price subsidies. Many of the investments in agricultural research and extension, irrigation, roads, etc., also benefit consumers.

Foreign aid can ease some of these revenue needs, as discussed Chapter 19. A few countries have petroleum and other mineral resources that they can export so that foreign consumers help provide revenues for government spending. However, given the limitations to raising taxes, obtaining foreign aid, or exporting petroleum or minerals, most developing countries incur budget deficits. They meet these deficits by borrowing, often from abroad, or by increasing the money supply (that is, by printing more money).

Currently, several developing countries are heavily burdened by debts incurred through previous borrowing abroad. This debt problem, its causes, effects, and potential solutions to it, are discussed later in the chapter. The debt incurred in previous borrowing constrains the ability of many countries to take on additional debt. Consequently, domestic money supply and budget finance policies become that much more important. The size of the money supply must match the needs for operating capital in the productive sectors of the economy. However, when a country prints money to finance a large budget deficit, inflation is the usual result (see Box 18-1).

Inflation can be linked to increases in particular prices; for example, if a country devalues its exchange rate so the prices of all traded goods rise, or it keeps a fixed exchange rate and sees foreign prices rise. But in such cases, the rising prices of those items translate into economy-wide inflation only if the whole money supply rises accordingly. Otherwise, the prices of other things would fall, and only relative prices would change.

Whatever its source, inflation does not usually imply a change in all prices by the same amount, and so it creates some winners and some losers. Indeed, it often hurts agriculture because the prices of inputs usually rise by more than the prices of farm outputs. When inflation

BOX 18-1.
EFFECT on INFLATION of a GOVERNMENT BUDGET DEFICIT FINANCED by EXPANDING the MONEY SUPPLY

Inflation is a sustained rise in the general price level for a country's goods and services. It is usually measured by a price index. The following example illustrates why expansion of the money supply to finance government budget deficits creates inflation. The aggregate supply of goods and services produced must equal the aggregate demand from total expenditures or, $Y = P \times Q = C + I + G + X - M$, where:

Y = monetary value of national output or income
P = price index for all goods and services produced
Q = quantity index for all goods and services produced
C = national consumption expenditures in private sector
I = national investment expenditures in private sector
G = government expenditures on consumption and investment
X = total value of exports
M = total value of imports

If government demand for goods and services (G) increases because the government prints money to pay for a budget deficit, either the quantity produced of goods and services (Q) must increase, imports (M) must increase, or prices (P) will rise. Most developing countries do not have enough idle resources to meet this demand with enough Q. Changes in imports require foreign exchange. Thus, the usual result is an increase in prices.

Source: C. Peter Timmer, Walter P. Falcon, and Scott R. Pearson, *Food Policy Analysis* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1983), pp. 227–28.

occurs, the foreign exchange rate should change to reflect the reduced value of the currency. Many developing countries do not allow this adjustment to take place completely. The resulting overvalued exchange rate increases the price of agricultural exports (thus reducing export demand) and makes food imports cheaper. The resulting increased supply of agricultural products on the domestic market reduces farm product prices. The foreign exchange rate policy is just one of the macroprice policies that have significant impacts on agriculture.

Macro Prices and Agriculture

Governments use macroeconomic policies to influence inflation, provide incentives, and distribute income. Three prices — foreign exchange rates, interest rates, and wage rates — have major effects on the macroeconomy and can be manipulated by the government. These *macro-prices*

are all, in fact, determined by supply and demand conditions in their respective markets, so that if the government decides to set them by fiat, conditions of excess supply or demand can result. Two of these prices, interest rates and wage rates, signal the scarcity of basic factors of production, capital and labor. Governments often are tempted to set wage rates artificially high to directly raise incomes of workers. They are tempted to set interest rates low to encourage borrowing and investment. Wages set above the free market, equilibrium value determined by supply and demand conditions will lead to excess supply of labor and, hence, unemployment. Interest rates set below equilibrium values will create excess demand for credit which will then have to be rationed. Government policy can be used to affect those macro prices indirectly by intervening to change the underlying supply and/or demand conditions. Public works projects, for example, stimulate demand for labor and could be used to raise wages.

The foreign exchange rate is relatively easy to control, and governments often do control it. Two other prices with major effects on the macro-economy, food prices and land prices, are influenced indirectly through exchange rate manipulations. These prices can also be affected directly by imposing tariffs, or by government interventions in their respective markets.

Exchange Rates An exchange rate is the number of units of one currency that it takes to buy a unit of another currency, or the price of one currency in terms of another. For many relatively developed countries, the foreign exchange rate is determined in international money markets by the supply of and demand for a country's currency. For example, there is a demand for U.S. dollars in Japan in order to pay for agricultural products imported from the United States. Similarly, there is a supply of dollars in Japan coming from the purchase of Japanese cars by U.S. consumers. The balance of payments of any country summarizes all economic transactions between it and the rest of the world. The current account, largely reflecting trade balances in goods and services, is balanced by the capital account, which reflects changes in ownership of assets between countries. A country with a trade deficit (i.e., it currently imports more than it exports), by the nature of the accounting relationship, must run a capital account surplus (i.e., it is selling more of its assets) to foreign investors. Thus, the supply of, and demand for, dollars are affected by international trade and capital flows for investment or other purposes.

These same supply and demand factors exist in developing countries, but the exchange rates in these countries frequently are set by governments rather than determined in currency markets. A developing

country may fix or "peg" the value of its currency to that of a major trading partner such as the United States. For example, Honduras for many years fixed its currency, the Lempira, to the dollar at a rate of 2 Lempira equals 1 dollar. The Lempira then followed the fate of the dollar in foreign exchange markets. It declined in value when the dollar declined against third countries, and rose when the dollar rose.

A government can set a new official exchange rate to raise or lower the value of its currency. For example, Honduras eventually devalued its currency relative to the dollar and set it at a ratio of 4 to 1. This devaluation made imports into Honduras more expensive and its exports cheaper. In recent years, countries as diverse as Thailand, Indonesia, South Korea, Russia, Brazil, Argentina, and Turkey have used pegged exchange rates, at least for a period of time. In some cases, such as Ecuador, the country has even done away with its currency and just used the dollar in its place. In other cases, countries have used what is called a crawling or soft peg where the currency is allowed to shift gradually over time or move within a pre-specified range with respect to another currency.

Many countries overvalue their exchange rates for long periods of time. Overvalued exchange rates usually result from differences in inflation rates between a country and its major trading partners. Domestic inflation in the presence of fixed exchange rates means that imports seem cheaper relative to domestically produced goods. At the same time, exports from the country become more expensive abroad. But the market for foreign exchange in the country will not balance unless capital flows in; thus the value of the currency is driven up. Any policy that creates inflationary pressures, such as government budget deficits or expansion of the money supply, will, when combined with fixed exchange rates, lead to overvaluation. Countries maintain over-valued exchange rates by controlling the movement of foreign exchange and foreign investment (see Box 18-2).

Countries overvalue exchange rates in part to keep domestic prices down. More imports and fewer exports mean more goods in the domestic market. The greater the domestic supply of goods relative to demand, the lower the price. The result of an overvaluation is that the prices of traded goods produced in the country, such as many agricultural goods, are depressed relative to those of non-traded goods and services. Thus rural incomes tend to be lowered compared to urban incomes.

Devaluation can correct the problem, at least temporarily, but unless fiscal and monetary policies are changed to reduce either government expenditures or aggregate demand, inflation will rather quickly

BOX 18-2.
HOW a GOVERNMENT MAINTAINS an OVERVALUED EXCHANGE RATE

Since supply and demand factors determine exchange rates, if a government wishes to fix the official rate at a level other than its equilibrium, then it must intervene in the foreign exchange market. It can support an overvalued rate by selling foreign exchange reserves (dollars or some other currency) and purchasing its own currency, thus supporting its value. Overvaluation thus diminishes foreign reserves and cannot be sustained for long periods of time. In the absence of significant reserves, a government can restrict access to foreign currency at the official rate, and thus effectively ration the commodity (foreign exchange) for which excess demand exists. This rationing is usually implemented by imposing direct currency controls, by controlled allocations of foreign exchange to preferred importers, and by tariffs and other barriers to imports.

result in a reoccurrence of the overvalued exchange rate. Devaluation can also cause hardship on those who produce non-tradable goods and services and consume tradable goods; for example, civil servants and certain groups of factory workers. Food prices generally rise in response to currency devaluation, helping farmers and hurting urban consumers. Policies are often needed to protect the welfare of the very poor when a devaluation occurs, especially if the currency has been allowed to become substantially overvalued and a large adjustment is needed.

Over time, countries that are open to international capital flows have found that either a fixed exchange rate or a flexible exchange rate that is allowed to float against other currencies is more sustainable than an exchange rate that is managed by the government so it adjusts gradually. Countries with a history of sharp monetary instability or that are closely tied in trade and capital flows to another country, seem to be the ones who choose the fixed rate system.

Interest Rates The price of capital investment is represented by the interest rate. The interest rate reflects, in part, the productivity of capital or the opportunity cost of using capital for one purpose rather than another. Interest rates also reflect risk and the value of current as opposed to future consumption. Interest rates are determined by the interaction of the supply of investment funds, basically household savings, and the demand for these funds.

Governments can influence interest rates by setting them for public credit sources and by imposing regulations such as reserve requirements on private financial sources. In addition, the method by which

the government finances a fiscal deficit affects interest rates. If a deficit is financed by domestic borrowing, then interest rates may rise in response to the increased demand for funds. The alternative means of financing deficits is to print money, a policy which is inflationary. Thus, higher interest rates in the presence of budget deficits can help keep inflation down. Macroeconomic policy with respect to interest rates often represents an attempt to balance the value of capital in increasing production with the valuation of future, relative to current, consumption.

Governments may set a maximum interest rate that can be charged by lenders in the country. If the rate is set too low, excess demand for credit is created because demand for credit will exceed its supply. Under these circumstances, credit has to be rationed to borrowers who are fortunate to have access to the funds, and private lenders will have incentives not to lend or to circumvent the regulations. Formal lending institutions may be forced out of business. Moneylenders and other informal credit sources not under the control of the government find it easier to charge higher rates.

When interest rates are controlled, they may even be set below the inflation rate. When this happens, the real interest rate is, in fact, negative.[2] Negative real interest rates create credit crises since they spur demand for borrowing far above the supply of savings. Even less extreme interventions can have negative effects, however, as they encourage use of government credit for those who can obtain it and drive out private credit institutions.

Wage Rates The primary source of income for most people in the world is returns to their labor. Hence creating jobs at decent wages is essential to reductions in poverty and hunger. Governments recognize the importance of labor remuneration and often set minimum wages in an attempt to raise people out of poverty. Unfortunately, in low-income countries where most people are self-employed, minimum-wage legislation is a relatively impotent tool for raising returns to labor and can have unintended effects that hurt labor.

Labor markets are complex because they are segmented by skill levels, occupations, and locations. In rural areas, labor arrangements may include payment in kind (e.g., food or other goods), may involve conditional access to a piece of land, or may depend on other special relationships between employers and workers that are determined by local customs or institutions. Wages for unskilled workers in these areas may be close to the average product of labor rather than the mar-

[2] The real interest rate is equal to the nominal interest rate minus the rate of inflation.

ginal product (Chapter 6). This level in turn is close to a basic subsistence level. Minimum-wage legislation is virtually unenforceable in rural areas in developing countries.

In urban areas, minimum wage legislation has been successful in large industries and government organizations. People who are able to obtain jobs at or above the minimum wage clearly benefit. Unfortunately, by raising the price of labor, minimum wage legislation reduces the demand for labor by these industries and organizations. Thus unemployment (or excess supply of labor) may result in the short run. In the long run, the industries may adapt more capital-intensive technologies, further displacing labor, or close their doors and move to a country with lower and more flexible wages. The possibility of higher wages in the formal sector may attract more migrants to the urban area, even if jobs are scarce. This influx of migrants will also swell the informal sector. Consequently, minimum-wage legislation in the formal sector may, over time, depress wages in the informal sector. In summary, wages are an important macro-price, especially to the poor, but governments have little ability to raise people out of poverty by legislating wage levels.

Prices of Agricultural Products and Land. Agricultural prices are influenced by government interventions in output and input markets, as discussed in Chapters 15 and 16. Price supports, input subsidies, export taxes, and so on, directly influence the terms of trade between the agricultural and nonagricultural sectors. Fiscal and monetary policies and macro-prices, however, usually have even larger effects on the terms of trade between the sectors than do the more direct price policies. For example, the agricultural sector produces a high proportion of tradable commodities. Thus, an overvalued exchange rate that encourages imports and discourages exports typically has a strong negative effect on the agricultural sector.

When macro-policies and prices discriminate against the agricultural sector so that agricultural prices are depressed, downward pressures are placed on land prices as well. Incentives are reduced for improving the land base or for developing technologies to utilize land more efficiently.

In summary, macro-prices reflect basic economic conditions in an economy. Unless agricultural productivity is increased, simply distorting these prices through government policies is likely to hinder the development process and create distributional effects that hurt the rural poor.

WHY GOVERNMENTS PURSUE PARTICULAR MACROECONOMIC POLICIES

Why do governments in developing countries often follow macroeconomic policies that discriminate against rural producers in favor of urban consumers? Why do they sometimes change course and introduce structural adjustment programs that may partially reverse this discrimination? Political leadership and individual personalities play an important role; at the simplest level, governments follow policies that respond to the balance of political power within their countries. They distribute income in particular ways to help certain sectors, to correct past problems such as external debts, to reduce inflation, and to react to changing world conditions. Because food is a wage good (i.e., food is a high proportion of consumer budgets in developing countries), the interests of urban consumers coincide with owners of industrial firms. Consumers view lower-priced food as higher real wages, while industrialists see it as serving to decrease upward pressure on nominal wages. Thus, an overvalued exchange rate, for example, is a tempting quick fix for stimulating industrial growth, distributing income toward politically influential urban consumers and industrialists, and reducing inflationary pressures.

The growth stimulus of macroeconomic intervention is often short-lived. Discrimination against agriculture reduces agricultural growth and investment and foreign exchange earnings from agricultural exports. A severely over-valued exchange rate can turn a food exporter into a food importer. Rural opposition to the macro-policies increases over time, inflation worsens due to higher food prices, and unemployment grows. Then, because pressures from urban groups continue, governments may subsidize agricultural inputs, raise output prices through subsidized market margins for food staples, and undertake other measures to reduce prices to consumers. In other words, they pursue partially offsetting policies. Governments institute such complex policies due to political expediency. Urban consumers and industrialists are potent pressure groups that demand low food prices and relatively more public goods for urban compared to rural areas.

Transactions Costs and Collective Action

Both macroeconomic interventions and sectoral policies provide benefits to politically-favored groups. Individuals may belong to several different groups, and may be simultaneously helped and harmed by different policies. The net benefit obtained from policy, often called political rents, is rarely clear. Macro-policy interventions are particularly difficult to observe. Thus, governments may provide direct

subsidies to agricultural producers that are more than offset by overvalued exchange rates and still appear to be helping farmers. Food prices are kept low in urban areas, at least in the short run, and urban industrialists and civil servants, with better information than most farmers, press for the continuation of exchange rate distortions and other forms of protection that benefit the urban sector.

Rural and urban households can form coalitions and lobby collectively for their interests. The policy preferences of politicians and other government officials are affected by the relative strength of these rural and urban lobby groups. The urban lobby is often quite strong because it may represent a coalition of households, students, civil servants, military factions, labor unions, and industrialists.

It is not the sheer size of the urban lobby that gives it power to influence policy. The rural lobby is even larger in many developing countries. However, the urban lobby is much more concentrated geographically, and this concentration facilitates its ability to organize. Students are concentrated near universities, civil servants in government offices, and labor unions and industrialists in a relatively small, concentrated formal sector. The military is highly organized. If people decide to protest rising food prices, the costs of organizing and coming together for this purpose are relatively small in the urban sector.

Because the urban lobby is made up of several relatively small but homogeneous groups, members of these groups see the benefits of organizing collectively to press for their interests. Rural interest groups, particularly small-scale farmers, are so dispersed that individual members often see few benefits to themselves. Communication is difficult so that even if collective benefits are perceived, the costs of organization and action are prohibitively high. Ironically, as development proceeds and the agricultural sector declines in relative and absolute size, its ability to organize and lobby often increases. Also, the cost to the government of subsidizing a small agricultural sector is lower than a larger sector. Therefore, once a country is relatively well-developed, it usually reduces its discrimination against agriculture.

Sometimes government policies are motivated by corruption among politicians and other officials. Policy distortion creates gains for certain groups, and some of these gains are appropriated by individuals in public service as payment for instituting the policies.

Historical Factors, Structural Adjustment, and External Forces

A government at any particular point in time is constrained by the accumulated effects of past policy choices, interacting with worldwide

economic conditions. One of the most dramatic examples of history colliding with external forces involves government debt. It is natural for developing countries to go into debt to some degree, but at the start of the 1980s, there was a simultaneous increase in international real interest rates and decline in world commodity prices that sharply increased the difficulty of repayment. Many countries, particularly in Latin America and in Africa, had no choice but to devalue their currencies and cut consumption expenditures in an effort to generate more foreign exchange. Similarly painful "structural adjustment" programs were forced on other countries in the 1990s, when their sources of capital suddenly disappeared. The term *structural adjustment* is often associated with policies aimed at repaying government debt, usually foreign debt. This adjustment typically involves a devaluation of the foreign exchange rate to increase exports and reduce imports, a reduction in government spending and increase in tax collection, sale of government assets and the removal of restrictions on economic activity. The devaluation, privatization, and various types of liberalization may be needed because external debts cannot be reduced without earning or saving foreign exchange. Reduced government spending and increased efficiency in tax collection can bring spending more in line with revenues. The removal of policy distortions is needed to stimulate economic growth, although growth effects may take several years.

Some policy changes are made necessary by changing world economic conditions. A recession in the industrialized countries, for example, can reduce the demand for products from developing countries. High interest rates elsewhere in the world can exacerbate debt problems for developing countries. A shock to the oil market can strain exchange reserves for countries without petroleum. Consequently, some policy changes are necessitated just to react to these external forces. In the next section we examine how these world macroeconomic linkages occur and how they affect developing countries.

WORLD MACROECONOMIC RELATIONSHIPS[3]

Starting from the end of World War II when there was virtually no international capital market, the international monetary system has grown to the point that transfers of capital between countries dwarf the values of international trade in goods. Capital flows ensure a close link

[3] Parts of this section draw on and update material from G. Edward Schuh, "The Changing Context of Food and Agricultural Development Policy," in J. Price Gittinger, Joanne Leslie, and Caroline Hoisington, eds., *Food Policy: Integrating Supply, Distribution, and Consumption* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1987), pp. 78–87.

between interest rates and exchange rates across countries, and heavily influence countries' trade and their fiscal and monetary policy options.

A major change in the structure of the international economy was the shift beginning in 1973 from a system of fixed exchange rates to one of bloc-floating exchange rates. With the fixed system, currencies around the world were fixed for long periods of time against the dollar.[4] With the bloc-floating system, the values of major currencies are allowed to change rapidly against each other in response to market conditions. Some developing-country currencies, however, remain fixed to the major floating currencies such as the U.S. dollar.

Implications of Well-Integrated Capital Markets and Bloc-Floating Exchange Rates

A well-integrated international capital market and bloc-floating exchange rates mean that interest rates, capital movements, exchange rates, and trade are interconnected. They mean that fiscal and monetary policies in each country are tied into a single global macro-economy, with a common core rate of inflation and interest rates. For example, when the United States issues bonds at higher interest rates to pay for a government budget deficit, the capital to buy those bonds comes from a wide range of foreign as well as domestic sources. This foreign purchase of U.S. bonds increases the demand for dollars, driving up the value of the dollar. It also reduces the capital available for other purposes, raising worldwide interest rates. The higher interest rate makes it harder for developing countries to pay off their remaining foreign debt, forcing them to reduce consumption more than they otherwise would.[5]

The higher value of the dollar also makes U.S. exports more expensive abroad and encourages imports into the United States. Developing countries with currencies that are tied to the dollar will also find

[4] The fixed exchange-rate system had been established at the Bretton-Woods Conference in 1944. Trade expanded rapidly under this system, but the system eventually became unworkable when certain currencies, particularly the U.S. dollar, became seriously overvalued and others, particularly the German deutschemark and Japanese yen, became severely undervalued.

[5] Capital flows can also keep interest rates low in some cases. For example, in 2005, China purchased many U.S. bonds even though interest rates were low, which meant that the United States did not have to raise interest rates to sell bonds to finance its budget deficit. These low rates kept the demand for home mortgages and other loans strong, stimulated the U.S economy as people were willing to borrow and spend, and contributed to a bubble in the housing market. That bubble subsequently burst and the housing market collapsed with major recessionary implications.

it harder to export and easier to import. Then, tradable goods sectors, such as agriculture, in those countries suffer from downward pressure on prices.

Governments often try to partially isolate their domestic agricultural sectors from changes in international markets, but any such isolation would mean loss of gains from trade and from access to foreign capital to facilitate development. Consequently, developing countries usually choose to absorb a certain amount of instability in interest rates, exchange rates, etc., caused by world macroeconomic forces in order to benefit from international goods and capital markets. These countries however, may need to: (1) protect the poorest of the poor through targeted food subsidies or other means of ensuring basic food security and (2) take full advantage of international schemes aimed at stabilizing foreign exchange such as the compensatory finance arrangements discussed in Chapter 17. The IMF does play a role in trying to help stabilize LDC economies during times of financial crises. In a sense, the IMF is the closest thing the world has to an international central bank. However, the relatively small resource base of that institution, and lack of explicit mandate, keeps its role circumscribed as discussed below.

Changes in International Comparative and Competitive Advantage

Comparative advantage increasingly is less influenced by physical resource endowments and more by human capital endowments. Government spending on education and agricultural research and the rapid international diffusion of certain technologies, particularly biotechnology, has the potential to influence human capital accumulation in many developing countries by improving education, nutrition, and incomes. These changes may eventually lead to restructured trade patterns.

Government macroeconomic and sectoral protectionist policies, however, can suppress underlying comparative advantage and distort a national economy away from what the physical and human resource base would seem to dictate. As exchange rates swing, so too does competitive advantage, in directions discussed previously. For example, a long decline in the value of the U.S. dollar can mislead U.S. producers and producers in other countries about their long-term ability to compete. A sustained rise in the value of the dollar can send opposite but still misleading signals. These movements can be induced by U.S. and foreign government macroeconomic policies that do not reflect any changes in fundamental comparative advantage.

The poorest of the poor may need to be protected by targeted food subsidies during structural adjustment.

The External Debt Problem: Causes, Effects, and Potential Solutions

It is natural for the governments of developing countries to borrow to finance productive investment. As long as a country has investment opportunities in the public or private sector that yield returns comfortably above the cost of funds in the world market, then such investments should be made even if external borrowing is required. The country will grow more rapidly and can export to repay the loan in the future. A country may also borrow at times to finance consumption, a policy that would be appropriate, for example, if a natural disaster or a short-run economic shock, such as a sharp oil-price change, makes it reasonable to sustain consumption even though current income is lower.

Borrowing is imprudent, however, when the debt is increased to cover longer-run consumption, questionable investments, large government deficits, or capital flight out of the country.[6] Imprudent, large-scale borrowing by the government occurred in many developing countries during the 1970s, particularly in Latin America and Sub-Saharan

[6] Capital flight occurs when capital leaves a country due to perceived risk at home. Capital flight, however, is difficult to distinguish from normal capital flows. It often occurs when the government borrows foreign exchange and makes it available to residents at a subsidized price. People acquire this foreign exchange, if they can, and move it to banks or other investments abroad.

Africa. The result was a *debt crisis* that began in the early 1980s and has only slowly receded over the past three decades. When a country has a debt crisis, it lacks foreign exchange to make payment of interest and principal on its loans.

Causes of the Debt Crisis. When a country makes more payments to the rest of the world than it receives in payments, it has a *current account deficit* (see Box 18-3). It has to sell off assets or borrow to finance the deficit. Developing countries began running abnormally large current account deficits beginning in 1973 when the price of oil skyrocketed. During the 1970s, commercial banks received a flood of dollars from the oil-producing countries. The banks loaned these dollars to developing countries to finance their current account deficits. Several Latin American and Asian countries seemed to be good risks because they had grown rapidly for several years. In Africa, growth had, for the most part, not occurred, but countries there borrowed from official sources such as the World Bank for development purposes.

By 1980, many developing countries were heavily in debt, which became suddenly much harder to repay when worldwide interest rates rose sharply due to tight monetary policy in the United States and Britain. Many of the commercial loans to developing countries had been made at adjustable interest rates, and borrowers found it hard enough to pay interest let alone repay principal.

Repayment of debt became even harder when a world recession struck, depressing demands for LDC exports. Even the demand for oil declined, resulting in a drying up of money for new loans. The first reaction of countries seriously in debt was to refinance the loans and spread them out over a longer period of time. Several countries, however, found it difficult to service their debts (make scheduled interest and principal payments) or to acquire new funds. For Latin America, debt servicing exceeded 50 percent of the value of the region's exports during the early 1980s, and much of the debt was owed on short-term loans at variable interest rates that were rising.

The first of the large debtors to announce it could no longer service its debts was Mexico in 1982. Mexico was a net oil exporter, but it had borrowed heavily against anticipated future oil revenues. These oil revenues declined with the worldwide recession, and Mexico was left with a debt of more than $80 billion with few exports to make repayments. Banks and the U.S. government provided Mexico with new loans to forestall the repayment problem, but it was then clear that the world community had a major financial crisis on its hands that would have to be addressed. As Mexico renegotiated its loans, the crisis hit

BOX 18-3.
CURRENT ACCOUNT DEFICIT

The current account deficit represents the excess of spending on imports and interest payments on the external debt over export revenues. In other words, it equals the trade deficit plus interest payments. The current account deficit in a particular year also represents the increase in the net debt for a country. Unless the trade surplus is large enough, the mere existence of an external debt means that interest on that debt will cause the debt to keep growing.

other countries as well. By 1986, more than 40 countries in Latin America, Africa, and elsewhere had encountered severe financial problems. Except for the Philippines, countries in Asia largely escaped severe debt problems.

Comparisons of the external debt situation between 1970 and 2006 for low income, middle-income, and several individual countries are presented in Table 18-1. For developing countries, external debts as a percent of GNP were two to three times as great in 1990 as they were in 1970–1975. By 1989, developing countries owed more than $1.3 trillion. Debt service was running more than $100 billion per year. Twelve of the 17 countries identified by the World Bank as heavily indebted were in Latin America and the Caribbean. Africa's debt of more than $110 billion was three times the value of all its annual exports. Cote d'Ivoire provides an example of the severity of the debt problem: with a population of 11.7 million in 1989, it owed $15.4 billion or $1300 per citizen in a country with an annual per capita income of $790. Forty-one percent of the country's export receipts were needed just to service the debt.

Since the early 1990s there have been gradual debt reductions in several countries, especially middle income countries, but many other countries have continued to experience high debt levels. Some attempts have been made to forgive debts of several of the most highly-indebted, least-developed counties, but debt problems have proven persistent. In addition, a number of Latin American and East Asian countries experienced other short term financial crises in the 1990s, as discussed below.

Effects of the Debt Crisis. When a country attempts to reduce its external debt, domestic consumption must be cut to free up resources to produce goods that can be exported to earn foreign currency for debt service. Reductions in import demand are needed to save foreign exchange. Not all of the reduced spending affects traded goods. Some of

TABLE 18-1. INDICATORS OF EXTERNAL DEBT for DEVELOPING COUNTRIES

Country or country group	Total external debt as a percent of gross national income				
	1970-1975	1980	1990	2000	2006
Low income	10.2	16.4	41	56.3	31.6
Middle income	18.6	31.9	39.9	36.5	25.2
Argentina	20.1	48.4	61.7	56	58.6
Brazil	16.3	31.2	25.1	39	18.7
Morocco	18.6	53.3	97.1	49	28.7
Philippines	20.7	53.8	69.3	64	47.1

Source: World Bank, *World Development Indicators Online Database*.

it falls on non-traded goods and services when labor and capital shift to the production of traded goods for export.

Within the country, prices of traded goods must rise relative to wages and other prices to encourage the production of traded goods and to discourage domestic consumption. Exchange rate devaluation is the typical means of bringing about these adjustments in relative prices. Devaluation, however, takes time to have the desired effect. Thus, policymakers typically find ways to reduce their imports in the short term by means such as imposing tariffs or import quotas. Because some of the imports are raw materials or producer inputs, economic growth often is slowed as well.

Spending cuts and devaluations are painful since they inherently involve reductions in real income for the country. The cuts usually include reductions in basic social services that help the poor. The devaluations effectively cut real wages. As the currency is devalued, the country has to give up more in terms of domestic resources to earn each unit of foreign currency. The country is essentially selling its labor and other resources more cheaply on world markets.

Many developing countries had overvalued exchange rates prior to the debt crisis; thus adjustments were needed irrespective of the crisis. The devaluations raised the prices of many agricultural exportables and importables, thus helping the farm sector. However, the resulting higher food prices hurt the poor particularly. The magnitude of this debt-induced hurt is difficult to judge, because several of these countries would have had to adjust their economies even without the debt crisis. But there is little doubt that the poor in developing countries have shouldered a large burden in adjusting to the crisis.

Cuts in government spending have also induced recessions that reduced government revenues. When countries can no longer borrow enough abroad to meet shortfalls, they often print money. Printing money usually increases inflation. Devaluation and import restrictions contribute to these inflationary tendencies. They also hurt markets for U.S. farm products.

At the time the debt crisis first hit, there was a major concern over the impending peril to the world financial system. The fear was that such countries as Mexico, Brazil, and Argentina would default on their loans, causing large commercial banks to go bankrupt. The threat to the banking community eventually receded, as threatened banks reduced their outstanding claims on developing countries, and increased the revenues they set aside to guard against disruptions in debt service.

The threat to the poor in developing countries, however, has only receded slowly, and in many countries not at all. In parts of Latin America and the Caribbean, real wages have gradually increased but not in all countries. In Sub-Saharan Africa, per-capita incomes have continued to stagnate. Governments in many developing countries have cut their education and health budgets. Not all of these declines were due to debt problems, but many were. The rise in poverty and the reduction in social services have led to increased hunger and malnutrition in some countries. Environmental problems have increased as well, as countries exploit resources to meet current food and foreign exchange needs.

Solutions to Debt Problems. External debt problems of developing countries impose costs on both debtors and creditors. One potential solution is for developing countries to default on the loans. Total default would have the advantage of relieving pressures to cut government spending and to export more to service the debt. The disadvantages are that the creditors could seize debtor's overseas assets, and creditors might seize payments to firms that attempt to export to the debtor and payments made by firms that attempt to import from it. Thus, the country would lose some potential gains from trade. In addition, the country would be less able to borrow again for several years. This combination of disadvantages has meant that few countries have totally defaulted on their loans, although some countries have stopped payments or made only partial payments for a period of time (e.g., Peru, Brazil).

When considering solutions to debt problems, it is important to separate the two different groups of countries whose governments have large debt problems. One group consists primarily of low-income,

mostly African countries that owe money largely to governments or to multilateral lending agencies. The second group is composed of the heavily indebted countries, primarily in Latin America, that owe money mainly to commercial banks.

Both groups have high levels of debt, but otherwise their circumstances are different. The low-income African countries possess limited domestic resources such as oil or minerals, do not own much abroad, have had slow income growth for reasons primarily unrelated to debt, and have continued to receive new loans in excess of debt service. The countries that owe most of their debts to commercial banks, by contrast, own more resources (for example, Mexico, Venezuela, Nigeria, and Ecuador have oil reserves), have a great deal of wealth abroad in many cases, and have had economic growth rates substantially reduced by their debt.

Because the lowest-income debtors owe mostly to governments, the creditor countries can mandate debt relief or restructuring without interfering in private international capital markets. Creditors can respond to the debt crisis in ways consistent with their humanitarian beliefs or, more likely, their overall foreign policy objectives. Low-income debtor countries can turn to the Paris Club for help in resolving debt issues (see Box 18-4). Because many loans to African countries are at below-market interest rates (subsidized), rescheduling these loans by extending the repayment period can significantly reduce the burden to the debtor. Recently, partial debt forgiveness for some of the poorest countries has occurred and more has been pledged. The Enhanced Heavily Indebted Poor Country (HIPC) debt relief initiative, established by the World Bank and IMF in 1996, reduced debt for 28 HIPCs, and the Multilateral Debt Relief Initiative (MDRI) agreed to by G-8 countries in 2005 provided additional debt relief to more HIPCs.

The solutions to debt problems for the heavily-indebted countries that have primarily commercial debts are different from those for the HIPCs, because whatever solution is arrived at must operate within the context of international capital markets that include commercial banks. Any solution will affect the distribution of the debt burden among debtors, private creditors, and the public in creditor countries.

Several potential solutions to the commercial debt problem have been proposed and some partially implemented. Most proposals involve a combination of debt rescheduling and restructuring of economic policies within the debtor nations. Other proposals include debt-for-equity swaps, cash buybacks of debt, and debt-for-conservation swaps. Debt rescheduling involves extending the repayment period for the loans, altering interest rates, forgiving part of the principal, or some

BOX 18-4.
THE PARIS CLUB

The Paris Club is a forum for negotiations on countries' debts to government creditors. The Club, formed in 1956 in response to Argentine debt difficulties, has no set membership. The participants in any Paris Club negotiation are the debtor government and its creditors, who traditionally meet under the chairmanship of a senior French treasury official.

All creditors are treated equally in Paris Club rescheduling negotiations. Debtor countries approaching the Paris Club are usually required to conclude an agreement with the IMF for an IMF loan and an IMF-approved program for restructuring economic policies. An example of IMF conditions for a structural adjustment program would be reductions in government spending and fewer restrictions on exports.

Source: P. Krugman and M. Obstfeld, *International Economics* (Cambridge: Massachusetts Institute of Technology Press, 1988), p. 596.

combination of the three. Efforts to restructure economic policies involve reducing exchange rates to discourage imports and to encourage exports, cutting government spending, and otherwise liberalizing the economy through reduced government intervention in markets and marketing.

Most countries' debt sells at a discount on a secondary market in which the debt can be shifted from bank to bank or to other institutions. The debt sells at a discount because creditors believe they will not be repaid in full. For example, each dollar of Peru's debt sold for about 5 cents on the secondary market in 1991. Debtor countries can sometimes buy back part of their debt with cash or by swapping government-owned assets (such as stock in publicly owned companies). Buying back the debt seems to make sense because the value of the debt on the secondary market is only a fraction of the face value of the loan. There have been few buybacks and swaps, however, because countries lack the cash, are uneasy about foreign ownership of their assets, and the secondary value goes up when they attempt to buy back the debt. In a few cases, for example in Costa Rica, outside groups bought up and eliminated part of the debt in exchange for government assurances of protecting rainforests or other natural resources. This type of activity is called a debt-for-conservation (nature) swap.

Rescheduling debts over a longer period of time at a fixed but below market interest rate would eventually solve the debt problem because countries could grow out of their debt. However, no single bank has an incentive to act alone. Debt reduction, like domestic bankruptcy,

needs an institutional setting to bring it about. Even when it is in the collective interests of the banks to reduce the debt, each bank has an incentive to insist on full payment of its own loans. If one bank does grant a concession to lower the interest rate or principal, it becomes more likely that other banks will collect their loans. Hence each bank waits around for other banks to voluntarily reduce the interest rate or principal owed so they can get a "free ride." This free-rider problem exists for debt-equity swaps, cash buybacks, and other proposed solutions as well.

Third, developed countries have been reluctant to play too large a role in debt relief for fear of large budget expenditures. While there are strong humanitarian grounds for debt relief through Paris Club negotiations for the poorest countries, the arguments carry less weight for debt relief in Latin America if that relief comes at the expense of foreign assistance to even poorer countries in Africa and Asia. Therefore the world continues to muddle along with only gradual debt reduction.

Regardless of the method used to reduce the debts, it would be enhanced by lowering trade barriers to developing country exports. These barriers make it difficult for the countries to acquire foreign exchange for debt service. For this reason, the WTO negotiations may have a role to play in solving the debt problem.

Financial Crises in Latin America and Asia

In the 1990s, a series of shorter-run financial crises occurred in Latin America (1994–95), East Asia (1997), Russia (1998), and Brazil (1998–99). The impacts of the crises spread to other countries and regions. There were some similarities among the crises. In most cases there were increased private capital flows into the countries shortly before the crises, including both bank lending and private investments. The IMF gradually relaxed its rules on capital flows and encouraged capital movements in the 1990s. Real exchange rates generally had appreciated as well, especially in Mexico and Thailand. When investors became nervous, they pulled their money out and the governments were forced to let their currencies depreciate. Problems worsened when neighboring countries were forced to depreciate their currencies because investors as well as investors pulled out their money. As capital dried up in the affected countries, investment stalled and the countries went into deep recessions. In some cases the countries had problems with deficit spending or inflation before these crises, but in many cases did not.

The crises demonstrated that completely deregulated capital flows carry both benefits and costs. Advantages to the borrowers include resources to finance investments with high social returns

and to compensate for balance of payments problems and recessions. The disadvantages are that foreign investors might pull their money out quickly, thereby destabilizing the economy. Also, the money may go toward projects that are too risky if the investors think that the government or the IMF will bail them out if there is a problem. In addition, capital flows can affect the exchange rate. If capital suddenly starts to flow out, the government must choose between higher interest rates or depreciation of the exchange rate.[7]

Governments can reduce the chances of financial crises by stronger regulation of domestic banking and financial institutions, and improving information flows with respect to economic and financial conditions. The IMF can assist by helping devise solutions in times of crisis while providing some financial assistance when private funds are not available. The IMF must be sophisticated in its ability to distinguish between countries that are being fiscally irresponsible from those that are financially sound but are suffering sudden capital outflows due to temporary regional or global events.

Governments can not simultaneously fix the value of the exchange rate and use macroeconomic policy tools to offset economic problems if capital is allowed to flow in or out of the country freely. Therefore some countries choose to have a flexible exchange rate with relatively free capital flows and attempt to manage their macroeconomic policies. Others choose to fix their exchange rates and institute some controls on capital flows to minimize the danger of financial crises. This combination allows them to manage their macroeconomic policies. A third group of countries decide to fix their exchange rates, allow free capital flows, but give up the ability to influence their macro-economies. The latter countries are usually small ones with major trading partners to which they tie their currency. They also want to encourage strong foreign capital investment, and therefore do not want to institute capital controls.

Lessons from the Global Financial Crisis

In 2008-09, a financial crisis in developed countries, led by rapid depreciation in housing assets as a result of poor lending practices and lax financial regulation in the United States, spurred a deep global recession. Due to integration of product and capital markets, the effects were felt throughout the world, including poor countries. Trade flows were reduced, capital became scarce, unemployment was up, and more

[7] Joseph Joyce, "The IMF and Global Financial Crises," *Challenge*, July-August 2000, p. 98.

people slipped below the poverty line. The recession hit the poor doubly hard, as many were experiencing the effects of the food price crisis discussed in Chapters 1 and 3. One lesson for developed countries was the need to tighten regulations not only in the banking sector but in the insurance sector that contributed much to the crisis. A second lesson is the need for central banks such as the U.S. Federal Reserve to pay greater attention to asset bubbles as they occur. One lesson for developing countries is the need to institute more safety nets for the poor that can be deployed immediately when global conditions turn sour due to market disruptions outside their control.

SUMMARY

Macroeconomic policies have a strong influence on prices, on marketing margins, and hence on incentives for economic agents. A macroeconomy can be described in terms of aggregate demand, supply, or income. Policies in developing countries are frequently aimed at the supply side of the economy. Both fiscal and monetary policies influence inflation. Developing countries often go into debt because of many pressing needs and limited tax revenues.

Governments use foreign exchange rates, interest rates, and wage rates to influence trade, investment, and incomes. Many developing countries over-value their exchange rates, a policy that discourages exports and encourages imports. They often subsidize interest rates and set minimum wages for the urban formal sector. Agricultural and land prices are influenced by macroeconomic policies.

Governments pursue particular macroeconomic policies to stimulate economic growth, distribute income, correct debt problems, lower inflation, and so on. Policies are influenced to a large extent by urban lobbies. Forces external to the country also come into play. Well-integrated capital markets and bloc-floating exchange rates tie economic policies of developing to developed countries.

While it is natural for governments in developing countries to borrow to finance investment, massive borrowing during the 1970s, followed by high interest rates and tight money in the early 1980s, led to a severe debt crisis. Many of the loans in Latin America were from commercial banks, and many of the loans in Sub-Saharan Africa were from official sources. Countries were forced to adjust their economies by exporting more, importing less, and reducing government spending in order to pay off debts. Attempted solutions to the debt crisis have been slow to reduce LDC debts. Much of the burden of adjustment continues to fall on the developing countries themselves. Structural adjustment

programs often hurt the poor in the short run, suggesting a need for safety-net programs and increased debt forgiveness.

In recent years, several developing countries have experienced short-run financial crises in which private capital has flowed out rapidly, causing severe economic downturns. Capital controls are a possible remedy for capital outflows, but come at the cost of reduced foreign investment. Some countries with flexible exchange rates choose to allow free capital flows, but then attempt to manage their macro-policies to offset the dangers of the sudden capital flows.

IMPORTANT TERMS AND CONCEPTS

Balance of payments
Bloc-floating exchange rate
Capital flight
Cash buybacks
Current account deficit
Debt crisis
Debt-for-conservation swaps
Debt-for-equity swaps
Debt relief
Debt rescheduling
External debt
Financial crisis
Fiscal policy
Free rider
International capital market
Macro-prices
Minimum wage
Monetary policy
Money supply
Paris Club
Secondary market
Structural adjustment program
Urban lobby

Looking Ahead

International relations between more-developed and less-developed countries are influenced in major ways by foreign assistance programs. In the following chapter we discuss the various types of foreign assistance, motivations for the aid, and effects on the less- and more-developed countries.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1 What are the three ways a macro-economy can be described so as to arrive at gross domestic product (GDP)?
2 What do we mean by a country's "fiscal policy"?
3 What are the two primary monetary policies that can be used to finance a government deficit, and what are their effects?
4 What are the major macro-prices that governments often try to set?
5 Why do countries overvalue their currencies, and what is the effect of overvaluation?
6 What are the advantages of high versus low interest rates?

7 How are wage rates determined, and what are the advantages and disadvantages of minimum wage laws?
8 How are land prices affected by macroeconomic policies?
9 Why do governments pursue particular macroeconomic policies?
10 What is a structural adjustment program, and what are its effects?
11 How does a bloc-floating exchange rate system differ from a fixed exchange-rate system?
12 How are interest rates, capital movements, exchange rates, and trade interconnected?
13 How might a macroeconomic policy suppress the comparative advantage of a country in producing a particular good?
14 Why is it natural for developing countries to borrow from developed countries?
15 Describe the major causes of the debt crisis.
16 Why have many heavily indebted countries devalued their currencies?
17 Why have voluntary rescheduling of debt servicing by commercial banks not resolved the debt crisis?
18 What are the advantages and disadvantages of cash buybacks of debt? Of debt-for-equity swaps? Of debt-for-conservation swaps?
19 Why are the urban poor often hurt more by structural adjustment programs than are semi-subsistence farmers?
20 What are the pros and cons of a developing country defaulting entirely on its debts?
21 What were the causes of financial crises in Asia and Latin America in the 1990s?
22 Who are the HIPCs?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Cohen, Benjamin J., "What Ever Happened to the LDC Debt Crisis?" *Challenge,* vol. 34 (May-June 1991), pp. 47–51.

Joyce, Joseph, "The IMF and Global Financial Crises", *Challenge*, vol. 43 (July-August 2000), pp. 88–107.

Rogoff, Kenneth, "International Institutions for Reducing Global Financial Instability," *Journal of Economic Perspectives*, vol. 13, Fall 1999

CHAPTER 19

Capital Flows, Foreign Assistance, and Food Aid

> Everywhere one turns in global poverty reduction efforts, high-minded rhetoric provides tattered veneer over deficient funding.
> — Jeffrey Sachs[1]

THIS CHAPTER

1 Examines the nature of public and private capital flows to developing countries, including the rationale for and major types of foreign assistance to agriculture
2 Discusses the types, the objectives, and the positive and negative effects of food aid programs in less-developed countries
3 Identifies means for improving the effectiveness of foreign assistance

DEVELOPMENT ASSISTANCE PROGRAMS RELATED to AGRICULTURE

Flows of capital into developing countries can help overcome a shortage of capital relative to labor. Private capital flows, however, may not be sufficient to meet development needs, for several reasons. Restrictions on investments and other forms of capital flows in developing countries create risks for private investors, as do political uncertainty and long gestation periods for projects. Many key forms of infrastructure have attributes of public goods, and it is difficult to charge for use of public goods. All these factors reduce the willingness of the private sector to undertake investments and, hence, can slow the flow of capital into developing countries. The absence of sufficient incentives to

[1] Jeffrey Sachs, "A New Global Consensus on Helping the Poorest of the Poor," Annual World Bank Conference on Development Economics, 1999.

invest can also result from incomplete development of international capital institutions. Foreign development assistance (aid) is one possible solution to help reduce the resulting capital imbalance, including assistance to the agricultural sector.

Foreign aid in support of agriculture in developing countries has taken many forms, and the nature and magnitude of its effects have generated considerable debate. Multiple objectives drive all foreign aid programs, with the result that the distribution of aid among different countries often bears little relation to need as manifested by hunger, poverty, or presence of market failure. Hence, we begin this chapter by examining the rationale for foreign assistance.

Rationale for Foreign Capital Flows and Assistance

From a donor's perspective, the rationale for foreign aid in general, as well as for aid to agriculture, rests on humanitarian (moral or ethical), political (strategic), and economic (commercial) grounds.[2] Several variants of the humanitarian argument have been made, based on compensation for past injustices, uneven distribution of global natural resources, and a moral obligation to help the least-advantaged members of society.[3] The premise is that the emergence of international economic and political interdependencies has extended the moral basis for distributive justice from the national to the international sphere. Foreign assistance to agriculture can benefit one of the largest and poorest sectors in most developing countries.

The political self-interest rationale is based on the notion that aid will strengthen the political commitment of the recipient to the donor(s). Aid is often given during wars and conflicts when there is an opportunity for political realignment, or as part of a negotiated agreement to provide aid in exchange for certain political or military actions.

The argument that aid serves a country's economic self-interest is based on the idea that aid increases exports from and employment in the donor country. For example, producers of food grains in the United States benefit from food aid to the extent that it increases total quantities demanded. Food aid may open markets to a country's exports by initiating commercial contacts. In general, foreign aid to agriculture can improve nutrition and stimulate economic growth, thereby, in low-

[2] See Anne O. Krueger, "Aid in the Development Process," World Bank Research Observer, vol. 1 (January 1986), pp. 57-58; and see Vernon W. Ruttan, United States Development Assistance Policy (Baltimore: Johns-Hopkins, 1996), chapter 2.

[3] Vernon W. Ruttan, "Solving the Foreign Aid Vision Thing," *Challenge*, vol. 34 (May-June 1991), p. 46.

income countries, stimulating demand for agricultural imports and, by extension, donor exports. Much foreign assistance is tied to the purchase of goods such as food or equipment from the donor. These purchases directly benefit producers in the donor countries.

This complex set of reasons for foreign assistance means that foreign aid does not always go to where need is greatest. The fact that aid is given in part for donor self-interest purposes would seem to impose on donors some obligation to ensure that the distribution and types of foreign assistance provided do not harm the recipients.

The level and distribution of U.S. foreign assistance by country over time is shown in Table 19.1. In the 1960s, the United States distributed an average of just under $17 billion per year in 2007 dollars. Most of the top ten recipients were in Asia, including a number of countries that later enjoyed rapid economic growth and earned high incomes as allies and commercial partners with the United States. Aid flows declined for many years, and the top-ten list evolved in response to conflicts and peace accords. Israel and Egypt were the top recipients in the 1980s and 1990s. In recent years, total aid flows have grown back to their level of the 1960s, and Iraq and Afghanistan have risen to the top of the top-ten list, while for the first time the list includes four countries in Sub-Saharan Africa: the D. R. Congo, Sudan, Ethiopia, and Nigeria.

Foreign Aid in the Context of Other Capital Flows

Foreign aid is not the largest type of capital flow to developing countries. Larger flows occur in the private sector, through portfolio investment and through individual remittances by workers to their families in developing countries.

Private investment consists of either portfolio investment or foreign direct investment (FDI). Portfolio investors buy shares or bonds, and can provide an important source of capital for middle-income developing countries with growing financial markets. FDI is the construction or purchase of company-operated facilities, which is particularly helpful if it involves the transfer of proprietary technologies and business methods. Both kinds of investment can be very large and productive, but flows are limited to particular sectors and countries, and have fluctuated widely over the years.

Remittances occur when migrants send money back to their families, as a gift or for investment. These flows tend to be more stable than private investment, have grown rapidly, and are now more than twice as large as foreign aid. In 2007, the total amount of remittances received by developing countries was estimated to have been $280 billion, or 2.1

TABLE 19-1. TOTAL and TOP TEN RECIPIENTS of U.S. OFFICIAL DEVELOPMENT ASSISTANCE, 1960–2007

Total to all countries (millions of constant 2007 US dollars per year)				
1960-69	1970-79	1980-89	1990-99	2000-07
16,785	9,649	10,905	9,429	16,595

Top ten recipients (percentage of total)				
1960-69	1970-79	1980-89	1990-99	2000-07
India 20. 5	Israel 11. 8	Israel 19. 6	Egypt 17. 4	Iraq 19. 3
Viet Nam 9. 4	Viet Nam 10. 1	Egypt 16. 5	Israel 13. 8	Afghanistan 4. 7
Pakistan 8. 8	India 6. 7	El Salvador 3. 6	Haiti 2. 0	Egypt 3. 6
Korea 6. 4	Egypt 5. 6	Banglad. 2. 6	El Salvador 2. 0	Colombia 2. 7
Brazil 5. 6	Indonesia 5. 2	Philippines 2. 3	Philippines 2. 0	Jordan 2. 4
Turkey 4. 2	Pakistan 4. 7	Pakistan 2. 2	Somalia 1. 9	D. R. Congo 2. 3
Egypt 3. 0	Korea 4. 0	Sudan 2. 2	Bolivia 1. 5	Sudan 2. 3
Chile 2. 5	Bangladesh 3. 8	CostaRica 1. 8	Nicaragua 1. 4	Ethiopia 2. 2
Indonesia 1. 9	Cambodia 2. 1	Honduras 1. 7	Bangladesh 1. 3	Pakistan 2. 0
Taiwan 1. 8	Jordan 2. 0	Turkey 1. 6	Peru 1. 2	Nigeria 1. 2

Source: Calculated from OECD, International Development Statistics database (http://stats. oecd. org/qwids).

percent of their total income.[4] Most of these remittances were sent to middle-income developing countries such as the Philippines, which have many educated and relatively high-earning migrants who choose to invest their earnings back home. Lower-income countries such as Nigeria receive a small fraction of all remittances, but because their incomes are so low these remittances are very important to them. For example, the 49 least-developed countries together received only $40 billion in remittances during 2007, but that represented 5.9 percent of their total income. Like other flows, remittances vary widely across countries. In extreme cases such as Haiti, remittances can be 20 percent or more of total national income, whereas some very poor countries such as Madagascar or Mauritania receive very little (see Box 19-1).

Foreign aid is different from private investment or remittances in that, by definition, it uses government or philanthropic funds to serve a public purpose. Total foreign assistance encompasses official development assistance plus military assistance and export credits. Often private funds from voluntary agencies are included. Foreign development assistance, as the term is used in this chapter, excludes the military-related component and export credits, while the term *official development assistance* (ODA) excludes private fund transfers as well. To qualify as any type of foreign assistance, the resources transferred must be sent from donor(s) to a recipient without a commensurate return flow of resources. There may be good will, political support, and so on, but direct payments are not made in return.

At one extreme, foreign development assistance can occur as loans at near-market interest rates. At the other, this assistance can be an outright grant. In the middle, the assistance can be a loan at a concessional (below-market) interest rate or with a maturity period longer than that commercially available.[5] Foreign development assistance also can come in the form of food aid or as technical assistance to provide needed expertise. To be classified as ODA by the Development Assistance Committee of the Organization for Economic Cooperation and Development (OECD), the assistance must have at least a 25 percent grant element.[6] The grant element is defined as the excess of the loan or grant's value

[4] Data in this section are World Bank staff estimates, updated periodically and available online through www.worldbank.org/remittances.

[5] See Krueger, "Aid in the Development Process," pp. 57–58.

[6] The OECD is an organization of 30 industrialized nations, designed to promote economic growth and stability among these relatively high-income countries, and in the world as a whole.

BOX 19-1.
REMITTANCES as a DEVELOPMENT TOOL

Remittance transfers are generally small amounts sent to family members through wire transfers, banks, or hand-carried to individuals in developing countries. Their importance differs by region, and the top four recipient countries are India, China, Mexico, and the Philippines. Top recipient countries in terms of remittances as a proportion of national income (more than 25%) are Tajikistan, Moldova, and Honduras. Rapid growth and variation across countries suggests that improving how remittances are transferred could have a big impact on development. Efficiency can be improved by lowering the costs of and risks of transferring money through more cooperation and better regulation of international financial institutions. Steps are also needed to improve the enabling environment within recipient countries through reforms of banking systems, more transparent rules of access, encouraging acceptance of small-scale deposits, and so on. Incentives can be given for participation in the formal financial sector to help mobilize savings of remittance recipients and other potential small-scale customers. Steps to encourage use of remittance funds for private productive investments will channel these funds into capital accumulation and away from short-term consumption. Well-defined legal and regulatory frameworks will help build confidence of remitters to make productive investments and lower risks of losing their investments. Many of these steps would have the side benefit of mobilizing all forms of small-scale savings and investments and this micro-finance has been shown to facilitate broad-based growth (see Chapter 11).

See Samuel Munzele Maimbo and Dilip Ratha, *Remittances: Development Impact and Future Prospects* (Washington, D.C.: World Bank, 2005).

over the (present) value of repayments calculated with a 10 percent interest rate.

Trends in ODA amounts are shown in Table 19-2. In the early 1960s, U.S. foreign aid was more than half of all foreign aid. U.S. assistance then declined while others expanded their aid programs, such that by the 1990s the United States was giving only about one-sixth of the global aid total. In the most recent decade, ODA from both the United States and other donors has grown again, peaking in 2005.

Development Assistance Programs

Modern foreign aid programs began after World War II with recovery assistance provided by the United States to war-torn Western Europe and East Asia. A wider U.S. development assistance program grew out of President Harry S. Truman's inaugural address of January 20, 1949.

TABLE 19-2: UNITED STATES and WORLD OFFICIAL DEVELOPMENT ASSISTANCE (ODA), 1960–2007 (U.S. $millions, 2000)

Year	Total ODA	U.S. ODA	US as % Total
1960	22,256	13,137	59.0
1965	28,879	17,904	62.0
1970	24,835	11,665	47.0
1975	35,514	11,150	31.4
1980	49,248	13,420	27.2
1985	41,845	13,683	32.7
1990	65,578	14,108	21.5
1995	64,351	8,045	12.5
2000	53,749	9,955	18.5
2001	52,423	11,429	21.8
2002	58,297	13,290	22.8
2003	69,065	16,320	23.6
2004	79,432	19,705	24.8
2005	94,762	24,722	26.1
2006	89,539	20,188	22.5
2007	86,518	18,214	21.1

Source: OECD database, Development Cooperation Report 2008.

Truman called for a "bold new program for making the benefits of scientific advances and industrial progress available for the improvement and growth of underdeveloped area."[7] The program provided technical assistance to Taiwan, South Korea, and other countries in Southeast Asia, the Middle East, and the less-developed countries of Europe. The program was followed by other programs that were consolidated in 1961 to form the U.S. Agency for International Development (USAID). USAID remains the principal development assistance agency of the United States Government.[8]

Other donor countries also have development assistance efforts and have similar agencies leading their foreign aid programs, such as the Japan International Cooperation Agency (JICA), the U.K. Department for International Development (DFID), and the Canadian International Development Agency (CIDA). During the 1950s, assistance was

[7] Harry S. Truman, "Inaugural Address of the President," Department of State Bulletin 33, Washington, D.C., January 1949, p. 125.

[8] See Elizabeth Morrison and Randall B. Purcell, *Players and Issues in U.S. Foreign Aid* (West Hartford, Conn.: Kumarian Press, 1988) for additional historical details.

extended by the United Kingdom, France, the Netherlands, and Belgium to their former colonies. The list of donors grew during the 1960s and now includes most members of OECD and many members of the Organization of Petroleum Exporting Countries (OPEC).[9] Even though the United States gives more ODA than any other country, in recent years it has ranked at or near the bottom among OECD countries in terms of the ratio of ODA to GNP, a rough measure of the ability to "afford" aid. In 2003, it gave 0.15 percent while the weighted average across all OECD countries was 0.25 percent and simple average was 0.41 percent. In March 2002, the OECD countries pledged to contribute 0.7 percent of their GNP to ODA as a means of achieving the United Nations Millennium Goals. However, few countries have achieved that goal.

The actual content of foreign assistance programs varies widely over time and across donors. In the last decade, the biggest area of emphasis for U.S. assistance has been on improving governance institutions in developing countries. This area received very little aid in the 1970s, but grew rapidly beginning in the 1980s. The second-biggest area is now population and reproductive health, which includes programs for HIV/AIDS prevention. Emergency response programs are the third-largest area, followed by debt forgiveness programs. Food aid was the largest area of focus in the 1970s, and remained the largest in the 1980s, but has since fallen. The Agriculture, Forestry, and Fishery sector was the second largest sector in the 1970s and 1980s, but is now the seventh largest sector. Foreign assistance to agriculture includes such diverse components as aid used for agricultural research and extension, irrigation projects, rural roads, agricultural education and training, flood control projects, health improvement programs, integrated rural development projects, and agricultural policy assistance. Comparing the aid allocations of the United States with those of all other donors reveals that other donors place greater emphasis on aid to education and debt reduction.

Not all development assistance is administered through government agencies. Governments sometimes contract for aid delivery through nonprofit, nongovernmental organizations (NGOs), which are often also supported by private charitable donations and commercial

[9] OPEC is a group of countries devoted to seeking agreement among themselves regarding selling prices and other issues related to oil exports. OPEC members include Algeria, Ecuador, Gabon, Indonesia, Iran, Iraq, Kuwait, Libya, Nigeria, Qatar, Saudi Arabia, the United Arab Emirates, and Venezuela.

activities.[10] Several of the largest nonprofit NGOs have religious affiliations, such as Catholic Relief Services or Lutheran World Relief; the biggest of these is a non-denominational Christian organization, World Vision International, whose operations in 2008 involved more than $1.8 billion in revenue plus in-kind donations valued at more than $700 million.[11] Most NGOs specialize in specific areas. For example, the International Committee of the Red Cross and Doctors without Borders specialize in the health sector, while Heifer International specializes in animal agriculture. Some NGOs have major advocacy programs, such as Oxfam and Bread for the World.

NGOs differ widely in their sources of revenue. For example, the Bangladesh Rural Advancement Committee (BRAC) is a large NGO providing microfinance and other commercial services. In 2008, BRAC reported total expenditures of $535 million, of which only 27 percent was donor funding.[12] Development assistance can be channeled through for-profit firms as well as NGOs. The use of private contractors to deliver foreign aid services is particularly important for the United States, where firms routinely bid for contracts from USAID and other government agencies on a commercial basis.

Although most foreign aid funding comes from governments, private philanthropy also plays an important role in international development. The Rockefeller Foundation and other donor organizations made key contributions throughout the 20th century. In the 1990s, large-scale philanthropy by individuals such as George Soros and Ted Turner became important, followed by major grants from Bill and Melinda Gates and from Warren Buffett, whose combined grant making contributed over $1.2 billion for global health and over $300 million for global development in 2007.[13] These and countless other acts of individual generosity, alongside the even larger taxpayer-funded programs, create many opportunities to overcome past failings and meet new challenges. Managing aid in a cost-effective manner, however, is still a significant challenge.

[10] A detailed analysis of NGOs in U.S. foreign aid is provided by Rachel McCleary and Robert J Barro, "Private Voluntary Organizations Engaged in International Assistance, 1939–2004," *Nonprofit and Voluntary Sector Quarterly*, vol. 37, no. 3 (September 2008), pp. 512–36.

[11] World Vision International, *2008 Annual Review*. Available online at www.wvi.org.

[12] BRAC, *BRAC at a Glance*, March 2009. Available online at www.brac.net.

[13] Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation, *Annual Report 2007*, which is available online at www.gatesfoundation.org.

Multilateral Assistance Programs

While much aid is bilateral, or country-to-country, a second approach to giving and managing aid is for multiple donors to combine their resources through multilateral organizations in which donated funds are pooled and managed for a common purpose. Combining funds helps donors to leverage their contributions and obtain access to specialized professional staff and impartial management.

The leading multilateral organization for international development is the World Bank, which was created in 1944. Unlike other development agencies, the Bank does not disburse donor funds as grants — and unlike other banks it does not take deposits. Instead, the World Bank uses donor contributions to guarantee the repayment of funds borrowed from investors, and it then lends at low interest rates to developing countries. The World Bank has more than 180 country members and consists of three major arms that together represent the largest source of long-term multilateral economic development assistance. The first arm, the International Bank for Reconstruction and Development (IBRD), established in 1945, makes long-term loans at interest rates related to its own cost of borrowing, mostly for large-scale projects. The second arm, the International Development Association (IDA), established in 1960, uses profits on the IBRD loans and other funds to subsidize loans to the poorest countries. Loans from IDA have long repayment periods and concessional interest rates. As of 2008–09, the operational cutoff for eligibility for a country to borrow on these terms was about $1000 per person per year in gross national income. The third arm, the International Finance Corporation (IFC), is a profit-making enterprise and is funded by capital from its member countries. It makes loans to the private sector, to mixed (public/private) enterprises, and to government-owned agencies that channel financial assistance to the private sector. Two other arms of the World Bank are the Multilateral Investment Guarantee Association (MIGA) and the International Centre for the Settlement of Investment Disputes.

In addition to the World Bank, there is a set of regional development banks for Latin America, the Caribbean, Asia, Africa, and Eastern Europe. These banks operate in a similar way to the World Bank, but on a smaller scale. The World Bank is also complemented by the International Monetary Fund (IMF), a sister organization with a much smaller staff whose purpose is to make short-term, emergency loans for macroeconomic stabilization, as opposed to the long-term development objectives of the multilateral banks. The World Bank and IMF are the major multilateral sources of development funding, but large numbers

of technical staff provide assistance through the other U.N. agencies described in Box 19-2.

Effects of Foreign Assistance

The economic effects of development assistance on recipients are the regular subject of debate in the popular press and among policy makers. The effects of aid can be assessed at the project, the sector, or the national levels. At the project level, rates of return have been calculated for individual investments such as roads, schools, or agricultural research. These calculations typically yield high returns: for example, the

BOX 19-2.
MAJOR UNITED NATIONS AGENCIES for FINANCIAL and TECHNICAL ASSISTANCE to DEVELOPING COUNTRIES

The **United Nations Development Programme** (UNDP) is the central funding and coordinating mechanism within the United Nations for technical assistance to developing countries. The United Nations Fund for Population Activities (UNFPA) helps countries gather demographic information, undertake family planning projects, and formulate population policies and programs.

The **United Nations Children's Fund** (UNICEF) provides technical and financial assistance to developing countries for programs that benefit children and for emergency relief for mothers and children.

The purpose of the **Food and Agriculture Organization** (FAO) is to raise nutrition levels and standards of living by improving the production and distribution of food and other commodities derived from farms, fisheries, and forests. It also helps countries with food emergencies.

The **World Food Programme**'s (WFP) purpose is to stimulate economic and social development through the use of food aid and to provide emergency food relief.

The **World Health Organization** (WHO) conducts immunization campaigns, promotes and administers research, and provides technical assistance to improve health systems in developing countries.

The **United Nations Education, Scientific, and Cultural Organization** (UNESCO) promotes international intellectual cooperation in education, science, culture, and communications.

The UNDP, UNFPA, WFP and UNICEF are funded through voluntary contributions, public and private, while FAO, WHO, and UNESCO are funded primarily through assessments on member nations with some additional voluntary contributions and other sources of funds.

Source: Details on UN agencies are provided at www.un.org.

World Bank's independent evaluation group estimated the real rate of return for each of 396 projects that ended between 1995 and 2000, and found an average return of 22 percent per year.[14] This payoff is much higher than the interest paid to borrow these funds, which suggests that increased lending for similar investments would raise total economic growth rates.

Given the high rates of return to many aid projects, questions are raised about why private lending has not been more forthcoming, or why concessional loans are needed. An important part of the answer is that returns to aid are spread among the recipient population in ways that a private company could not capture to repay its investors. For example, aid that helps a small child avoid malnutrition or attend school can generate benefits far in excess of its cost, but those benefits cannot be seized by a lender. Indeed, aid is most effective when it focuses on precisely these kinds of public services, which will not be provided by private firms. The developing country's own governments cannot provide enough of these public goods because they lack the tax base or administrative capacity to finance them, from either current revenues or to repay its own loans. As a result, public-sector development assistance from richer to poorer countries has an important role to play in making the world economy more efficient as well as more equitable.

At the sector or national levels, development assistance can augment domestic savings, help provide foreign exchange, and minimize adverse impacts of needed policy reforms. These effects can stimulate growth. Many studies have attempted to assess the impact of development assistance at the national level as it affects savings, investment, or growth. Generally, the results have been positive but, in many cases, inconclusive.[15] The fundamental problem is that aid typically flows to countries in trouble and so is usually associated with bad economic outcomes, even though without aid the outcome might have been worse. Poor countries face many different kinds of problems, from natural disasters and disease to wars and corruption. A widely-cited view suggests that aid has positive effects on growth only in countries with good

[14] World Bank, *Annual Review of Development Effectiveness 2000*, supplement Table 13a. Available online at www.worldbank.org

[15] For more details, see Constantine Michalopoulos and Vasant Sukhatme, "The Impact of Development Assistance: Review of Quantitative Evidence," in *AID and Development*, ed.Anne O. Krueger, Constantine Michalopoulos, and Vernon W. Ruttan (Baltimore, Md.: Johns Hopkins University Press), 1989), chapter 7.

fiscal, monetary, and trade policies, but recent studies suggest that aid has helped even in countries with weak governments.[16]

The small size of aid relative to other capital sources, as described above, undoubtedly has contributed to many of the inconclusive findings about the effects of aid on growth. It is also difficult to measure the effects of aid without breaking it down into its different types and the different reasons for which it is given. For example, aid for infrastructure may have different impacts on growth than aid for policy reform, or for emergency food relief. Emergency food relief programs may be very effective at reducing hunger and human suffering associated with short-term problems, but their effects on aggregate growth may be hard to measure.

Despite a relatively weak link between aid and aggregate economic growth, for reasons outlined above, aid has helped reduce poverty and improved the quality of life of the poor. Targeted aid has helped eradicate smallpox, put polio on the brink of eradication, reduced death from diarrheal diseases, and reduced the incidence and severity of many illnesses.[17] These results will, over time, contribute to economic growth and development, but their effects are indirect and hard to measure.

Few studies have attempted to evaluate the effects of development assistance to the agricultural sector. One study for 98 countries did find a positive effect of foreign assistance to agriculture from 1975 to 1985, particularly in Asia. However, the effects of aid to agriculture in Latin America and the Middle East were non-significant.[18] Investment in research and dissemination of new technologies may be among the most effective kinds of aid for reducing poverty, especially in Africa where the level of such investment has been lowest and where rural poverty is particularly severe.[19]

[16] See Craig Burnside and David Dollar, "Aid, Policies and Growth," *American Economic Review*, vol. 90 (September 2000), pp. 775–86; and Carl-Johan Dalgaard, Henrik Hansen, and Finn Tarp, "On The Empirics of Foreign Aid and Growth," *The Economic Journal*, vol. 114, no. 496 (June 2004), pp. F191–F216

[17] See Jeffrey Sachs, *The End of Poverty* (New York: Penguin Press, 2005); Joseph Stiglitz, "Overseas Aid is Money Well Spent," *Financial Times*, April 14, 2000, p. 20; and Shalendra Sharma, "The Truth About Foreign Aid," *Challenge* (July-August 2005), pp. 11–25.

[18] See George W. Norton, Jaime Ortiz, and Philip G. Pardey, "The Impact of Foreign Assistance on Agricultural Growth," *Economic Development and Cultural Change*, vol. 40 (July, 1992), pp. 775–86.

[19] See Colin Thirtle, Lin Lin, and Jenifer Piesse, "The Impact of Research-Led Agricultural Productivity Growth on Poverty Reduction in Africa, Asia and Latin America," *World Development, 31*, vol. 12 (December 2003), pp. 1959–75.

Effects on Donors

Many donor countries believe that development assistance is effective in stimulating growth in developing countries, but ask whether the effects on their own countries are negative. In other words, they question whether their economic self-interest is served by aid. For example, farm groups and the farm press in the United States frequently express concern that foreign aid may be generating foreign competition. Several studies have assessed whether foreign aid to agriculture does indeed hurt U.S. farmers. These studies have found that for particular commodities in particular countries at particular stages of development, foreign competition is increased as a result of aid. However, they also have found that agriculture as a whole in donor countries is helped by foreign aid to agriculture in developing countries.[20]

The reason farmers in donor countries often benefit from aid to agriculture in developing countries is that agricultural growth in LDCs increases incomes, and these incomes, in turn, stimulate food demand. Middle-income countries, particularly, still have relatively high population growth rates and high income elasticities of demand for food. Demands shift toward higher-quality grains and livestock products as incomes rise. Consequently, when agricultural production rises in these countries, if domestic economic policies permit that production growth to stimulate other sectors of the economy, the result is an expansion in food demand that must be met partially through food imports. Of course when countries eventually reach higher income status, their growth in food demand slows. If and when most of the currently developing countries reach that status, trade will be governed by comparative advantage and trade-distorting policies. Development assistance to agriculture will no longer be an issue.

In summary, while empirical evidence is not always conclusive about the effects of development assistance in general or to agriculture in particular, it appears that positive but modest gains are likely for both recipients and donors. It is unlikely that large gains will be realized except in a few small countries because aid usually represents a small portion of ODA.

[20] See, for example, Alain de Janvry, Elisabeth Sadoulet, and T. Kelley White, "Foreign Aid's Effect on U.S. Farm Exports," U.S. Department of Agriculture, Economic Research Service, Foreign Agricultural Economic Report Number 238, Washington, D.C., November 1989; and James P. Houck, "Link Between Agricultural Assistance and Agricultural Trade," *Agricultural Economics*, vol. 2 (October 1988), pp. 158–66.

FOOD AID

Food aid has been an important and controversial dimension of foreign assistance since the mid-1950s. Its importance relative to other kinds of aid has fallen over time, but it is still a significant component of U.S. foreign assistance. The United States has been the largest source of food aid since the enactment of the Agricultural Trade Development and Assistance Act of 1954, commonly referred to as Public Law (P.L.) 480. Food aid once represented about one-half of U.S. grain exports, but in recent years it has declined to a small fraction of those exports.

The role and effects of food aid have been controversial because of its many purposes. While food aid fulfills a humanitarian and development mission, it also provides a means for donor countries to dispose of surplus commodities and to develop new markets. As with any foreign aid, food aid serves the foreign policy objectives of donors. While this multiplicity of objectives has added instability over time to food aid allocations, it also has strengthened the political support for maintaining food-aid programs within the donor countries.

Critics of food aid have argued, among other things, that unrestricted cash donations would be preferable to food. While it is clear that recipients would prefer cash, many donors treat food aid as an addition to, rather than a component of, their economic assistance. It is highly unlikely that donor budgets would be expanded by the value of food aid if the latter were eliminated.

History of Food Aid

The history of food aid to developing countries is marked by shifting emphases on its multiple objectives. During the period of 1959 to 1965, the United States and Canada were particularly concerned about disposal of farm surpluses, developing markets for farm products, and providing emergency food relief. Most of the aid provided during this period was in grain, but several other products were given, including tobacco. In 1961, an amendment was added to P.L. 480 to permit food to be used for economic development instead of being restricted to emergency relief. Improved export markets, led by demand growth in developing countries, reinforced the objective that food aid helps develop markets.

The era from 1966 to 1972 was a period of heavy use of food aid for emergency relief, particularly in drought-stricken areas of South Asia. Self-help of recipients also was promoted during this period. The European Community and Canada increased their shipments of food aid for emergency relief in this period. The 1966 to 1972 period might be called the idealistic era of food aid.

Food aid helped alleviate hunger in Ethiopia during the 1980s.

Unfortunately, any idealism with respect to food aid programs was pretty much destroyed by the cutbacks in food aid that followed food price increases in 1972 to 1975. The United States had depleted its grain surplus by exporting commercially to the Soviet Union and other countries. From 1972 to 1973, U.S. commercial grain exports doubled and the volume of food aid fell in 1974 to its lowest level since the enactment of P.L. 480. Furthermore, during this period half of all U.S. food aid went to South Vietnam and Cambodia as a result of U.S. involvement in those countries.

In 1975, the U.S. Congress instituted more humanitarian and development criteria for receiving food aid by passing the International Development and Food Assistance Act (see Box 19-3). This legislation called for increased food aid to the poorest countries. The remainder of the 1970s also saw increasing food aid quantities from EC countries. However, the use of food aid for political purposes also increased after 1975. For example, U.S. food aid to Bangladesh declined from 1.15 million tons in 1975 to 0.34 million tons in 1985, while food aid to Egypt increased from 0.58 million tons to 2.00 million. This increase to Egypt was directly linked to the Camp David Peace Agreement signed with Israel in 1979. Food aid quantities increased in the mid-1980s in response to severe drought problems in Ethiopia, the Sudan, and other Sub-Saharan African countries. In the 1960s, most food aid went to Asia and Latin America. By the mid-1980s Sub-Saharan Africa was absorbing as much food aid as the much more populous Asia.

BOX 19-3.
THE UNITED STATES P.L. 480 FOOD AID PROGRAM

Since 1954, most U.S. food aid activities have been coordinated under P.L. 480. Numerous amendments and extension have been added to the original act, but currently the major provisions fall under the three following titles:

Title I — Was formerly the most important component of P.L. 480, but by the early 2000s it had shrunk to about $100 million per year compared to more than $50 billion in agricultural exports from the U.S. Recipient governments buy grain on credit with interest rates of 3 percent or less over 20 to 40 years, repayable in local currency. These governments can sell the grain internally and use the profits for development. The lower interest rates and long repayment period mean that almost 70 percent of the food aid loan is a grant.

Title II — involves gifts of food for emergency relief and for economic development; in 1991 it surpassed Title I as P.L. 480's largest component, now accounting for more than 85 percent of the program. The food is given to and distributed by private agencies such as CARE, who use the food for infant feeding programs and for mother and child health programs in addition to emergency distribution. In a recent year about 70 percent of CARE's budget was P.L. 480. Shipping and labor are paid for by the U.S. government. Food given under Title II also is used in food-for-work programs.

Title III — involved using food aid in government-to-government programs to support economic development, but has not received funding since 2001.

Other U.S. food aid programs exist, but food aid is now dwarfed by agricultural export credit programs which support commercial grain exports.

Types of Food Aid Programs Today

Emergency food aid grabs most of the headlines as it relieves crises associated with droughts in Ethiopia, the Sudan, and North Korea, and flooding in Bangladesh and other parts of Asia. Emergency food aid has also played a significant role in feeding refugees from Afghanistan, Iraq, and other countries in recent years. This short-term food aid is essential for reducing acute hunger problems. The possibilities of using food aid to foster long-term development, however, are more closely linked to program or project food aid.

Program food aid is, in many respects, similar to more general financial assistance, as it provides currency to buy imports, in this case food that can be sold or otherwise distributed in the domestic market.

This aid fosters the development of marketing linkages with the donors, it helps the recipients save foreign exchange, and the funds generated by the sales can be used for development. Some donors participate in determining how the funds generated by commodity sales are used. Donors may insist that funds be used for investments in the agricultural sector or to support specific policy changes affecting agriculture. Some of the recent food aid shipments to Sub-Saharan African countries were intended to soften the adjustments to structural changes in their economies.

Project food aid is aimed at meeting specific development objectives. Projects tend to be multiyear, to be targeted at nutritionally vulnerable individuals or groups, and may involve food in exchange for work on the project. Donor and recipient countries agree on who will be targeted by the project, the amount of food each individual receives, the delivery system for the food, and the design, implementation, and monitoring of the project activities.[21] Most of the projects involve the rural sector and can vary in size from a few hundred thousand dollars to $100 million or more. Food aid projects often involve forestry development, soil conservation and watershed management, resettlement projects, training, development of irrigation works, and construction and maintenance of rural roads.

Effects of Food Aid

The positive and negative effects of food aid on recipient countries have been studied and debated for many years. On the positive side, food provides real resources that can be used to expand investment and employment. Food aid can have a disproportionate but positive effect on disadvantaged groups, notably by supporting specific nutrition or food-for-work projects or by providing food to the poor for free or at subsidized prices. Food can be used to help recipient governments support storage and stabilization schemes to provide a small buffer against poor production years.

Food aid also can have adverse effects on the recipients. These potential adverse effects of food aid can occur in a number of ways: (1) disincentive effects on local agricultural production through reduced prices because of greater supply, (2) dependency effects because the government can substitute food aid for agricultural development programs, and (3) the uncertainty of food aid quantities from year to year.

[21] See Robert Chase, "Commodity Aid for Agricultural Development," in *Trade, Aid, and Policy Reform*, ed. Colleen Roberts (Washington, D.C.: World Bank, 1988), pp. 199–204.

The disincentive issue has been examined empirically in several studies.[22] In theory, additional supplies could depress food prices and discourage production. Some empirical studies have found this to be the case, but other studies have found the opposite. The disincentive effect is minimized if food aid is given or sold to those who otherwise could not afford the food. Transferring food is like transferring income. The quantity of the aid compared to the country's overall food production is important. For example, it appears that there has been a disincentive effect in Egypt due to the large quantities of aid shipped, but it is extremely difficult to sort out the impact of food aid from the many policy-induced distortions. Even when food aid reduces prices, it is likely to have a beneficial effect on the poor, who generally purchase more food grains than they sell.[23]

The idea that food aid creates dependency has not been examined as frequently. Food aid is no different from other aid in that, by providing resources, it may lead to less effort to raise revenues domestically or to promote agricultural development. Conditions are usually placed by donors on program aid that minimize this possibility. A second part of the dependency argument is that, over the long run, food aid leads to more food imports and changes in preferences away from domestically produced foods. Some evidence shows that this preference effect may be occurring, although it is difficult to separate changes induced by food aid from those that occur because of income growth and other trade.

Food aid can be used in a positive way by recipients to further both agricultural and overall economic development. Emergency food aid will always be variable and it can play a major life-saving role during short-term emergencies. It appears that the potential positive development role of food aid has not been fully exploited, although some efforts are under way to improve its development contribution.

Most donor countries find public opinion is generally supportive of food aid, especially when it is used in visible programs to prevent starvation. The future, however, for food aid is uncertain due to budget tightening in donor countries, reduced price supports for agriculture as a part of opening of global markets, and questions about its effectiveness as a development tool. Stronger multi-year commitments

[22] See S. T. Maxwell and H. W. Singer, "Food Aid to Developing Countries: A Survey," *World Development*, vol. 7 (1979), pp. 223–47, for a summary of results of 21 studies.

[23] See James Levinsohn and Margaret MacMillian, "Does Food Aid Harm the Poor? Household Evidence from Ethiopia," National Bureau of Economic Research, Inc, NBER Working Papers: 11048 (2005).

Food aid is used in Kenya to help pay labor for road construction.

are certainly needed if food aid is to be more effective in promoting development.

SUMMARY

Foreign development assistance in support of agriculture in developing countries has been substantial, taken many forms, and generated considerable debate. The rationale for foreign aid rests on various political and economic interests as well as humanitarian grounds, so aid does not always go to where need is greatest. Aid may be channeled through government agencies, NGOs, or private contractors, and comes mainly from donor-country governments but also from charitable donations and philanthropies. Some aid is a simple grant, but much of it comes as loans at below-market interest rates. Foreign aid to agriculture includes aid for agricultural research and extension, irrigation projects, rural roads, agricultural policy assistance, and many other items.

The United States is the largest donor country, but the share of total ODA coming from the United States has declined over time. The United States has been particularly active in giving food aid, which provides emergency relief in times of severe shortage, and supports specific development projects and programs. Food aid also provides a means for donor countries to dispose of surpluses, develop new markets, and pursue foreign policy objectives.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Bilateral aid
Concessional interest rates
Economic self-interest
Food aid
Foreign development assistance
International Bank for Reconstruction and Development
International Development Association
International Finance Corporation
Multilateral aid
Nongovernmental organization
Official development assistance
Point Four Program
Public Law 480
U.S. Agency for International Development
The World Bank

Looking Ahead

This chapter concludes the section of the book concerned with macroeconomic and international issues affecting development. The book concludes in the next chapter with a discussion of how the various components required for agricultural development can be combined in an overall strategy. An assessment of future development prospects is provided, and suggestions are made for how you as individuals can contribute to solving the world food-poverty-population problem.

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1 What is the rationale for foreign development assistance?
2 What are the major types of foreign development assistance?
3 What are some of the major effects of foreign development assistance on recipients and donors?
4 Distinguish between bilateral and multilateral aid.
5 Give several examples of foreign aid to agriculture.
6 How do NGOs differ from official sources of foreign development assistance?
7 What are the three major arms of the World Bank and how do they differ?
8 Which country is currently the largest bilateral donor of foreign aid?
9 Why might foreign development assistance help U.S. farmers?
10 What are the objectives of food aid?
11 What is the case for and against food aid?
12 How have food aid programs changed over time?
13 What is the difference between program and project food aid?
14 How do the three Titles of P.L. 480 differ?

RECOMMENDED READINGS

Collier, Paul, *The Bottom Billion* (New York: Oxford University Press, 2008).

Easterly, William, *The Elusive Quest for Growth* (Cambridge: MIT Press, 2002).

Lancaster, Carol, *Foreign Aid: Diplomacy, Development, Domestic Politics* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2007).

Riddell, Roger, *Does Foreign Aid Really Work?* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2007).

Sachs, Jeffrey, *The End of Poverty* (New York: Penguin, 2005), especially chapter 13.

CHAPTER 20

Lessons and Perspectives

> "Progress in reducing hunger has been uneven across regions and countries…reducing hunger and malnutrition will require strengthening governance of the food and agriculture system at the global, country, and local levels…scaling up public investment for agricultural and rural growth, taking targeted steps to improve nutrition and health, and creating an effective global system for preventing and mitigating disasters…We must push ourselves even further to develop and implement solutions and policies to achieve food and nutrition security for the poorest of the poor and those most afflicted by hunger."
>
> — Joachim von Braun[1]

THIS CHAPTER

1. Summarizes how the various components required for agricultural development can be combined to increase agricultural productivity and stimulate economic growth and development
2. Discusses how principles discussed in this book can be used to assess future prospects for agricultural development in developing countries
3. Suggests ways that individuals can contribute to reducing the food-poverty-population problem

AN INTEGRATED APPROACH to AGRICULTURAL DEVELOPMENT

It is easy to be pessimistic about prospects for solving poverty and hunger problems in developing countries. Many countries in Sub-Saharan Africa have stagnated for decades, and disease problems such as HIV/AIDS have made a bad situation there worse. Latin American countries

[1] Joachim von Braun, Director General, International Food Policy Research Institute, from remarks prepared for the CGIAR Annual General Meeting, Marrakech, Morocco, December 6, 2005.

have suffered periodic setbacks on the path to development, and have only improved gradually over time. Several Asian countries have grown rapidly over the past 30 years, but population growth remains rapid in many already densely-populated Asian countries, while water becomes scarcer. Concerns for the global environment have focused attention on the growing problem of resource degradation, especially of soils, in all developing regions. Recent increases in energy prices have placed cost stress on agricultural producers, while commodity price volatility has made planning more difficult and harmed many consumers in developing countries.

Governments have been seeking policy solutions to these and other problems. Over the past several years, numerous policy prescriptions have been suggested, yet none has been universally successful. Import substitution policies, domestic and trade policy liberalization, land reform, foreign aid, education, privatization, investment in large-scale industries, integrated rural development projects, farming-systems research, and many other solutions have been offered. Some of these suggestions have contributed to the development process; others have not. Blame for slow progress often is laid at the doorstep of the developed countries, sometimes with justification.

While economic development has been painfully slow and uneven (witness the rise in 2008–09), there is certainly room for guarded optimism. Globally, the percentage of people living in poverty fell in most years from the 1960s until 2009, as did the absolute number of malnourished people despite the growth in population. While poverty and malnutrition rose in 2008–09 due to a sharp increase in food prices and a global recession, they may again fall as food prices stabilize and economic growth resumes.

Several lessons have been learned about what it takes to stimulate agricultural and overall economic development. One of these lessons is that there are no panaceas. Development requires a mix of technical and institutional changes that work best in combination. The exact mix varies between countries, and policies appropriate for one environment may not necessarily be so for another. A second lesson is that development takes time and many of the investments necessary for long-run sustainable development have impacts long after they have been implemented. This time lag requires patience and political stability. A third lesson is that developing countries are primarily responsible for their own development, but interdependence in trade and capital flows means that developed-country policies can assist or retard that development. A few years ago, the United Nations and its member states set a series of millennium development goals for 2015 that would significantly

reduce poverty, hunger, and disease while promoting education, gender equality, and environmental sustainability.[2] Some progress has been made toward achieving those goals, although their total attainment seems unlikely.

In *Economics of Agricultural Development,* you have examined the dimensions of world food-income-population problems (see top of Figure 20-1). You have considered the interconnections among these problems and their linkages to health, nutrition, literacy, and the environment. There is enough total food in the world at the moment, but hunger is caused by food price volatility and by distributional problems that are, in many cases, related to poverty. There are short-term food crises and long-term or chronic malnutrition. You have considered economic development theories, the role of agriculture in those theories, and the nature of existing agricultural systems. You have learned that developing-country farmers tend to be relatively efficient at what they do, but have low productivity because of their limited access to resources, their existing technological and institutional environments, and the pervasive risks they face. Having learned something about the dimensions of the problem, the role of agriculture in economic development theories, and the nature of agriculture in developing countries, you then examined several components of the development process. Let's review below the interrelationships among those components, and assess where the need is greatest for additional insights with respect to the development process.

Technical and Institutional Change in Agriculture

In the 1950s, many development experts felt that the keys to agricultural development were capital investment and the transfer of technologies from more-developed countries. By the 1960s and 1970s, it was clear that technology transfers and capital investment had a role to play, but that many other factors were equally or more important. Differences in resource bases across countries meant that indigenous research and extension were vitally important. Education was required if countries were to produce, adapt, transfer, and receive new technologies. By the 1990s, countries that were successful in agricultural development had put in place a research- and technology-transfer system that included: (1) indigenous agricultural research stations and educational

[2] See Jeffrey Sachs, *Investing in Development: A Practical Plan to Achieve the Millennium Development Goals, the Millennium Project* (London: Earthscan publishing, 2005).

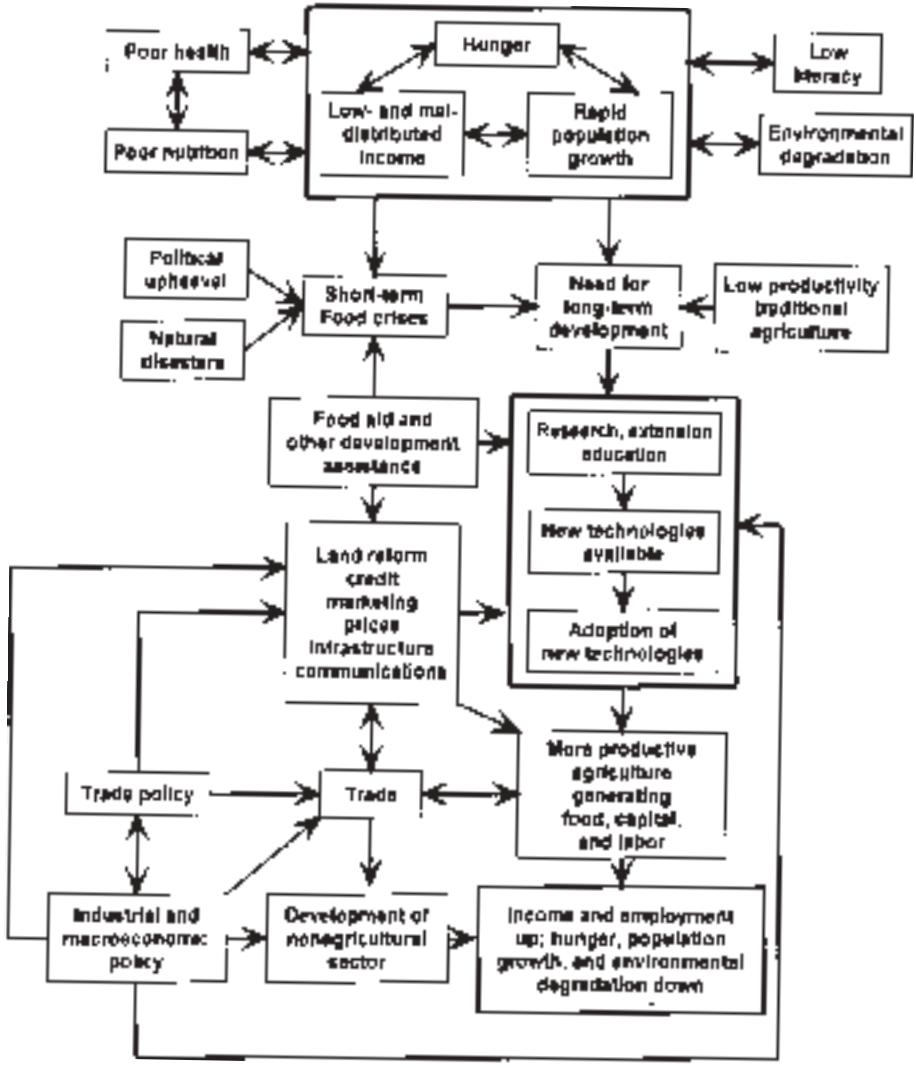


Figure 20-1. The hunger problem and the solution process.

institutions, (2) a mechanism for linking those stations to on-farm research and testing, and (3) ties between the national research system and the international agricultural research and training network.

As important as indigenous capacity for agricultural research and extension is, the last several years have also demonstrated the need for a whole series of policy or institutional reforms related to the agricultural sector. These reforms have been proven important not only

because of their influence on production incentives and the distribution of economic gains, but also because of their influence on the types of technologies produced and adopted. Land reform, improved credit policies, marketing system development, nondiscriminatory pricing policies, rules on intellectual property protection, efficient means of managing risks, and incentive systems to reduce environmental externalities are examples of the institutional changes that may be required.

New technologies are not gifts of nature, and institutional changes do not magically appear. New technologies require research investments, and the levels and types of technologies produced and subsequently adopted are influenced by changes in relative prices of inputs and outputs. Institutional changes also are induced by changes in relative prices and by technical change.

The logic of the induced technical and institutional change theories and their apparent empirical verification in several countries, particularly in East Asia, give cause for optimism. However, the failure of many countries to follow a path of sustained development has forced economists to broaden the induced innovation theory. This broadening has come by incorporating transactions costs and collective action into the theory.

Transactions costs refer to the costs of information, of adjusting a fixed-asset base, and of negotiating, monitoring, and enforcing contracts. The fact that information is not perfect and is costly to acquire, and that people are willing to exploit their situation at the expense of others, has received particular attention. If one group has greater access to information than another, that group can act collectively to press for policies or new technologies that benefit it at the expense of others.

If a small but wealthy elite with large landholdings finds it cheaper to acquire information and act collectively, it may press for technical and institutional changes for personal benefit at the expense of the masses. The elite may press for changes that not only distribute income in its favor, but reduce the agricultural growth rate because the resulting technologies and policies may not be appropriate for the resource base in the country.

Factors that can help reduce transactions costs are those factors that reduce information costs. Improved roads and communications infrastructure are examples; new communications technologies are having dramatic impacts even in remote areas. More widespread access to market information is allowing producers to make decisions that increase economic efficiency. Widespread access to education is also critical, as education allows people to better use information. Land reform can help in many countries, as can institutional change to enhance

Young boys in Guatemala.

contracting, to improve the legal infrastructure, and to provide certain types of regulations.[3] Freer markets to provide efficient price signals to individual farmers also should help.

Markets are generally held to be the best means of transmitting signals to actors. In developing countries, however, market imperfections due to transactions costs, unequal asset distributions, and other factors are the norm. These factors also increase variability in prices and exacerbate risks for producers and consumers. Some government involvement is legitimate and necessary to reduce these imperfections and allow markets to work. Government involvement can be justified to provide "public goods," to create equal access to opportunities, and to achieve equity outcomes consistent with society's wishes.

Macroeconomic and International Institutional Changes

In the 1950s and 1960s (and to some extent before and after) several economists in developing countries recommended policies that discouraged agricultural exports and encouraged production of goods that would substitute for imports. The argument for these policies was based on potential or perceived exploitation of developing countries by more-developed countries. However, countries that integrated more closely into international markets tended to develop

[3] For example, regulations may be needed to reduce environmental externalities, to provide food safety standards, and for other purposes.

more rapidly than those that closed or isolated their economies. The more rapid development was due in part to the lower level of rent-seeking behavior and corruption as well as the increased efficiency gains from trade and specialization.

Some of the countries that discriminated against agricultural trade encouraged capital-intensive imports, causing capital-intensive industries to develop in labor-abundant countries. These industries placed a drag on economic development because human resources, freed up by increases in agricultural productivity, were under-employed. This tendency to develop capital-intensive industries may have been induced in part by transactions costs and collective action, but also by a perceived need to imitate more-developed countries.

For the past 30 years, several developing countries have suffered from heavy external indebtedness. This problem has forced some countries to reform their policies in ways that are intended to spur longer-run economic growth. The debt overhang is so large for some Latin American and African countries, however, that without debt reduction on the part of those holding the loans, development will remain impeded. Official debt can be rescheduled through the Paris Club and by multilateral organizations. Some debt reduction for the lowest-income heavily-indebted countries has occurred and more has been promised. However, commercial debt reduction will only be achieved slowly without improved international over-sight to reduce the free rider problem that currently exists.

Continued efforts by developing countries to reduce overvalued exchange rates and to phase out policies such as export taxes will be required to stimulate agricultural growth. Phasing out export taxes, however, will necessitate new mechanisms for generating government revenues, such as land or income taxes. Such taxes become somewhat more feasible as information flows improve in a country. New institutions will be needed along with increased government responsibilities. Reduced trade restrictions by developed countries as a result of negotiations under the auspices of the WTO would also help developing countries. Increased regional economic integration among developing countries may also play a positive role in some cases.

Capital Flows and Foreign Assistance

Capital flows have provided a two-edged sword for many countries, particularly in Asia and Latin America. Capital inflows have helped stimulate investments and growth, particularly in East Asia, but have led to financial crises when outflows occur rapidly over a short period of time. The crisis that spread through East Asia beginning in 1997 had

devastating impacts on human welfare and set back progress toward development in affected countries. The world-wide economic crisis that began with the freezing of lending by U.S. and European banks in fall 2008 contributed to a deep global recession whose impacts are still being felt. Developing countries each must decide upon the appropriate mix of regulations for capital flows, fixity of exchange rates, and freedom to adjust macro-economic policies. Flawed decisions can lead to economic instability and stagnation.

Economic development assistance can help relieve short-term food crises and can contribute to longer-term development. Emergency food aid is essential for averting famine following natural disasters and major political upheavals. Longer-term financial aid could help to reduce the debt problem in several countries and provide real resources for development.

Aid effectiveness could be improved by longer-term commitments and increased donor coordination. Less tying of aid to factors such as procurement from donor sources but increased tying of aid to institutional changes that eliminate distortions or reduce transactions costs would help.

Coordinated international action has been successful in dealing with specific development problems. International support for agricultural research led to productivity increases that enhanced food security, reduced famines in highly populated areas, and helped alleviate rural poverty. Worldwide immunization efforts, coordinated by the World Health Organization, have significantly reduced deaths due to common childhood diseases. Concerted efforts to provide food to famine victims have reduced famine mortalities. Similar international coordination could be effective in reducing debts, providing assistance for policy reforms, and for other specific actions. Because development needs and the impacts of different interventions vary from country to country, international actions to promote growth have tended to be less successful than those used to address specific short-run problems.

In summary, it is clear that many pieces are needed for a country to solve its development puzzle. Enhanced information flows are vitally important for agricultural development. More labor-intensive industrial growth is needed in several countries if the employment problem is to be solved.

ASSESSING FUTURE PROSPECTS

Several countries in Asia have grown at relatively rapid rates for almost three decades (with some short-term financial instability), but masses of impoverished people still live in Asia. Latin American

countries that grew in the 1960s and 1970s stagnated in the 1980s and most of the '90s. Most Sub-Saharan African countries have grown very slowly, stagnated, or declined for the past 40 years. Hunger problems persist despite increased food production, per capita, in the world over the past 50 years. Poverty rates have, however, generally fallen except during 2008–09. Environmental problems have grown worse in several countries as well. What does the future hold for reducing hunger, poverty, population growth, and environmental problems? Let's consider some of the underlying forces at work.

Supply and Demand for Food

The real price of food in the world trended slightly downward for several years as supply growth outstripped demand growth. Recently, real energy prices have increased, raising production costs, and incomes have grown and shifted demands outward in populous countries such as China and India; real world food prices have increased. Most experts think that food prices will remain high and volatile through 2010–20, although they may not hit the peaks of mid-2008. The major long-run food supply shifters are new technologies and the competition with energy for use of agricultural resources. The major demand shifters are population and income growth. As we look to the future, population will continue to grow, but the *rate* of population growth will fall. Incomes have increased rapidly in several Asian countries, including China with its massive population base. Continued income growth is likely. Asia has two-thirds of the world's population and, as a region, the best chance of continued supply increases due to research-induced technical change. Food production per capita will likely continue to increase in Asia, but income-based growth in demand is likely to keep food prices high (Box 20-1). There will be increased diversification away from rice, however, as diets change with higher incomes. In particular, demands for animal proteins are likely to increase, with important implications for livestock production and marketing systems.

In Latin America, increased food production per capita is likely, but not at a rapid rate, as debt problems continue, limiting public investments in agriculture. Population growth rates have already declined from their peaks of earlier decades, facilitating this per-capita increase. More urbanization and income growth will have implications for food demands and a changing face of marketing and trade in food. Overall, demand growth is likely to outstrip supply growth for this region.

Unfortunately, many Sub-Saharan African countries will continue to experience disease and stagnant per-capita growth in food production. Some increased investments in education and in agricultural

BOX 20-1.
THE PROSPECTS for CEREAL TECHNOLOGIES

The spectacular burst in yield potential from new varieties of rice and wheat that began the Green Revolution has not been repeated. Rice yields on experimental farms have not grown dramatically since the introduction of IR-8 in 1966. However, the difference between yields on the best farms and the yields on experiment stations has shrunk dramatically since 1970, particularly in Asia. This reduced difference is due to widespread irrigation, high application of fertilizer, and good management. Future gains in rice production must come increasingly from rain-fed upland and deep-water areas, unless new biotechnologies provide yield breakthroughs.

The prospects for wheat and maize are more optimistic, even in the shorter run. The Centro de Mejoramiento de Maiz y Trigo (CIMMYT) reports a continuing increase in the yield potential of wheat of about one percent annually. Substantial progress has been made toward breeding in disease resistance, especially against wheat leaf-rust. Yield growth for wheat in less favorable conditions has been less spectacular. High-yielding varieties for low-rainfall marginal areas are limited, and there are virtually no new varieties for the lowland humid tropics. Major break-throughs in these areas may pave the way for a technology-driven boom in wheat yields. Maize shows the most promise. There is a large gap between experiment station and farmer's yields, and weed control seems to be the critical problem. Human-based solutions to weed problems provide opportunities for increased employment while increasing maize yields.

In terms of genetic engineering and other biotechnologies in general, the outlook is promising but uncertain. Many improvements, such as increased insect/disease and drought resistance, are on the horizon, but public fears about biotechnologies in developed countries have slowed the development and spread of these technologies in developing countries as well.

research systems have been realized, but population growth rates are still high. If small income increases can be realized, population growth may decelerate, but environmental problems appear to have already degraded the resource base in parts of the Sahel to the point of reducing productivity. AIDS and malaria remain serious health problems. Recently the Gates Foundation has joined other public and private organizations in a concerted attempt to solve these serious health problems, but solutions will be difficult and will take time.

Institutional Changes

Improved information technologies and infrastructure development have improved information flows in some developing countries. These

improvements may create pressures for political and institutional changes, changes that offer favorable opportunities for development. Reduced transactions costs that result would induce the development of technologies that are better suited to the relative resource scarcities of the countries. More market-oriented policies may continue to create efficiency gains, as they have in Asia. There is evidence that some governments in Latin America and Africa have laid the groundwork for these types of gains as well. One factor that has led to food price volatility in recent years has been the small size of food stocks held globally and in individual countries. While it can be inefficient for countries in Africa to hold large stocks due to storage losses, among other factors, evidence seems to indicate that increased holding modest levels of stocks to buffer prices swings may make sense.

The willingness of more-developed countries to provide foreign assistance and international institutional changes to help poor countries is constantly in flux. Indifference was growing during the 1990s among policy makers in the United States and many other developed countries. The fall of communism in Eastern Europe and the breakup of the Soviet Union a few years ago reduced political pressures on Western governments to help developing countries for the purpose of keeping those countries out of Soviet influence. The heightened focus on the terrorism threat since September 11, 2001, has caused many nations to focus their resources more on countries posing security threats than on attacking more broadly the root causes of poverty and hunger.

The relatively wealthy countries of the world must resist isolationist temptations. Terrorist attacks and threats may help stimulate countries eventually to seek longer term solutions to problems abroad. A long-term goal of promoting democracy and freedom can only be attained through steps to reduce poverty and build economic opportunity. Many security, income, hunger, and environmental problems require a supra-national decision-making process. In order to strengthen the United Nations agencies that could make these decisions, developed countries will need to increase their contributions to official development assistance.

HOW YOU CAN HELP

You as individuals can do a great deal to help solve hunger, poverty, ill health, environmental degradation, and other development problems. Some of you can get involved directly through working for grass-roots organizations in developing countries. The Peace Corps is an example in the United States, but there are many others. For those from developed countries, spending time living and working in a

People in developing countries can benefit from grass-roots help.

developing country can greatly improve your understanding of development problems. We are each captive of the pictures in our mind, and living in a developing country provides a more accurate picture of the world.

Getting directly involved in influencing the fortunes of others can bring you a feeling of significance or satisfaction. The frustrations of working with desperately poor people are many. If you are not an optimist, you may not want to try. However, if you are adventurous, flexible, and somewhat persistent, you may want to consider working at a grass-roots level in a developing country.

Some of you can obtain a graduate education to become animal scientists, plant breeders, plant pathologists, entomologists, agricultural economists, soil scientists, microbiologists, or some other type of agricultural scientist needed to help solve world food, income, and environmental problems. Employment opportunities exist for rewarding careers at universities, in international agricultural research centers, national research centers, and private firms. Until the world's population stabilizes, the battle to keep world food production increasing at roughly 2 to 3 percent per year will continue.

Most of you will take very different career paths, but the opportunity always exists to contribute to solving poverty problems through financial contributions to private voluntary organizations. All of you can strive to keep informed about what is happening in the world

outside your state and country. You can try to keep politicians informed and let them know that you support foreign assistance contributions to countries where needs are greatest.

SUMMARY

In this chapter, but also in the whole book, we have stressed the interrelatedness of hunger, population, and poverty problems. There are no panaceas, but a set of interconnected pieces to a development puzzle. We have learned over the years what many of these pieces are. In this chapter we stressed particularly the importance of enhanced-information flows if broad-based development is to occur. Open economies, employment-based industrial policies, and development policies that do not discriminate against agriculture are essential. For developed countries, now is the time for renewed commitment to finding solutions to development problems.

IMPORTANT TERMS and CONCEPTS

Agricultural scientist
Enhanced information flows
Feeling of significance
Grassroots organization
Interdependence
No panacea
Supply and demand shifters
Supra-national decision-making process

QUESTIONS for DISCUSSION

1. Why might there be room for guarded optimism with respect to future agricultural and economic development?
2. Describe the interconnectedness among the pieces that can contribute to solving the development puzzle.
3. How has the theory of induced technical and institutional innovation been broadened and why?
4. What factors can help reduce transactions costs?
5. Why have relatively open economies grown more rapidly than relatively closed economics?
6. What factors will determine the long-run future price of food in the world?
7. Why do enhanced information flows offer favorable prospects for development?
8. What might you as an individual do to help solve hunger, poverty, and other development problems?

RECOMMENDED READING

Pinstrup-Andersen, Per and Rajul Pandya-Lorch, *The Unfinished Agenda: Perspectives on Overcoming Hunger, Poverty, and Environmental Degradation* (Washington, D.C.: International Food Policy Research Institute, 2001).

Runge, C. Ford, Benjamin Senauer, Philip G. Pardey, and Mark W. Rosegrant, *Ending Hunger in Our Lifetime: Food Security and Globalization* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 2003).

Hunger Task Force, *Ending Hunger: It Can Be Done*, the Millennium Project (London: Earthscan, 2005).

Glossary of Selected Terms

absolute advantage: When one country's cost of producing a good is lower than the cost in other countries.

agricultural extension: The process of transferring information about improved technologies, practices, or policies to producers, consumers, or policymakers.

agricultural productivity: Level of agricultural output per unit of input.

balance of payments: Difference between receipts from all other countries and payments to them, including all public and private transactions.

biased technical change: The process of adoption of new means of production that use one factor more intensively than other factors, holding all other things constant.

bilateral: Two-party or two-country, such as aid from one country to another.

biotechnology: A set of tools, including traditional breeding techniques, that alter living organisms, or parts of organisms, to make or modify products; improve plants or animals; or develop micro-organisms for specific uses. Modern biotechnology includes use of recombinant DNA, monoclonal antibodies, and novel bio-processing techniques, among others.

birth rates and death rates: The number of births or deaths per 1,000 population in a year.

buffer stocks: Supplies of a product that are stored and used to moderate price fluctuations. These stocks are sold during periods of rising prices, and purchased when prices fall.

capital accumulation: Investment.

common property: Property for which the rights of use are shared and ownership is not private but shared by all.

comparative advantage: Ability of a country to produce a good or service at a lower opportunity cost than another country can. The theory of comparative advantage implies that a country should devote its resources not to all lines of production, but to those it produces most efficiently.

concessional: Subsidized, usually used with respect of interest on loans.

consumer/producer surplus: Consumer surplus is the area below the ordinary demand curve and above the price paid; it is a measure of well-being. Producer surplus is the area above the supply curve and below the price paid; it is a measure of returns to fixed factors of production.

debt rescheduling: Extending the repayment period for loans, altering interest rates, forgiving part of the principal, or some combination of the three.

demographic transition: The historical shift of birth and death rates from high to low levels in a population. Death rates usually decline before birth rates, resulting in rapid population growth during the transition period.

discount rate: The value used to determine the present value of future cash flows arising from a project or an investment.

economic development: Improvement in the standard of living of an entire population. Development requires rising per capita incomes, eradication of absolute poverty, reduction in inequality over the long term, and increased opportunity of individual choice.

economic or structural transformation of an economy: The increase in the size of the nonagricultural sector relative to agriculture that occurs in all economies as economic growth occurs.

elasticity: A measure of the percentage response of one variable (for example, quantity demanded) to a 1 percent change in another variable (for example, price).

experiment station: A center or station at which scientists conduct research.

external debt: Debts owed by the government in one country to creditors in another country.

externality: An economic impact of an activity by an individual or business on other people for which no compensation is paid. Externalities may be positive or negative and are often unintentional.

foreign assistance or foreign aid: Includes financial, technical, food, and military assistance given by one or several countries to another country. This assistance may be given as a grant or subsidized loan.

foreign exchange rate: The number of units of one currency that it takes to buy a unit of another currency.

free rider: An individual or business that receives the benefits of the actions of another individual or business without having to pay for those benefits.

free trade area: A block of countries that agree to lower or eliminate tariffs and other trade barriers among themselves, but each country

maintains its own independent trade policy toward nonmember nations.

fungibility of credit: The degree to which money loaned for one purpose can be used for another.

General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade (GATT): Multilateral agreement, originally negotiated in 1947, for the reduction of tariffs and other trade barriers. The agreement provides a forum for intergovernmental tariff negotiations.

globalization: The increasing integration of economies around the world, particularly through trade and financial flows. Also refers to the movement of people and knowledge across international borders.

Green Revolution: The dramatic increases in wheat and rice harvests that were achieved in the late 1960s, primarily in Asia and Latin America, following the release of fertilizer- and water-responsive, high-yielding, semi-dwarf varieties of those crops.

high-yielding variety: Varieties of plants that have been improved through agricultural research so that they yield more per amount of input than the traditional varieties.

human capital: The level of education, skills, knowledge, health, and nutrition of an individual or a population.

import substitution: Actions by a government to restrict imports of a commodity to protect (from international competition) and encourage domestic production of the good.

induced innovation theory: A theory that hypothesizes that technical change is induced by changes in relative resource endowments and by growth in product demand; institutional change is induced by changes in relative resource endowments and by technical change.

institutions: Organizations or rules of society. Government policies, regulations, and legal systems are examples.

integrated pest management: The coordinated use of biological, cultural, and chemical pest control practices to reduce insects, diseases, and weeds. The purpose is to control pests in both an economically and an ecologically sound manner.

intellectual property rights: Laws regulating the copying of inventions, identifying symbols, and creative expressions. These laws encompass four separate and distinct types of intangible property — patents, trademarks, copyrights, and trade secrets.

international agricultural research centers (IARCs): The set of agricultural research centers supported by a group of public and private funding sources. These centers provide improved technologies and institutional arrangements to help developing countries increase their

food production. Funding is coordinated by the Consultative Group on International Agricultural Research (CGIAR).

international capital market: The transfers of capital (money) among countries in response to short- and long-term investment opportunities.

international commodity agreement: A formal agreement among the major producing and consuming countries of a commodity that specifies a mechanism for stabilizing price. An agreement may specify import and export quotas for each country.

International Monetary Fund (IMF): An international financial institution designed to: (1) promote international monetary coordination; (2) foster international trade; (3) facilitate stabilization of exchange rates; (4) develop mechanisms for multilateral transactions between members; and (5) provide resources for enhanced international financial stability.

land reform: An attempt to change the land tenure system through public policies.

land tenure: The rights and patterns of control over land.

less developed country (developing country) (LDC): Generally refers to countries in which per capita incomes are below $6,000, although a few countries with higher incomes consider themselves to be less developed or developing.

market failure: When markets fail to efficiently organize production or allocate goods in a way that maximizes social welfare.

micro-finance: Small-scale provision of credit, savings, and insurance services, usually to the very poor.

moneylender: An informal lender whose business it is to lend money to borrowers, usually at high interest, with little or no collateral or paperwork.

money supply: Currency plus money that can be easily withdrawn from checking or savings accounts.

monopoly power: When a single seller or united group of sellers has the power to alter the market price as opposed to having to just accept the market price.

monopsony: A market with a single buyer.

multilateral: Refers to many countries as opposed to two countries (bilateral). Examples are multilateral aid, multilateral trade, and multilateral agreements.

multiple exchange rates: When a country sets different rates between its currency and foreign currencies depending on the class of imports. May be used to control foreign exchange by limiting certain types of imports.

Official Development Assistance (ODA): Foreign assistance that excludes military related assistance, export credits, and private fund transfers while having at least a 25 percent grant element. The grant element is defined as the excess of the loan or grant's value over the (present) value of repayments calculated with a 10 percent interest rate.

opportunity cost of capital: The rate of return on the best alternative use for the funds. It is the cost of alternative investments forgone when a particular investment is made.

overvalued exchange rate: When the official value of a currency is too high given the exchange rate that would otherwise prevail in international money-markets given the supply and demand for the country's currency.

parastatal: An institution, such as a marketing board, that is used by a government to control the production, distribution, international trade, and domestic price of a product. This product might be an agricultural good or an input such as fertilizer.

production function: Describes, for a given technology, the different output levels that can be obtained from various combinations of inputs or factors of production.

production possibilities frontier: The trade-off between the maximum amount of two goods that can be produced in a country given existing production technologies and the available productive resources.

protectionism: A reaction by an industry or a country to foreign competition. That reaction is usually manifest through tariffs, quotas, or other means of reducing imports to shield domestic producers.

public goods: Goods or services that are non-rival (consumption or use by one person does not preclude consumption by another) and non-exclusive (a person cannot be excluded from consumption or use, except at prohibitively high costs).

scale-neutral technology: A technology that can be employed equally well by any size firm.

social cost: The total value of resources used in production of a good, including the value of externalities, which are not borne by the producer of the good or reflected in the market price.

structural adjustment program: Government program aimed at adjusting the economy to reduce imbalances between aggregate supply and demand. Structural adjustment programs typically involve: devaluation of the foreign exchange rate to increase exports and reduce imports, reduced government spending, and removal of many government policies that distort prices, including barriers to trade.

subsidized (concessional) credit: Loans made with interest rates below the rates prevailing in the market.

sustainable development: Development that meets the needs of the present without compromising the ability of future generations to meet their own needs.

tariff: A tax or duty placed on goods imported into a country.

technology: The method for producing something. New technologies are often embedded in inputs, for example, seeds or machines. Hence higher-yielding seeds or more efficient machines are often referred to as improved technologies. Technological progress occurs when more output is obtained from the same quantity of inputs. Technology transfer occurs when methods (perhaps embedded in materials) from one location are applied in a second location.

terms of trade: The relationship between the prices of two goods that are exchanged; for example, the price of an export good relative to the price of an import good. When the price of an export good increases relative to the price of an import good, the terms of trade have increased for the export and are said to be favorable.

trade preferences: Refers to favorable tariff treatment accorded by one country or group of countries to exports of certain other countries.

transactions costs: The costs of adjustment, of information, and of negotiating, monitoring, and enforcing contracts.

World Bank: The major multilateral-funded organization that makes loans to developing countries. It contains the International Finance Corporation, the International Bank for Reconstruction and Development, and the International Development Association.

World Trade Organization (WTO): The international institution created in 1994 to replace the GATT, and strengthen enforcement of international trade rules and the settling of trade disputes.

Authors Cited

Page numbers followed by
b — indicate material in boxes
f — indicate material in figures
n — indicate material in footnotes
t — indicate material in tables

Achard, Frédéric, 167
Acharya, Meena, 192
Adams, Dale W., 294, 297, 299, 300
Ahmed, Raisuddin, 314t, 317
Alston, Julian M., 230, 232t, 234, 259
Alwang, Jeffrey, 46, 137, 145, 285b
Anderson, Kym, 111, 323, 332, 339, 342, 343, 348, 356, 364
Anderson, S., 138
Angelsen, Arild, 174
Asturias de Barros, Linda, 192, 194b
Baker, Doyle C., 193b, 203
Bardham, P., 291
Barro, Robert J., 401
Baumol, William J., 218
Baxter, Michael, 255, 259
Beitema, Nienke, 254, 259
Bell, Clive, 270, 280
Bellu, Lorenzo Giovanni, 184
Benjamin, Dwayne, 269
Bennett, Lynn, 192
Bennett, M. K., 15, 50
Benor, Daniel, 255, 259
Berry, Albert, 280
Bezuneh, Mesfin, 35f, 152f
Bigot, Yves, 299
Binswanger, Hans P., 217b, 250, 280, 286, 299
Boserup, Ester, 154b, 203
Bouman, F. J. A., 299
Braverman, Avishay, 268b
Bromley, Daniel W., 174, 175
Brooks, Karen, 268b
Brown, Lynn R., 185, 204
Burnside, Craig, 405
Byerlee, Derek, 323
Chan-Kang, Connie, 230, 232t, 317, 323
Chapagain, Devendra P., 175
Chase, Robert, 410
Chen, Shaohua, 29
Christensen, Cheryl, 51t
Cistulli, Vito, 184
Cline, William R., 280, 327, 356, 364
Cohen, Benjamin J., 392
Collier, Paul, 414
Colman, David, 111, 336b, 348
Conklin, Neilson, 93f
Courbois, C., 140
Csaki, Csaba , 268b
Cummings, Ralph W., Jr., 280, 281
Dalgaard, Carl-Johan, 405
Davie, Ted J., 168
de Janvry, Alain, 218, 265, 274, 280, 406
de Waal, A., 200
Deaton, Angus, 55, 57b
Deere, Carmen D., 203
Dehmer, Steven, 254, 259
Deininger, Klaus, 274, 280
del Ninno, Carlo, 40, 45
Delgado, C., 140
Dercon, Stephan, 193
Diaz-Bonilla, Eugenio, 349
Dimitri, Carolyn, 93f
Dixon, John, 145
Dollar, David, 405
Donald, Gordon, 300
Doss, Cheryl, 197
Duckham, Alec N., 149, 150, 160
Duncan, A. J., 138
Easterly, William, 414

Edirisinghe, Neville, 41
Effland, Anne, 93f
Ehui, S., 140
Eicher, Carl K., 24, 160
Ellis, F., 145
Erbaugh, Mark, 192, 194b
Eva, Hugh D., 167
Evenson, Robert E., 250, 319, 323–4
Fafchamps, Marcel, 218, 274
Falcon, Walter P., 3, 324, 365, 368f, 370
Fan, Shenggen, 317, 323
Feder, Gershon, 280
Feldstein, Hilary Simms, 185, 193b, 203, 204
Flores, Rafael, 45
Fogel, Robert, 107
Folbre, Nancy, 203
Folmer, H., 184
Foster, A., 277
Foster, Phillips, 45, 68
Gallego, Javier, 167
Gandhi, Vasant P., 235
Garcia, Andres F., 342
Gardner, Bruce L., 111, 187
Gavian, Sarah, 45
Gelbard, Arlene, 85
Gibbon, David, 145
Giovannucci, Daniele, 337
Gillespie, Stuart, 45
Gittinger, J. Price, 37, 203, 301, 312, 323, 378
Gladwin, Christine H., 203
Glewwe, Paul, 186, 204
Graham, Carol, 351
Graham, Douglas H., 299
Grosh, Margaret, 40, 45
Guasch, J. Luis, 268b
Gulliver, Aidan, 145
Haddad, Lawrence, 185, 193, 204
Hamilton, Sarah, 192, 194b
Hareau, Guy, 245
Harou, Patrice, 184
Harris, Colette, 192, 194b
Harrison, James A., 255, 259
Haub, Carl, 85
Hayami, Yujiro, 128, 145, 207–15, 217b, 225, 250, 252, 293, 299, 323
Heinrichs, E. A., 176, 192, 194, 285b
Hansen, Henrik, 405
Herrero, M., 138
Hertel, Thomas, 339
Hicks, John R., 212
Hoisington, Caroline, 37, 203, 301, 312, 323, 378
Hopper, W. David, 145
Hossain, Mahabub, 292, 299, 317
Houck, James P., 406
Houtman, R., 299
Irwin, Michael E., 176, 192, 194, 285b
James, Clive, 245
Jin, Songquing, 274, 280
Johnson, D. Gale, 348
Johnston, Bruce F., 47
Joyce, Joseph, 389, 392
Juggins, Janice, 192, 195
Junhua, Ehou, 156b
Kaimowitz, David, 174
Keeney, Roman, 339
Kent, Mary M., 85
Khandker, Shahidur, 292
Kikuchi, Masao, 217b
Koppel, Bruce M., 225
Krishnan, Pramila, 193
Krueger, Anne O., 323, 394, 397, 404
Krugman, P., 387b
Ku-Vera, J. C., 138
Lancaster, Carol, 414
Landsburg, Steven, 112, 113
Lapenu, Cecile, 295, 296
Leathers, Howard D., 45, 68
Leaver, J. D., 138
Leslie, Joanne, 37, 203, 302, 312, 323, 378
Levinsohn, James, 411
Lewin, Bryan, 337
Lin, Justin Y., 156b, 160
Lin, Lin, 405
Lipton, Michael, 38
Loomis, Robert S., 146
Luther, Gregory C., 176, 192, 194, 285b
MacMillian, Margaret, 411
Maddison, Angus, 89
Mahar, Dennis J., 179b
Maimbo, Samuel Munzele, 398b
Malingreau, Jean-Paul, 167
Markandaya, Anil, 184
Markandaya, Kamala, 25
Marra, Michele C., 230, 232t
Martin, Will, 339, 348, 356, 364
Martorell, Reynaldo, 193
Masefield, G. B., 149, 150, 160
Masters, William A., 259, 273b, 332, 342
Maxwell, S. T., 411

Mayaux, Philippe, 167
McCleary, Rachel, 401
McMillan, Della, 203
Mellor, John W., 45, 47, 58, 60t, 68, 131, 314t
Meyer, Richard L., 289, 300
Meyers, Norman, 163, 164
Michalopoulos, Constantine, 404
Mills, Bradford, 245
Moore, Keith, 192, 194b
Morrison, Elizabeth, 399

Ndiaye, Aida, 193
Norman, David W., 145
North, Douglas C., 128, 218, 223, 225
Norton, George W., 176, 192, 194, 234, 245, 259, 285b, 405
Obstfeld, M., 387b
Olson, Mancur, Jr., 128
Ortiz, Jaime, 405
Ouerghi, Azedine, 40, 45
Owen, E., 138
Palomino, Julio, 233b
Pandya-Lorch, Rajul, 45, 185, 428
Pardey, Philip G., 24, 68, 69, 230, 232t, 234, 254, 259, 405, 428
Pearce, David W., 184
Pearson, Scott R., 3, 324, 365, 368f
Peña, Christina, 185, 204
Peterson, Everett, 245
Piesse, Jenifer, 405
Pingali, Prabhu, 299, 319, 323–4
Pinstrup-Andersen, Per, 45, 185, 245, 259, 306t, 307, 323, 428
Pitt, Mark M., 292
Plucknett, Donald L., 236b
Poats, Susan V., 203
Posada, Rafael T., 235, 259
Puetz, Detlev, 55, 198
Purcell, Randall B., 399
Quisumbing, Agnes, 185, 204
Ramakrishnan, Usha, 193
Rangnekar, D., 138
Ratha, Dilip, 398b
Raup, Philip M., 260
Rausser, Gordon, 187
Ravallion, Martin, 28b, 29
Ray, Debraj, 280
Reardon, Thomas, 319, 320, 323
Repetto, Robert, 168
Reynolds, C. K., 138
Richards, I., 138
Richards, Timothy, 167
Riddell, Roger, 414
Roberts, Colleen, 410
Robinson, Marguerite S., 295, 299
Robinson, Sherman, 349
Rogoff, Kenneth, 392
Rosegrant, Mark W., 24, 68, 69, 140, 428
Rosenzweig, Mark R., 217b, 277
Rosero, José, 197
Rudra, A., 291
Runge, C. Ford, 24, 68, 69, 428
Ruthernberg, Hans, 160
Ruttan, Vernon W., 111, 128, 207–15, 225, 226, 250, 252, 259, 293, 299, 394, 404
Sachs, Carolyn, 192, 194b
Sachs, Jeffrey, 112, 113, 284, 300, 393, 405, 414, 417
Sadoulet, Elisabeth, 218, 274, 406
Sahn, David E., 135
Sain, Gustavo, 323
Sangraula, Prem, 29
Sarma, J. S., 51t, 235
Schady, Norbert, 197
Schiff, Maurice, 323
Schioler, Ebbie, 245, 259
Schramm, Gunter, 161, 164, 179b, 184
Schuh, G. Edward, 378
Schultz, T. Paul, 187, 319, 323–4
Schultz, Theodore W., 136, 145, 187, 211, 227
Scobie, Grant M., 235, 259
Sen, Amartya K., 31b, 45
Senauer, C. Benjamin, 24, 68, 69, 428
Sfeirounis, Alfredo, 163
Sharma, Shalendra, 405
Shirmer, Isabelle A., 168
Siegel, Paul B., 46, 137, 145, 337
Singer, H. W., 411
Skjonsberg, Else, 145
Smith, Lisa C., 193
Smith, T., 138
Spriggs, John, 317
Staatz, John M., 24, 160
Steele, M. A., 138
Steinfeld, H., 140
Stibig, Hans-Jürgen, 167
Stiglitz, Joseph, 405
Streeten, Paul, 324
Sukhatme, Vasant, 404

Tanzo, Irene, 192, 194b
Tarp, Finn, 405
Tesliuc, Emil, 40, 45
Thirlwall, A. P., 111
Thirtle, Colin, 405
Thomas, D., 138
Thorbecke, E., 28
Tietenberg, T. H., 184
Timmer, C. Peter, 3, 301, 304, 312, 319, 320, 323, 324, 365, 368f, 370
Todaro, Michael P., 24
Truman, Harry S., 399
Turner, R. Kerry, 184
Valdes, Alberto, 323
Varangis, Panos, 337
Vink, N., 111
von Braun, Joachim, 55, 68, 198, 335, 415
Von Pischke, J. D., 299, 300
Von Thunen, Heinrick, 210n
Walsh, John, 239b
Warford, Jeremy J., 161, 164, 179b, 184
Webb, Patrick, 198
White, T. Kelley, 406
Whiteside, A., 200
Wigley, Tom M. L., 168
Williamson, Oliver, 226
Wilson, E. O., 168
Wolgin, J. M., 145
Wood, Stanley, 254, 259
Wortman, Sterling, 280, 281
Wyatt, T. J., 230, 232t
Yaron, Jacob, 300
Young, Trevor, 336b, 348
Zeller, Manfred, 289, 295, 296, 300

Internet sources

http://stats. oecd. org/qwids
http://usda.mannlib.cornell.edu/reports/erssor/field/rcs-bby/rcs2001.pdf
http://www.prb.org/
http://www.ifpri.org/index1.htm
http://www.prb.org/Publications/Datasheets/2008/2008wpds.aspx
http://www.ifpri.org/pubs/bp/bp001.pdf

Works Cited

Acharya, Meena and Lynn Bennett. "Women and the Subsistence Sector, Economic Participation and Household Decision Making in Nepal." World Bank Staff Working Paper Number 526, Washington, D.C., World Bank, 1982.

Achard, Frédéric, Hugh D. Eva, Hans-Jürgen Stibig, Philippe Mayaux, Javier Gallego, Timothy Richards, and Jean-Paul Malingreau. "Determination of Deforestation Rates of the World's Humid Tropical Forests," *Science,* 9 August 2002 (vol. 297, no. 5583), pp. 999–1002.

Adams, Dale W. "The Conundrum of Successful Credit Projects in Floundering Rural Financial Markets." *Economic Development and Cultural Change*, vol. 36 (January 1988).

_____, Douglas H. Graham, and J. D. Von Pischke, eds. *Undermining Rural Development with Cheap Credit*. Boulder, Colo.: Westview Press, 1984.

Ahmed, Raisuddin, and Mahabub Hossain. Developmental Impact of Rural Infrastructure in Bangladesh, International Food Policy Research Institute, Research Report No. 83. Washington, D.C., October 1990.

Alston, Julian M., Connie Chan-Kang, Michele C. Marra, Philip G. Pardey, and T.J. Wyatt. "A Meta-Analysis of Rates of Return to Agricultural R&D." *IFPRI Research Report 113*. Washington, D.C.: International Food Policy Research Institute, 2000.

_____, George W. Norton, and Philip G. Pardey. *Science Under Scarcity: Principles and Practice for Agricultural Research Evaluation and Priority Setting.* Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1995.

Anderson, Kym. *Distortions to Agricultural Incentives: A Global Perspective, 1955 to 2007*. New York and Washington: Palgrave Macmillan and the World Bank, 2009.

_____. "On Why Agriculture Declines with Economic Growth." *Agricultural Economics,* vol. 3, no. 1 (October 1987), pp. 195–207.

_____, ed. *Political Economy of Distortions to Agricultural Incentives.* Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2009.

_____, and Yujiro Hayami. *The Political Economy of Agricultural Protection*. Sydney: Allen and Unwin, 1986.

_____, and Will Martin, eds. *Agricultural Trade Reform and the Doha Development Agenda*. Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2005.

_____, and William A. Masters, eds. *Distortions to Agricultural Incentives in Africa.* Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2008.

Angelsen, Arild, and David Kaimowitz, "Rethinking the Causes of Deforestation: Lessons from Economic Models," *The World Bank Research Observer*, vol. 14, no. 1 (February 1999), pp. 73–98.

Bardham, P., and A. Rudra. "Interlinkage of Hand Labor and Capital Relations: An Analysis of Village Survey Data in East Asia." *Economic and Political Weekly* (1978), pp. 367–84.

Bell, Clive. "Reforming Property Rights in Land and Tenancy." W*orld Bank Research Observer*, vol. 5, (July 1990), pp. 143–66.

Benjamin, Dwayne. "Can Unobserved Land Quality Explain the Inverse Productivity Relationship?" *Journal of Development Economics*, vol. 46 (1995), pp. 51–84.

Bennett, M. K. "International Disposition in Consumption Levels," *American Economic Review*, vol. 41 (September 1951), pp. 632-49.

Benor, Daniel, James A. Harrison, and Michael Baxter. "Agricultural Extension: The Training and Visit System." World Bank, Washington, D.C., 1989.

Berry, Albert, and William Cline. *Agrarian Structure and Productivity in Developing Countries*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1979.

Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation, *Annual Report 2007*, available online at www.gatesfoundation.org.

Binswanger, Hans P. "Agricultural Mechanization: A Comparative Historical Perspective." *World Book Research Observer*, vol. 1 (January 1986), pp. 27–56.

_____, and Mark R. Rosenzweig, eds. *Contractual Arrangements, Employment and Wages in Rural Labor Markets in Asia*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1984.

_____, and Vernon W. Ruttan, eds. *Induced Innovation: Technology, Institutions, and Development.* Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1978.

Boserup, Ester. *The Conditions of Agricultural Growth*. London: Allen and Unwin, 1965.

_____. *Women's Role in Economic Development*. London: Allen and Unwin, 1970.

Bouman, F. J. A. and R. Houtman. "Pawnbrokering as an Instrument of Rural Banking in the Third World." *Economic Development and Cultural Change*, vol. 37 (October 1988), pp. 69–99.

BRAC. *BRAC at a Glance*. March 2009. Available online at www.brac.net.

Bromley, Daniel W., ed. *Making the Commons Work.* San Francisco: Institute for Contemporary Studies Press, 1992.

_____, and Devendra P. Chapagain. "The Village Against the Center: Resource Depletion in South Asia." *American Journal of Agricultural Economics*, vol. 68 (December 1984), pp. 868–73.

Brooks, Karen, J. Luis Guasch, Avishay Braverman, and Csaba Csaki. "Agriculture and the Transition to Market." *Journal of Economic Perspectives,* vol. 5(4), Fall 1991, pp. 149–62.

Burnside, Craig, and David Dollar. "Aid, Policies and Growth." *American Economic Review*, vol. 90 (September 2000), pp. 775–86

Byerlee, Derek, and Gustavo Sain. "Food Pricing Policy in Developing Countries: Bias Against Agriculture or for Urban Consumers?" *American Journal of Agricultural Economics,* vol. 68 (November 1986), pp. 961–9.

CGIAR Science Council. *Science for Agricultural Development; Changing Contexts and New Opportunities*. Rome, Italy: Science Council Secretariat, 2005.

Christensen, Cheryl, et al., *Food Problems and Prospects in Sub-Saharan Africa: The Decade of the 1980's,* U.S. Department of Agriculture, Economic Research Service, Foreign Agricultural Research Report No. 186. Washington, D.C., August 1981.

Cline, William R. *Trade Policy and Global Poverty*. Washington, D.C.: Institute for International Economics, 2004.

Cohen, Benjamin J. "What Ever Happened to the LDC Debt Crisis?" *Challenge,* vol. 34 (May-June 1991), pp. 47–51.

Collier, Paul. *The Bottom Billion*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2008.

Colman, David, and N. Vink. *Reshaping Agriculture's Contributions to Society*. Oxford, UK: Blackwell Publishing, 2005.

_____, and Trevor Young. *Principles of Agricultural Economics: Markets and Prices in Less Developed Countries* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1989.

Dalgaard, Carl-Johan, Henrik Hansen, and Finn Tarp. "On The Empirics of Foreign Aid and Growth," *The Economic Journal,* vol. 114, no. 496 (June 2004), pp. F191–F216.

Davie, Ted J., and Isabelle A. Shirmer, ed. *Sustainability Issues in Agricultural Development*. Washington, D.C.: World Bank, 1987.

de Janvry, Alain. "The Role of Land Reform in Economic Development: Policies and Politics." *American Journal of Agricultural Economics*, vol. 63 (May 1981), pp. 384–92.

_____, Marcel Fafchamps, and Elisabeth Sadoulet. "Peasant Household Behavior with Missing Markets: Some Paradoxes Explained." *Economic Journal*, vol. 101, no.409 (1991): 1400–17.

_____, Elisabeth Sadoulet, and T. Kelley White. "Foreign Aid's Effect on U. S. Farm Exports." U. S. Department of Agriculture, Economic Research Service, Foreign Agricultural Economic Report Number 238, Washington, D.C., November 1989.

de Waal, A., and A. Whiteside. "New variant famine: AIDS and food crisis in southern Africa." *The Lancet*, vol. 362, October 11, 2003.

Deaton, Angus. *The Analysis of Household Surveys*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1997.

Deere, Carmen D. "The Division of Labor by Sex in Agriculture: A Peruvian Case Study." *Economic Development and Cultural Change,* vol. 30, 1982, pp. 795–811.

Deininger, Klaus, and Hans Binswanger. "The Evolution of the World Bank's Land Policy: Principles, Experience, and Future Challenges." *World Bank Research Observer*, vol. 14, no. 2 (August 1999), pp. 247–76.

_____, and Songquing Jin. "Land Sales and Rental Markets in Transition: Evidence from Rural Vietnam."*Oxford Bulletin of Economics and Statistics*, vol. 70 (February 2008), pp. 67–101.

_____, and _____."Tenure Security and Land-Related Investment: Evidence from Ethiopia." *European Economic Review*, vol. 50 (July 2006), pp. 1245–77.

Delgado, C., M. Rosegrant, H. Steinfeld, S. Ehui, and C. Courbois. "Livestock to 2020: the next food revolution." Food, Agriculture and the Environment Discussion Paper 28, IFPRI/FAO/ILRI, Washington, D.C., USA, 1999.

Dercon, Stephan, and Pramila Krishnan. "In Sickness and in Health: Risk Sharing within Households in Rural Ethiopia." *Journal of Political Economy*, vol. 108, no. 4 (August 2000), pp. 688–727.

Dias Bonilla, Eugenio, and Sherman Robinson. "The WTO can Help World's Poor Farmers." *International Herald Tribune*, March 38, 2001.

Dimitri, Carolyn, Anne Effland, and Neilson Conklin. *The 20th Century Transformation of U.S. Agriculture and Farm Polic*y. Washington, D.C.: Economic Research Service, USDA, 2005.

Dixon, John, and Aidan Gulliver with David Gibbon. *Farming systems and poverty: improving farmers' livelihoods In a changing world*. Rome and Washington, D.C.: FAO and the World Bank, 2001.

Doss, Cheryl. "The effects of intrahousehold property ownership on expenditure patterns in Ghana." *Journal of African Economies,* vol. 15 (1) (2005), pp. 149–80.

Duckham, Alec N., and G. B. Masefield. *Farming Systems of the World.* London: Chatto and Windus, 1970.

Easterly, William. *The Elusive Quest for Growth*. Cambridge: MIT Press, 2002.
Edirisinghe, Neville. "The Food Stamp Scheme in Sri Lanka: Costs, Benefits, and Options for Modification." International Food Policy Research Institute, Research Report No. 58, Washington, D.C., March 1987.
Eicher, Carl K., and John M. Staatz, eds. *International Agricultural Development*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1998.
Ellis, F. *Rural Livelihoods and Diversity in Developing Countries*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2000.
Evenson, R.E., P.Pingali, and T.P. Schultz, eds. *Handbook of Agricultural Economics, Volume 3: Agricultural Development: Farmers, Farm Production, and Food Markets*, ed. Amsterdam:Elsevier, 2006.
Fan, Shenggen, and Connie Chan-Kang. *Road Development, Economic Growth and Poverty Reduction in China*. International Food Policy Research Institute, Research Report No. 138. Washington, D.C., 2005.
FAO Production Yearbook, various years, USDA Economic Research Service, Rice Outlook and Situation Outlook Yearbook 2001 .
FAOSTAT data, 2002, 2005.
FAOTAT 2009, for years through 2006.
Feder, Gershon, and Klaus Deininger. "Land Institutions and Land Markets." *World Bank Policy Research Working Paper Series*: 2014, 1999.
Feldstein, Hilary Simms, and Susan V. Poats, eds. *Working Together: Gender Analysis in Agriculture, Vol. I: Case Studies*. West Hartford, Conn.: Kumarian Press, 1989.
Flores, Rafael, and Stuart Gillespie. *Health and Nutrition: Emerging and Reemerging Issues in Developing Countries*, IFPRI 2020 Vision, Focus 5, February 2001.
Fogel, Robert. National Bureau of Economic Research, Working Paper 9771, June 2003.
Folbre, Nancy. "Engendering Economics: New perspectives on Women, Work, and Demographic Change." *Annual World Bank Conference on Development*. The World Bank, Washington, D.C., 1995.
Food and Agricultural Organization of the United Nations. 2006. Global Forest Resources Assessment; Progress toward sustainable forest management. FAO Forestry Paper 147, Rome., 350 pp.
_____. *State of Food and Agriculture 2008*. Rome: FAO, 2008.
Foster, A., and M. Rosenzweig. "A Test for Moral Hazard in the Labor Market: Contractual Arrangements, Effort, and Health. *Review of Economics and Statistics*, vol. 76 (1994): 213–27.
Foster, J., J. Greer, and E. Thorbecke. "A Class of Decomposable Poverty Measures," *Econometrica*, Volume 52 (1984).
Foster, Phillips, and Howard D. Leathers. *The World Food Problem*. Boulder, Colorado: Lynne Reinner Publishers, 1999.
Gardner, Bruce L. and Gordon C. Rausser, eds. *Handbook of Agricultural Economics.* New York: Elsevier, 2001.
Gelbard, Arlene, Carl Haub, and Mary M. Kent. "World Population Beyond Six Billion." *Population Bulletin*, vol. 54, No.1, Population Reference Bureau, March 1999.
Gittinger, J. Price, Joanne Leslie, and Caroline Hoisington, eds. *Food Policy: Interacting Supply, Distribution, and Consumption*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1987.
Gladwin, Christine H., and Della McMillan. "Is a Turnaround in Africa Possible Without Helping African Women to Farm?" *Economic Development and Cultural Change,* vol. 387, 1989, pp. 305–44.

and

Glewwe, Paul. "Schools and Skills in Developing Countries: Education Policies and Socioeconomic Outcomes." *Journal of Economic Literature*, vol. 40 (2), June 2002, pp. 436–82.

Graham, Carol. *Safety Nets, Politics, and the Poor*. Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institution, 1994.

Grosh, Margaret, Carlo del Ninno, Emil Tesliuc, and Azedine Ouerghi, *For Protection and Promotion: The design and implementation of effective safety nets*. Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2008.

Haggblade, Steven, Peter Hazell, and Thomas Reardon. Strategies for Stimulating Poverty-Alleviating Growth in the Rural Nonfarm Economy in Developing Countries. EPTD Discussion Paper No. 93, International Food Policy Research Institute, 2002.

Hareau, Guy, George Norton, Bradford Mills, and Everett Peterson. "Potential Benefits of Transgenic Rice in Asia: A General Equilibrium Analysis." *Quarterly Journal of International Agriculture*, vol. 44 (2005), pp. 229–46.

Hayami, Yujiro. *Anatomy of a Peasant Economy: A Rice Village in the Philippines*. Los Banos, Laguna, Philippines; International Rice Research Institute, 1978.

_____, and Vernon W. Ruttan. *Agricultural Development: An International Perspective.* Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1985.

Hicks, John R. *Theory of Wages*. London: MacMillan and Co., 1932.

Hopper, W. David. "Allocation Efficiency in a Traditional Indian Agriculture." *Journal of Farm Economics,* vol. 47 (1965), pp. 611–25.

Hossain, Mahabub. "Credit for Alleviation of Rural Poverty: The Grameen Bank of Bangladesh." International Food Policy Research Institute Research, Report No. 65. Washington, D.C., February 1988.

Houck, James P. "Link Between Agricultural Assistance and Agricultural Trade." *Agricultural Economics*, vol. 2 (October 1988), pp. 158–66.

The Hunger Project. *Ending Hunger: An Idea Whose Time Has Come*. New York: Praeger, 1985.

Hunger Task Force. *Ending Hunger: It Can Be Done*. The Millennium Project. London: Earthscan. 2005.

IMF International Financial Statistics 2009.

International Food Policy Research Institute. *PROGRESA — Breaking the Cycle of Poverty*. Washington , D.C: IFPRI, 2002.

Islam, Nurul. "The Nonfarm Sector and Rural Development: Review of Issues and Evidence." 2020 Discussion Paper No. 22, International Food Policy Research Institute, 1997.

James, Clive. *Global Status of Commercialized Biotech/GM Crops: 2008 ISAAA Brief No. 39*. Ithaca, N.Y.: ISAAA, 2008.

Johnson, D. Gale. *World Agriculture in Disarray,* 2nd ed. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991.

Joyce, Joseph. "The IMF and Global Financial Crises." *Challenge*, vol. 43 (July-August 2000), pp. 88–107.

Juggins, Janice. "Gender-Related Impacts and the Work of the International Agricultural Research centers." Consultative Group for International Agricultural Research (CGIAR) Study Paper Number 17, World Bank, Washington, D.C., 1986.

Junhua, Ehou. "Economic Reform: Price Readjustment (1978–87)." *Chinese Economic Studies*, vol. 24 (3), Spring 1991, pp. 6–26.

Koppel, Bruce M., ed. *Induced Innovation Theory and International Agricultural Development: A Reassessment*. Baltimore and London: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1995.

Krueger, Anne O. "Aid in the Development Process." World Bank Research Observer, vol. 1 (January 1986), pp. 57–8.

_____, Constantine Michalopoulos, and Vernon W. Ruttan, ed. *AID and Development*. Baltimore, Md.: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1989.

_____, Maurice Schiff, and Alberto Valdes. "Agricultural Incentives in Developing Countries: Measuring the Effects of Sectoral and Economywide Policies." *World Bank Economic Review*, vol. 2 (September 1988), pp. 255–71.

Krugman, P., and M. Obstfeld. *International Economics*. Cambridge: Massachusetts Institute of Technology Press, 1988.

Lancaster, Carol. *Foreign Aid: Diplomacy, Development, Domestic Politics*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2007.

Lansburg, Steven. *The Armchair Economist: Economics and Everyday Life*. New York: Free Press, 1995.

Lapenu, Cecile, and Manfred Zeller. Distribution, Growth and Performance of Microfinance Institutions in Africa, Asia, and Latin America. IFPRI FCND Discussion Paper 114. Washington, D.C.,2001.

Levinsohn, James, and Margaret MacMillian. "Does Food Aid Harm the Poor? Household Evidence from Ethiopia." National Bureau of Economic Research, Inc, NBER Working Papers: 11048 (2005).

Lin, Justin Y. "The Household Responsibility System Reform and the Adoption of Hybrid Rice in China." *Journal of Development Economics,* vol. 36 (2), 1991, pp. 353–73.

Loomis, Robert S. "Agricultural Systems." *Scientific American*, September 1976, p. 69.

Maddison, Angus. *Economic Progress and Policy in Developing Countries*. New York: W. W. Norton and Co., 1970.

Maimbo, Samuel Munzele, and Dilip Ratha. *Remittances: Development Impact and Future Prospects*. Washington, D.C.: World Bank, 2005.

Markandaya, Anil, Patrice Harou, Lorenzo Giovanni Bellu, and Vito Cistulli. *Environmental Economics for Sustainable Growth*. Northhampton, Mass.: Edward Elgar, 2002.

Markandaya, Kamala. *Nectar in a Sieve.* New York: New American Library, 1954.

Masters, William A. *Government and Agriculture in Zimbabwe*. Westport, Conn.: Praeger, 1994.

_____. "Paying for Prosperity: How and Why to Invest in Agricultural Research and Development in Africa." *Journal of International Affairs*, vol. 58(2, 2005), pp. 35–64.

Maxwell, S.T., and H. W. Singer. "Food Aid to Developing Countries: A Survey." *World Development*, vol. 7 (1979), pp. 223–47.

McCleary, Rachel, and Robert J Barro. "Private Voluntary Organizations Engaged in International Assistance, 1939–2004." *Nonprofit and Voluntary Sector Quarterly*, vol. 37, no. 3 (September 2008), pp. 512–36.

Mellor, John W. *Economics of Agricultural Development*. Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University, 1966.

_____, and Raisuddin Ahmed, eds. *Agricultural Price Policy for Developing Countries*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1988.

_____, and Sarah Gavian, "Famine, Causes, Prevention, and Relief," *Science*, vol. 235 (January 1987), pp. 539–45.

_____, and Bruce F. Johnston. "The World Food Equation: Interrelations among Development, Employment, and Food Consumption." *Journal of Economic Literature*, vol. 22 (June 1984), p. 533.

Morrison, Elizabeth, and Randall B. Purcell. *Players and Issues in U.S. Foreign Aid.* West Hartford, Conn.: Kumarian Press, 1988.

Munzele Maimbo, Samuel, and Dilip Ratha. *Remittances: Development Impact and Future Prospects*. Washington, D.C.: World Bank, 2005.

North, Douglas C. "Institutions, Transactions Costs, and Economic Growth." *Economic Inquiry,* vol. 25 (1987), pp. 415–8.

Norton, George W., E. A. Heinrichs, Gregory C. Luther, and Michael E. Irwin, eds. *Globalizing Integrated Pest Management: A Participatory Research Process.* Ames, Iowa: Blackwell Publishing, 2004.

_____, Jaime Ortiz, and Philip G. Pardey. "The Impact of Foreign Assistance on Agricultural Growth." *Economic Development and Cultural Change*, vol. 40 (July, 1992), pp. 775–86.

_____, Philip G. Pardey, and Julian Alston. *Science Under Scarcity: Principles and Practice for Agricultural Research Evaluation and Priority Setting*. Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1995.

OECD database, Development Cooperation Report, 2008.

OECD, International Development Statistics database.

Olson, Mancur, Jr. "Big Bills Left on the Sidewalk: Why Some Nations Are Rich and Others Are Poor." *Journal of Economic Perspectives*, vol. 10, (Spring 1996), pp. 3–24.

Owen, E., T. Smith, M. A. Steele, S. Anderson, A. J. Duncan, M. Herrero, J. D. Leaver, C. K. Reynolds, I. Richards, J. C. Ku-Vera, eds. "Responding to the livestock revolution: the role of globalisation and implications for poverty alleviation." British Society of Animal Science Publication 33, Nottingham University Press, 2004.

Pardey, Philip G., Nienke Beitema, Steven Dehmer, and Stanley Wood. *Agricultural Research: A Growing Divide*, Washington, D.C.: IFPRI, 2006.

Pearce, David W., and R. Kerry Turner. *Economics of Natural Resources and the Environment*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press 1990.

Pingali, Prabhu, Yves Bigot, and Hans P. Binswanger. *Agricultural Mechanization and the Evolution of Farming Systems in Sub-Saharan Africa*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1987.

Pinstrup-Andersen, Per. *Food Subsidies in Developing Countries*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1988.

_____, and Rajul Pandya-Lorch. *The Unfinished Agenda: Perspectives on Overcoming Hunger, Poverty, and Environmental Degradation*. International Food Policy Research Institute, Washington, D.C., 2001.

_____, and Ebbie Schioler. *Seeds of Contention.* Baltimore, Johns Hopkins University Press, 2000.

Pitt, Mark M., and Shahidur Khandker. "The Impact of Group-based Credit Programs on Poor Households in Bangladesh: Does the Gender of Participants Matter?" *Journal of Political Economy* (1998), pp. 958–96.

Plucknett, Donald L. "Saving Lives Through Agricultural Research." Consultative Group on International Agricultural Research, Issues in Agriculture Paper No. 1 (Washington, D.C., May 1991), pp. 9–10.

Population Division of the Department of Economic and Social Affairs of the United Nations Secretariat. *World Population Prospects: The 2004 Revision.*

Population Reference Bureau, Inc. 2008 World Population Data Sheet.

Quisumbing, Agnes R., Lynn R. Brown, Hillary Simms Feldstein, Lawrence Haddad, and Christina Peña. "Women the Key to Food Security." International Food Policy Research Institute, Washington, D.C., August 1995.

Raup, Philip M. "Land Reform Issues in Development." Staff Paper P75-27, Department of Agricultural and Applied Economics, University of Minnesota, St. Paul, 1975.

Ravallion, Martin. "Poverty comparisons: A guide to concepts and methods," Living Standards Measurement Study Working Paper, no. 88. Washington, D.C.: World Bank, 1992.

_____, Shaohua Chen, and Prem Sangraula. "New Evidence on the Urbanization of Global Poverty," Policy Research Working Paper, forthcoming, World Bank, 2007.

Ray, Debraj. *Development Economics*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1998.

Riddell, Roger. *Does Foreign Aid Really Work?* Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2007.

Roberts, Colleen, ed. *Trade, Aid, and Policy Reform*. Washington, D.C.: World Bank, 1988.

Robinson, Marguerite S. *The Micro Finance Revolution: Sustainable Finance for the Poor.* Washington, D.C.: The World Bank, 2001.

Rogoff, Kenneth. "International Institutions for Reducing Global Financial Instability." *Journal of Economic Perspectives*, vol. 13, Fall 1999.

Runge, C. Ford, Benjamin Senauer, Philip G. Pardey, and Mark W. Rosegrant. *Ending Hunger in Our Lifetime: Food Security and Globalization*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 2003.

Ruthernberg, Hans. *Farming Systems in the Tropics*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1980.

Ruttan, Vernon W. *Agricultural Research Policy*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1982.

_____. "Productivity Growth in World Agriculture: Sources and Constraints." *Journal of Economic Perspectives*, vol. 16 (Fall 2002), pp. 161–84.

_____. "Solving the Foreign Aid Vision Thing." *Challenge*, vol. 34 (May-June 1991), p. 46.

_____. T*echnology, Growth and Development: An Induced Innovation Perspective*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2001.

_____, *United States Development Assistance Policy*. Baltimore: Johns-Hopkins, 1996.

Sachs, Jeffrey D. *Common Wealth: Economics for a Crowded Planet*. New York: Penguin Books, 2008.

_____. *The End of Poverty: Economic Possibilities for Our Time*. New York: Penguin, 2005.

_____. Investing in Development: A Practical Plan to Achieve the Millennium Development Goals, the Millennium Project. London: Earthscan Publishing, 2005.

_____. "A New Global Consensus on Helping the Poorest of the Poor." Annual World Bank Conference on Development Economics, 1999.

Sahn, David E., ed. *Causes and Implications of Seasonal Variability in Household Food Security*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1987.

Sarma, J. S. *Cereal Feed Use in the Third World: Past Trends and Protections to 2000.* International Food Policy Research Institute, Research Report No. 57. Washington, DC., December 1986.

_____ and Vasant P. Gandhi, Production and Consumption of Foodgrains in India: Implications of Accelerated Economic Growth and Poverty Alleviation, International Food Policy Research Institute Research Report No. 81, Washington, D.C., 1990, pp. 17–34.

Schady, Norbert and José Rosero. "Are cash transfers made to women spent like other sources of income?" *Economics Letters*, vol. 101 (2008), pp. 246–8.

Schramm, Gunter, and Jeremy J. Warford, eds. *Environmental Management and Economic Development*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1989.

Schultz, Theodore W. *Transforming Traditional Agriculture.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1964.

Scobie, Grant M. and Rafael Posada T. "The Impact of Technical Change on Income Distribution: The Case of Rice in Colombia." *American Journal of Agricultural Economics*, vol. 60, no.1 (February 1978), pp. 85–92.

Sen, Amartya K. *Poverty and Famines: An Essay on Entitlement and Deprivation*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1981.

Sfeirounis, Alfredo. "Soil Conservation in Developing Countries." Western Africa Projects Department, World Bank, Washington, D.C., 1986.

Sharma, Shalendra. "The Truth About Foreign Aid." *Challenge* (July-August 2005), pp. 11–25.

Siegel, Paul B., and Jeffrey Alwang, An Asset Based Approach to Social Risk Management. SP Discussion Series 9926, Human Development Network, Social Protection Unit, the World Bank, Washington, October 1999. 67 pp.

Skjonsberg, Else. *Change in an African Village: Kefa Speaks*. West Hartford, Conn: Kumarian Press, 1989.

Smith, Lisa C., Usha Ramakrishnan, Aida Ndiaye, Lawrence Haddad, and Reynaldo Martorell. *The Importance of Women's Status for Child Nutrition in Developing Countries*. International Food Policy Research Report number 131, Washington, D.C: IFPRI, 2003.

Spriggs, John. "Benefit-Cost Analysis of Surfaced Roads in the Eastern Rice Region of India." *American Journal of Agricultural Economics*, vol. 59 (May 1977), pp. 375–9.

Stevens, Robert D., ed. *Tradition and Dynamics in Small-Farm Agriculture.* Ames: Iowa State University Press, 1977.

Stiglitz, Joseph. "Overseas Aid is Money Well Spent." *Financial Times*, April 14, 2000, p. 20.

Streeten, Paul. *What Price Food? Agricultural Price Policies in Developing Countries.* Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1987.

Thirlwall, A.P. *Growth and Development*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2006.

Thirtle, Colin, Lin Lin, and Jenifer Piesse. "The Impact of Research-Led Agricultural Productivity Growth on Poverty Reduction in Africa, Asia and Latin America." *World Development, 31*, vol. 12 (December 2003), pp. 1959–75.

Tietenberg, T. H. "The Poverty Connection to Environmental Policy." *Challenge,* September-October 1990, pp. 26–32.

_____, and H. Folmer, eds. *The International Yearbook of Environmental and Resource Economics: 2004/2005*. Cheltenham, UK: Edward Elgar, 2004.

Timmer, C. Peter. *Getting Prices Right: The Scope and Limits of Agricultural Price Policy.* Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1986.

_____, Walter P. Falcon, and Scott R. Pearson. *Food Policy Analysis.* Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1983.

Todaro, Michael P. *Economic Development*. New York: Addison Wesley, 2008.

Truman, Harry S. "Inaugural Address of the President." Department of State Bulletin 33, Washington, D.C., January 1949.

United Nations, Centre for Social Development and Humanitarian Affairs. "Women, Food Systems and Agriculture." *1989 World Survey on the Role of Women in Development*. New York: United Nations, 1989.

United Nations, Department of Economic and Social Affairs, Population Division. World Population Prospects: The 2006 Revision, Highlights, Working Paper No. ESA/P/WP.202, 2007.

_____ Development Program. *Human Development Report*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2007.

_____. Development Programme. *Human Development Report 2007/2008*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2007.

_____. *Human Development Report 2005*. New York: Hoechstetter, 2005.

_____. *Human Development Report 2007–2008* (New York: Palgrave Macmillan Press, 2007).

_____. Population Division, World Population Prospects: 2004 Revision Population Database.

_____. *World Population Prospects; the 2002 Revision.* New York: United Nations, 2003.

_____. *World Population Prospects, The 2006 Revision*.

U.N. Standing Committee on Nutrition, *Fifth Report on the World Food Situation: Nutrition for Improved Development Outcomes*. New York: United Nations, 2004. 143 pp.

U.S. Census Bureau, 2005.

USDA/ERS, 2008.

Varangis, Panos, Paul Siegel, Daniele Giovannucci, and Bryan Lewin. "Dealing with the Coffee Crisis in Central America: Impacts and Strategies." The World Bank Development Research Group, Policy Research Working Paper 299. March 2003.

von Braun, Joachim. *Rising Food Prices: What Should be Done?* IFPRI Policy Brief, April 2008.

_____, and Detlev Puetz. *Data Needs for Food Policy in Developing Countries*. Washington, D.C.: International Food Policy Research Institute, 1993.

_____, Detlev Puetz, and Patrick Webb. "Irrigation Technology and Commercialization of Rice in The Gambia: Effects on Income and Nutrition." International Food Policy Research Institute, Research Report No. 75, Washington, D.C., 1989.

Von Pischke, J. D., Dale W. Adams, and Gordon Donald. *Rural Financial Markets in Developing Countries: Their Use and Abuse*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1983.

Walsh, John. *Preserving the Options: Food Productivity and Sustainability*. Consultative Group for International Agricultural Research, Issues in Agriculture, No. 2. Washington, D.C., 1991.

Wigley, Tom M. L. "The Science of Climate Change." Pew Center on Climate Change Report, 2005.

Williamson, Oliver. *The Economic Institutions of Capitalism*. New York: Free Press, 1985.

_____. "The Economic Institutions of Capitalism." *Rand Journal of Econometrics*, vol. 17, 1986, p. 280.

Wilson, E. O., ed., *Biodiversity*. Washington, D.C.: National Academy Press, 1988.

Wolgin, J. M. "Resource Allocation and Risk: A Case Study of Smallholder Agriculture in Kenya." *American Journal of Agricultural Economics*, vol. 54 (1975), pp. 622–30.

World Bank, *Annual Review of Development Effectiveness 2000*, supplement Table 13a. Available online at www.worldbank.org

_____. *Engendering Development*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2001.

World Bank. *World Development Indicators*, 2008, 2005, 2000.
_____. World Development Indicators on-line database.
_____. World Development Indicators Online Database, 2005.
_____. *World Development Report* 2008. New York: Oxford University Press.
_____. *World Development Report* 1984.
_____. *World Development Report 1986*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1986.
_____. *World Development Report 1980*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1980.
_____ and the International Fund for Agricultural Development. *Gender in Agriculture Sourcebook.* Washington DC: The World Bank, 2009.
World Commission on Environment and Development. *Our Common Future*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1987.
World Health Organization, 2003.
_____. Statistical Information System, 2006.
_____. *World Health Report 2005, Make Every Mother and Child Count* (Geneva: WHO Press, 205), 252 pp.
World Vision International, *2008 Annual Review*. Available online at www.wvi.org.
Wortman, Sterling, and Ralph W. Cummings, Jr. *To Feed This World: The Challenge and the Strategy*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1978.
Yaron, Jacob. "What Makes Rural Financial Institutions Successful?" *World Bank Research Observer*, vol. 9 (1: 1994), pp. 49–70.
Zeller, Manfred, and Richard L. Meyer. *The Critical Triangle of Microfinance: from Vision to Reality*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 2003.

Subject Index

Page numbers followed by
b — indicate material in boxes
f — indicate material in figures
n — indicate material in footnotes
t — indicate material in tables

Note: Proper nouns come before the same word used generically; i.e., Human comes before human.

A

access to information, 313
adaptive research, 242
adjustable interest rates, 382
adjustment costs, 358
Afghanistan, 166, 395, 396t, 409
Africa, 4, 5, 6f, 8, 10, 52, 71, 94, 135b, 149, 150, 152f, 158, 166, 175, 188, 208–9, 239b, 245, 246, 249t, 252, 261, 262t, 263b, 285, 332, 3422, 343t, 361, 378, 382, 383
  Central, 51t
  Eastern, 51t, 399
  Horn of, 284
  North, 253t
  Southern, 51t, 245, 254, 319, 357, 399
  Sub-Saharan, see Sub-Saharan Africa
  The Sahel, see Sahel, The
  West, Western, 51t, 135b, 150, 190, 194b, 277, 352
Africa Rice (WARDA), 249t
Agricultural Trade Development and Assistance Act of 1954, 407
agricultural
  development, 141–3, 207–24, 365–90
    integrated approach to, 415–22
    role of trade, 335–6
    theories of, 207–12
  export taxes, 340–2
  extension, see extension
  labor markets, 275–8
  lobbies, 331
agricultural, *continued*
  prices of products and land, 375
  production, 39–40
  productivity, 168–70, 228–31
    defined, 5
  research, see agricultural research
  systems, 146–59
  technology, 29–30
  trade, 11, 354
agricultural research, 227–58
  categories of, 241–3
  economic benefits, 245–6
  environmental effects, 238–9
  international research centers, 246–9
  nutritional implications, 237–8
  organization of, 246–8
  rate of return on investment, 232t
  spending, 252–4, 253t
  transferability of results, 250
agriculture
  change in, 417–20
  conservation, 196b
  export-oriented, effects of, 335
  foreign assistance to, 400
  intensive use, 21, 209–10
  revolution, first & second, 22b
  role of, in development, 18–22
  settled, 22b
  traditional, 131–43
agroforestry, 249t
Ahmed, Raisuddin, 317
AID, see USAID
AIDS, 10, 77, 356, 424
  see also HIV-AIDS
allocative efficiency, 100
Amazon, 175, 179b
America, see Latin, North, South
Andes mountains, 34, 164
anemia, 41
animal
  inputs, 285–6
  power, compared with labor, 157
  products, 50, 164

annual cropping, 154b
anti-feudal land reforms, 265–7
applied research, defined, 242
Argentina, 19, 20t, 251, 332, 339, 372, 385
Asia, 4, 5, 5f, 71, 94, 138, 142, 166, 168, 188, 190, 192, 195, 198, 208, 209–10, 236b, 246, 247, 253t, 261, 262t, 263b, 286, 319, 342, 343t, 382, 395, 408, 409, 423
  Central, 343t
  East, 319, 383, 388
  South, 28b, 94, 148, 158
  West, 253t
Asian-Pacific countries, 357
asset redistribution, 223
assistance programs, 393–406
Atlantic Ocean, 8
Australia, 20t, 208, 343t

B

balance of payments, 371
banana(s), 57b, 153, 175, 180, 249t, 264, 333, 337
Bangladesh, 20t, 30, 31b, 38, 71t, 82f, 143f, 164, 165f, 292, 294f, 295, 306t, 314t, 315f, 317, 341, 396t, 408, 409
Bangladesh Rural Advancement Committee (BRAC), 401
basic research, 241–2
bawon rice harvesting system, 217b
Bedouin, pastoral nomads, 150
Belarus, 72t
Belgium, 400
Benin, 72t
Bennet, M.K., 15, 50
Bennett's law, 50
bilateral preferential agreements, 352
bio-diesel, 60
Biodiversity (IPGRI), 249t
biofuels, 8, 26, 60–1, 283
biological technologies, 22b
biotechnology research, 243
  benefits and costs, 244–5
  products of, 244
birth rates, 75–6, 77–9
  reduction of, 79
Bolivia, 132
black market, 305
bloc-floating system, 379
Bolivia, 396t
Borlaug, Norman, 236b
Boserup, Ester, 154b
Botswana, 10, 138, 193b, 332
Brazil, 20t, 51t, 60, 71t, 167, 175, 179b, 188, 228, 229t, 305, 306t, 313, 339, 341, 372, 385, 388, 396t
Bread for the World, 401
Britain, 103, 114, 209, 328b, 382, 400
Brimley, Daniel W., 175
Brown, Lynn R., 185
buffer stock program, 307, 359–60
Buffett, Warren, 401
Bulgaria, 72t, 268b
bullock, 141f
Burkina Faso, 72t, 245
Burundi, 72t
bush fallow cultivation, 154b

C

calorie
  availability, 5, 32, 33f
  intake, 15
Cambodia, see Kampuchea
Camp David Peace Agreement, 408
Canada, 20t, 343t, 358, 407
 Canadian International Development Agency(CIDA), 399
capital
  accumulation, 101, 104–5, 116, 274
  flight, 381
  flows, 388–9, 393–8,
  human, 102, 106–7
  -intensive goods, 21–2
  -led growth, 127
  markets, 11, 379–80
  physical, 104–5
  physiological, 107
  social, 109
  sources of, 116
  trade interactions, 335
CARE, 409b
Caribbean, 175, 192, 253t, 358, 361, 383, 385
Caribbean Basin Initiative, 352
cassava, 34, 228, 247, 249t
  mealybug, 239b
  mosaic virus, 228
casual labor, 276–7
Catholic Relief Services, 401
cattle, 58f, 133–4b, 135b, 138–41, 152–3, 175
CDM = Clean Development Mechanism

ceblokan harvesting system, 217b
Central America, 113, 141, 149, 164, 181, 193, 194b, 209, 264, 277–8, 319, 337, 358
Centre for International Forestry Research (CIFOR), 249t
Centro de Mejoramiento de Maiz y Trigo (CIMMYT), 424b
Centro Internacional de Agricultura Tropical(CIAT), 249t
de la Papa (CIP), 249t, 251f
cereal
import facility, 361
products, 41, 61, 164
CGIAR = Consultative Group for International Agricultural Research
Chan-Kang, Connie, 317
Chapagain, Devendra P., 175
chemical
fertilizers, 283
pollution, 170, 284
Chenery, Hollis, 116
child, children
as investment, 77–9, 200–1
benefits of, 77, 134b
consumption benefit, 77
education of, 187–8, 190f, 200–1
employment of, 77–8, 200–1
malnutrition, 77
mortality, 78
Chile, 396t
China, 10, 30, 71, 71t, 79, 117, 138, 155, 156b, 164, 166, 192, 228, 229t, 254, 264, 267, 270, 284, 306t, 313, 317, 398b, 423
CIAT = International Center for Tropical Agriculture, 239b, 249t
CIDA = Canadian International Development Agency
CIFOR = Centre for International Forestry Research, 249t
CIMMYT = International Center for Maize and Wheat Improvement, 247, 249t, 424b
CIP = Centro Internacional de la Papa (International Potato Center), 251f
Clark, Colin, 115
Clean Development Mechanism, 180–1
climate change, 12, 140–1, 148, 152, 168–9
adaptation to, 168–9
Cline, William R., 327
cocoa, 18, 135b, 153, 180, 277, 333, 337, 338, 340–1, 344t, 359, 361
coffee, 18, 135b, 153, 175, 180, 192, 255, 313, 333, 337, 338, 340, 341, 344t, 359, 361
collective
action, 219, 350
land tenure system, 154–5, 156b, 264–5
self reliance, 357
Colombia, 1f, 20t, 43f, 58f, 79, 199f, 235, 266, 276b, 306t, 396t
commodity
agreements, 359–60
groups, 331–2
marketing boards, 316b
markets, 8
price trends, 360
supply curve, 230
common property management, 180
communicable diseases, 10
communications, 313–5
comparative advantage, 113, 329–31, 380
principle of, 329, 330b
Compensatory Financing Facility (CFF), 361
Schemes (CFS), 360–1
competitive advantage, 380
complements, defined, 53
Congo, Democratic Republic of, 72t, 74f, 395
Conservation Agriculture for Sustainable Agriculture and Rural Development (CA), 196b
labor effects, 196b
constraints to trade, 337–46
external demand, 337–8
Consultative Group for International Agricultural Research (CGIAR), 247, 248
consumer subsidy, 304f
consumption parameters, 56–9
contraception, 79
cooperative farms, 264
copyrights, 240, 355
Corn Laws, 114, 328b
corporate farms, 264
corruption, 345, 376–7, 420–1
cost differences, 329
cost of adjustment problems, 351
cost-recovery measures, 189
Costa Rica, 387, 396t
Cote d'Ivoire, 361, 383
cotton, 133b, 333, 338, 340, 344t, 358, 361

credit
  access to, 197–8
  government-assisted programs, 293–8
  markets, 281–97
  policy lessons, 296–7
  role of , 288–9
  subsidized, 293–5
crop rotation, 22b, 209
cross-price elasticities, 53
cross-sectional data, 54–5
Cuba, 266
Cummings, Ralph W., 281
current account deficit, 382, 383b

D

Dacca, 31b
dairy products, sector, 140, 339
death rates, 75–6
Deaton, Angus, 57b
debt
  buying-back, 387
  crisis, 382–5
    causes, 382–3
    effects, 383–5
    solutions, 385–8
  foreign, 12, 351
  forgiveness, 400
  for conservation (nature) swap, 387
  forgiveness, partial, 386
  relief, 42–3, 385–8
  rescheduling, 386–8
  service, 383
default probability, 291, 385
deforestation, 12, 13, 162, 166–8, 167f, 179b, 238
  results of, 170
degradation of natural resources, solutions to, 176–82
demand
  curve(s), 48, 48f, 52, 63f, 345
  effective, 47–56
    defined, 47
  factors, 8
  food, 47–65
    aggregate, changes in, 58–9
    determinants of, 48–59, 60t
      influences on, 58–9
  growth of, 60t, 407
  income
    effect on, 49
    elasticities of, 49–52, 91–2
demand, *continued*
  -induced changes in, 56–8
  interactions with supply, 61–5
  law of, 48
  price elasticity of, 92
  shifts (food), 7, 91
  -supply interactions, 61–5
Democratic Republic of the Congo, 72t, 74f, 395, 396t
demographic transition, 76f, 77
dependency theory, 119-20, 127
derivatives, markets, 361–2
desertification, 12, 164–6, 170, 238
  defined, 165
determinants of farming systems, 146–9
devaluation, 372–3, 384–5
Development Assistance Committee of OECD, 397
Development Round = Doha Round 353, 356
development, 14–5, 415–20
  agricultural, 207–24, 393–406
  assistance programs, 398–401
  banks, regional, 402
  diffusion theory, 210–1
  location theory, 210
  strategies, 121-7
    growth vs equity, 124-5
    industry versus agriculture, 122
    inward vs outward-led, 123-4
    private vs public, 125-6
  sustainable, 196b
    defined, 14
  theory, 87–128
  trade protectionism, 119-20
  two-sector model, 116-9
  value judgments, 18
DFID = United Kingdom Department for International Development
Dhaka Bangladesh, 82f
Diaz-Bonilla, Eugenio, 349
dietary energy, 32
diminishing returns, law of, 97–8
disease(s)
  child, 77
  communicable, 10
diversification, 137, 210, 345, 358–9
diversity, biological, 168
division of labor, 106, 113
Doha Round
  trade negotiations, 353, 356

Domar, Evsey, 116
drainage, 209, 283
drip irrigation, 284
drought, 165
  -resistant plants, 284
dryland farming, 133b, 164–5
dual-economy models, 116-9, 117f, 127, 236
Duckham, Alec N., 149–50

E

EC = European Community
econometric model, 55
economic
  determinants of
    crop and livestock mix, 155–8
    input use, 155–8
  development, 14
  growth, 89–111
    sources of, 100–9
  opportunities, 81
  optimality, 95, 98–100, 100f
  solutions to natural resource degradation, 177–82
  transformation, 19–21, 20t, 89–111
Ecuador, 20t, 53f, 103f, 163f, 201f, 233b, 266, 285b, 372, 386
education
  adult, 188–9
  benefits of, 186–8
  for non-farm jobs, 187
  role of, 186–9
  types of, 188–9
effects
  income, 53–4
  substitution, 53
efficiency
  allocative, 100f, 106
  improvement, 106
  input, 157f
  market, 106
  output, 159f
  price, 100f, 106
  technical, defined, 106
Egypt, 51t, 166, 305, 306t, 332, 395, 396t, 408, 411
Eicher, Carl K., 24
El Salvador, 396t
elastic, defined, 52
elasticity
  complements, 53
elasticity, *continued*
  cross-price, 53
  estimates, 54–6
  income effect, 49–53
  methods for obtaining estimates, 54–6
  own-price, 52
  price, of demand, 52–4
  substitution effect, 53
  unit elastic defined, 52–3
employment
  off-farm, 137–8
energy, 60
  deficiency, 32t, 166
enforcement of environmental protections, 182
Engel's law, 49–50
England, see Britain
Enhanced Heavily Indebted Poor Country (HIPC) debt relief initiative, 386
enlightened self interest, 222–4
environmental
  degradation, 12, 161–82, 238
  effects of research, 238–9
  problems, 170–93
erosion, soil, 12, 162–4, 238
  caused by livestock, 141
ethanol, 60, 283
Ethiopia, 20t, 35f, 42, 164, 193, 198, 395, 396t, 408, 409
Euphrates River basin, 166b
Europe, 71, 75, 114, 209, 319, 331, 343t, 399
  Eastern, 71, 164, 268b, 270, 399
  Northwest, 14, 22b
European Community (EC), 353, 361, 407
exchange
  flexible, 389, 391
  foreign, defined, 371
  rate devaluation, 384
  rates, 335, 341–2, 371–3, 373b, 388–9
expanding the extensive margin, 208
exports
  cash-crop, 18
  industrial, 18
  -oriented agriculture, 335
  quotas, 338, 341
  taxes, 155, 307, 308f, 341, 421
extension, 254–6
extensive
  livestock systems, 153
  margin, 208

external debt , 381–8
externalities, 126, 171–2, 173b

F

Factor Endowment Theory of
  Trade, 335, 336b
factors of production, 95
Falcon, Walter P., 3, 365
family
  nuclear, 190
  planning, 78, 79
  size, 77–9
  structure, 185–202
  well being, 197
famine, 5–6, 30–6, 31b, 125, 422
Fan, Shenggen, 317
FAO = Food and Agricultural
  Organization of the United Nations
farm
  products, markets for, 407
  size, 231–4
  surpluses, disposal of, 407
  tenure, 231–4
Farmer Field Schools, 196b, 285b
farming systems, 249t
  biological factors, 148
  determinants of, 146–59
  endogenous factors, 148
  exogenous factors, 148
  human factors, 147f, 148–9
  institutional factors, 147f, 148–9
  physical factors, 148
  technical factors, 147f, 148
  types of, 149–55
  women's role, 191–5
farms
  commercial family, 262–3
  family, 262–3
  group, 264
  state, 264, 268b
  traditional, 129f, 131–43
  size of , 132–4
  types of, 264–5
FDI = foreign direct investment
feeding programs, 40–1
Fei, John, 116
female, see women
fertility change, 75–80
fertilizer, 22, 133b, 139, 174, 282, 283, 424b
  natural sources of, 283
  -responsive rice, 217b
feudalism, 265
FGT = Foster, Greer, Thorbecke Index
FGT Index, 28b
financial
  services, 290
  systems microfinance approach, 295–6
financing gap, 116
fiscal policy, 368
Fisher, Alan, 115
fish, fisheries, 249t, 306t
fixed-payment leases, 216
  -rent contracts, 267
flooding, 164
Food and Agricultural Organization
  of the United Nations (FAO), 35, 248,
  403b
food
  aid, see food aid
  balance sheets, 35–6
  consumption, 26
  demand, see food demand
  deprivation, 8
  emergency, 409
  for work programs, 43
  fortification, 40–1
  grains, 6, 407
  intervention programs, 40–1
  livestock role in supply, 138–9
  market structure, 319–20
  prices, 6–8, 29–30, 390
  safety regulations, 353b
  stamps, 309
  subsidy programs, 40, 305
  supply, 3–6, 25–6, 138–9, 237, 423–4
food aid, 43, 397, 400, 407–11
food demand, 25–43, 47–56, 91, 423–4
  economics of, 47–65
  effective, 47–59
  determinants of, 48–9
  income elasticities of, 49–52
  law of, 48, 48f
foot-and-mouth disease, 353b
Ford Foundation, 247
foreign aid, 369
  capital flows, 395–8
  content of programs, 400
  effects of, 403–5
  effects on donors, 406
  humanitarian, 394
  rationale for, 412
  results, 404–5

forestry, rate of return on investment, 232t
formal money markets, 289, 291–3
Foster, J., 28b
Foster, Greer, Thorbecke Index, 28b
France, 20t, 254, 352, 400
Frank, Andre Gunder, 119
free trade areas, defined, 357
free-rider problem, 125-6
fungicides, 284, 285b
Future Harvest centers, 247–9
futures markets "exchange", 361–2

G

Gates, Bill and Melinda, 401
Gates Foundation, 424
GATT = General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade
Gaud, William S., 236b
GDP = Gross Domestic Product
gender roles, 185–202
  determinants of, 195–201
  in traditional farming, 141–2
General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade (GATT), 352–4, 355
genetic engineering, 243
Germany, 71, 72t, 254, 328b
Ghana, 316, 340–1
gini coefficients, 262
global trade war, 354
globalization, 11–12
GNI = Gross National Income
GNP = Gross National Product
goat (s), 139, 152–3
goiter, 34
goods, inferior, normal, superior, 52
governance assistance, 400
government role in marketing, 316–8
  information, 317–8
  infrastructure, 317
  regulations, 318
grains, food crops, 8, 153, 333, 407
Grameen Bank of Bangladesh, 292, 294f, 295
grants, foreign assistance, 397
Great Britain, see Britain
Great Depression, 316b
Greece, 20t
green
  -house gas emissions, 181
  manuring, 209
  revolution, 22b, 108b, 236b, 247, 424b
Greer, J., 28b
Gross
  Domestic Product (GDP), 15, 83b, 332, 366–7, 367f
  National Income (GNI), 16f, 90f, 91f
  National Product (GNP), 15, 383, 400
groundnuts, 133b, 137, 249t, 344t
growth
  constraints to, 114
  contemporary theory, 120–1
  determinant of, 227–8
  stages, in economies, 114-5
  sources of, 100–9, 101b, 117
  strategies, 112–26
  technology driven, 116
  theory, 120–7
Guatemala, 174, 180, 313, 420f
Guinea, 72t

H

Haiti, 396t, 367
Hamilton, Sarah, 194b
Harrod, Roy, 116
Harrod-Domar model, 116
Harrod-Domar-Chenery model, 116
harvest, 133b, 134
  -labor institutional systems, 217b
Hayami, Yujiro, 207
HDI = Human Development Index
health, 8–10, 37–8, 284
  reproductive, 400
Heckscher-Ohlin-Samuelson Theory, 336b
hedging, 362
Heifer International, 401
herbicides, 284
herding, nomadic, 164
hides, livestock role in providing, 139
Hima, pastoral nomads, 150
Himalayas, 164
HIPC = Enhanced Heavily Indebted Poor Country (debt relief initiative)
history of food aid, 407–8
HIV/AIDS, 10, 38, 77, 195, 200, 400, 415
homogeneity condition, 55–6
Honduras, 11f, 13, 188, 372, 396t, 398b
horticultural products demand, marketing, 320, 320b
Hossain, Mahabub, 317
Household Responsibility System, 267
HPI = Human Poverty Index

Human
Development Index(HDI), 15, 27
Poverty Index (HPI), 17, 27
human capital, 102, 106–7, 185–202, 380
Hungary, 72t
Hunger Project, The, 80
Hunger Task Force, 428
hunger, 4–6, 8, 25–43, 418f, 423
hunter-gatherer societies, 22b
Hurricane Mitch, 13

I

IARCs = International Agricultural Research Centers, 246–9, 251, 257
IBRD = International Bank for Recon struction and Development, 402
ICARDA = International Center for Agricultural Research in Dryland Areas, 294t
ICRISAT = International Crops Research Institute for the Semi-Arid Tropics, 249t
IDA = International Development Association, 402
IFAD = International Fund for Agricultural Development, 292
IFC = International Finance Corporation, 402
IFPRI = International Food Policy Research Institute, 41, 249t, 335
IITA = International Institute of Tropical Agriculture, 239b
ILRA = International Livestock Research Institute, 249t
IMF = International Monetary Fund, 350, 361, 386, 387b, 389, 402
immunization efforts, 422
import
restrictions, 338, 385
substitution strategy,123, 332, 335
incentives, government-sponsored, 181
income, 15
effect, 53
elasticity of demand, 49–52, 51t, 60t
fluctuations, 27, 39
from agriculture, 90
transfer programs, 308, 309
Index, level of living, 15
India, 13, 19, 30, 38, 51t, 71, 71t, 79, 117, 139, 164, 188, 201, 228, 229t, 234, 236b, 254, 266, 277, 284, 306t, 314t, 332, 339, 340, 396t, 398b, 423
Indian ocean, 8
indirect pricing policies, 308
Indonesia, 13, 20t, 51t, 71t, 79, 167, 198, 201, 228, 229t, 314t, 333, 334t, 337, 372, 396t
induced
innovation theory, 212–6, 282, 419
implications, 219–21, 220f
technical, 212–4, 213f
institutional change, 214–6, 419
in Java, 217b
industrial revolution, 22b, 328b
inelastic demand
curve, 345
defined, 53
inequality defined, 17b
inferior goods, 52
inflation, 367–8, 369, 370b
information
access to, 313
government provision of, 317–8
lack of for marketing, 312
infrastructure
communications, 313–5
deficiencies, 312
government role, 316–8
storage, 313
innovation, 108b
possibilities curve, 212, 213f
input(s), 281–98
animal, 285–6
high payoff, 211
importance of, 281–9
manufatured, 282–7
mechanical, 286
markets, 281–97, 287–8
response curve, 95–6, 96f, 97f
subsidies, 287, 345
insecticides, 284
instability, food price, 7
institutional change, 239–40, 350, 424–5
insurance, 27, 137, 289
Integrated Pest Management, 176, 194b, 285, 285b
Intellectual Property Rights, 121, 240–1, 355
intensification, 210
intensive
annual crops, 151f, 152–3
livestock, 151f, 153
intercropping, 137

interest rates, 373–4
  adjustable, 382
  negative real rates, 374
  rural rates, 289–93
International
  Agricultural Trade, Development, and Assistance Act of 1954 (P.L. 480), 407, 408, 409b
  Agricultural Research Centers (IARC), 246-9, 251, 257
  Bank for Reconstruction and Development (IBRD), 402
  Center for Agricultural Research in Dryland Areas (ICARDA), 249t
  Center for Insect Physiology and Ecology, 248
  Center for Maize and Wheat Improvement(CIMMYT), 247, 249t
  Center for Tropical Agriculture (CIAT), 239b, 249t
  Centre for the Settlement of Investment Disputes, 402
  Committee of the Red Cross, 401
  Crops Research Institute for the Semi-Arid Tropics (ICRISAT), 249t
  Development Association (IDA), 402
  Finance Corporation (IFC), 402
  Food Policy Research Institute (IFPRI), 41, 249t, 335
  Fund for Agricultural Development (IFAD), 292
  Institute for Tropical Agriculture (IITA), 239b, 249t
  Livestock Research Institute (ILRI), 249t
  Monetary Fund (IMF), 350, 361, 386 387b, 389, 402
  Rice Research Institute (IRRI), 205f, 247, 249t
  Water Management Institute (IWWI), 249t
international
  agricultural research centers, 246–9, 248f, 249t
  institutions, laws, 222, 224
  trade, see trade
investment, 104, 395–8
  foreign direct (FDI), 395
  portfolio, 395
IPGRI, see Biodiversity
IPM = Integrated Pest Management
IPR = Intellectual Property Rights
IR-8 = rice variety, 247, 424b
Iraq, 166, 395, 396t, 409
iron
  deficiency, 34
  deficiency anemia, 32t
IRRI = International Rice Research Institute
irrigation, 21, 166, 176, 209, 238, 249t, 283, 369, 424b
Islam, -ic, 192
iso-cost line, 158
iso-revenue line, 158
isoquant (curve), 96, 97f, 155–8
Israel, 264, 265f, 395, 396t
Italy, 20t
IWWI = International Water Management Institute

J

Japan, 20t, 71t, 214, 254, 270, 331, 343t, 371
Japan International Cooperation Agency (JICA), 399
Java, 164, 217b
JICA = Japan International Cooperation Agency
Johnston, Bruce F., 47
Jordan, 396t
Jorgenson, Dale, 116

K

Kampuchea (Cambodia), 30, 396t, 408
Katmandu, Nepal, 13f
Kefa Village, Zambia, 133–4b
Kenya, 51t, 139f, 150, 177f, 248, 314t
kibbutzim, 264, 265f
knowledge
  as a public good, 121
  as a source of growth, 177
Korea, 164
  see North Korea, South Korea
kwashiorkor, 34
Kyoto Protocol, 180–1

L

labor
  casual vs permanent, 276–7
  compared to animal power, 157
  demand for, 81, 116–9
  dual-economy model, 116–9

labor, *continued*
exchange, 137
-intensive consumer goods, 22
-land ratios (U.S., Japan), 214
marginal cost of, 118
-surplus , 116-9, 117f
markets, 260–78, 374–5
seasonality, 276
Laguna de Tigre national park, 174
Lancaster House Agreements, 272b
land, 260–78
access to, 261, 269–70
banks, 274
commissions, 268b
markets, 260–78
ownership, 149, 261–5
reform, 198, 260–7, 267–75, 278
defined, 261
results of, 271–4, 272b
rights, 261
supply, fixed, 92
tenure, 260–7
reform, 265–7
systems, 21, 154–5, 261–5
use patterns, 175
Landsburg, Steven, 112, 113
latifundia, 263
Latin America, 4, 5, 6f, 52, 138, 150, 175, 188, 192, 198, 201, 208, 236b, 239b, 246, 261, 286, 342, 343t, 357, 378, 381, 382, 383, 385–6, 388–9, 390, 402, 405, 415, 423
"La Violencia", 276b
Law 4 (1973), Law 135 (1961), Law 200 (1936), 276b
law of
demand, 48–9
diminishing returns, 97–8, 113
LDC = less-developed countries, 338, 380
leading sectors, 115
leases, fixed payment, 216
Lesotho, 195
less-developed countries (LDC), 338, 382, 390
level-of-living index, 15
Lewis, W. Arthur, 116
licenses, export and import, 345
life expectancy, 15
List, Frederick, 114-5
livestock, 192, 247, 285, 423
impacts on environment, 140–1
livestock, *continued*
management systems, 22b
revolution, 140
roles of, 138–41
systems, changes in, 140–1, 152–3
lobbying, 342, 376–7
location theory, 210
Lome Convention, 361
Loomis, Robert S., 146
Lucas, Robert, 120
Lutheran World Relief, 401

M

macroeconomy, 366–8, 367f
institutions, 222, 420–1
policies, 365–75, 376–8
prices, 370–5
relationships, 378–90
stabilization, 402
Madagascar, 168, 367
Maddison, Angus, 89
maize, 6, 7f, 51t, 60, 61, 133b, 137, 164, 247, 249t, 257, 282, 306t, 307, 314t, 344t, 424b
rate of return on investment, 232t
malaria, 10, 38, 283, 424
Malawi, 72t, 191, 277, 314t
Malaysia, 51t, 332, 333, 334t
Mali, 20t, 72t, 340
malnutrition, 8, 25–43, 254
causes of, 36–9
health and, 37–8
measurement of, 34–6
Malthus, Thomas, 113
marasmus, 34
Marginal Rate of Technical Substitution (MRTS), 157–8
marginal
cost curve, 230
lands, farming of, 12
output gain, 97–8
product, 95, 97–9, 99f, 118
Markandaya, Kamala, 25, 184
marker-assisted breeding, 243, 246
market, -ing
agencies, boards, 340
-based interventions, 361–2
deficiencies, failures, 172, 311–5
distortions, govenrment-induced, 312
functions, 311–15, 312f
government role in, 316–8

market, -ing, *continued*
organizations, 315
supply, defined, 61
systems, 311–15
transformation, 319–20
marketing and planning committees, (MPCs), Nepal, 320b
Marx, Karl, 114-5
Marxist perspective, 119
Masai, pastoral nomads, 150
Masefield, G. B., 149–50
Mauritania, 361, 367
MDC = more developed countries, 338
MDRI = Mulltilateral Debt Relief Initiative
measles, 37–8
meat, 306t, 333
demand, 142
provided by livestock, 139, 153
mechanical innovation, 108b
Mellor, John W., 47, 131
mercantilism, 113-4, 328b
meta project function, 214
methane digesters, 139
Mexico, 20t, 51t, 166, 188, 201, 247, 271, 305, 306t, 319, 332, 356, 382, 385, 386, 388, 398b
City, 83b
MFIs = Micro-finance institutions, 295
microbial degradation research, 243
microcredit, 292–3
micro-finance, 292–3, 295–6, 398b, 401
Middle East, 22b, 246, 284, 405
MIGA = Multilateral Investment Guarantee Assoociation
migration
causes of, 81–2
consequences of, 82–4
rural-to-urban, 81–4, 83b
seasonal, 134–5, 135b
milk
demand, 142
provided by livestock, 139, 153
Mill, John Stuart, 113
millet, 51t, 150, 247
minifundia, 263
minimum wage legislation, 374–5
mixed farming, 151f, 152–3
Moldova, 20t, 398b
monetary
measures 27
policy, 368–70
money
-markets, rural, 289–93
supply, 370b
Mongolia, 150
monoclonal antibodies research, 243
monopoly rights, 335
monopsonistic power, 310
Morocco, 306t
mortality
child, 8, 9f
infant, 8, 15
MPCs = marketing and planning committees, Nepal, 320b
MRTS = Marginal Rate of Technical Substitution
Mugabe, Robert, 272b
Multilateral
Debt Relief Initiative (MDRI), 386
Investment Guarantee Assoociation (MIGA), 402
multi-
cropping, 154b
lateral lending agencies, 386
multiple exchange rate system, 341–2
multiplier effects, 288
Myanmar, 167

N

NAFTA = North American Free Trade Area
National
Agricultural Research Institution, Ecuador, 233b
Integration Program, 179b
national savings, 116
natural
disaster, 31b
monopolies, 126
natural resource(s), 103–4
degradation, 15, 170–6
environmental influences on, 103–4
Near East, 6f, 166
negative externalities, 126
Nepal, 13f, 129, 135b, 139, 164, 167f, 191f, 192, 320b
Netherlands, 400
New International Economic Order (NIEO), 353, 354, 357
New Zealand, 343t
NGO = non-governmental organization
Nicaragua, 396t

NIEO = New International Economic Order
Niger, 72t
Nigeria, 51t, 71t, 167, 228, 229t, 314t, 316b, 341, 386, 395, 396t, 397
nitrogen fertilizers, 283
Nobel Peace Prize, 236b
non-governmental organization (NGO), 400, 401, 412
normal goods, 52
North
  America, 14, 71, 114, 208
  Korea, 30–1, 42, 409
North American Free Trade Area (NAFTA), 357–8
nutritional
  assessment, 35–6, 37f
  education, 42
  implications of ag research, 237–8

O

ODA = Official Development Assistance, 397–8, 400, 412
OECD = Organization for Economic Cooperation and Development, 397
OECD, Development Assistance Committee of, 397
Official Development Assistance (ODA), 397–8, 400, 412
oil, 103, 306t, 344t, 386
OPEC = Organization of Petroleum Exporting Countries, 400
Oportunidades (Mexico), 201
opportunity cost, 329
optimality, economic, 95
options markets, 361
oral rehydration therapy, 42
Organization for Economic Cooperation and Development (OECD), 397, 400
Organization of Petroleum Exporting Countries (OPEC), 400
organized money markets, 289, 291–3
output levels, 98–100
overgrazing, 12, 152, 170
overvalued currency, 341
Oxfam, 401

P

Pacific, 142, 253t, 361
Pakistan, 71t, 166, 201, 236b, 284, 306t, 396t
Pan-American Agricultural School, 188
Papua New Guinea, 198
Paraguayan Chaco, 264
parastatal(s), 315
  marketing agencies, 340
Pardey, Philip G., 69
Paris Club, 386, 387b, 388, 421
pastoral nomadism, 150–2
patents, 121, 241, 355
Payments for Environmental Services (PES), 181
PBRs = Plant Breeders' Rights
Peace Corps, 425
peanuts, 153, 358, 361
Pearson, Scott R., 3
peas, 153, 249t
peasant associations, 274
perennial crops, 153
permanent labor, 276–7
Peru, 87, 257f, 271, 385, 387, 396t
PES = Payments for Environmental Services
pesticides, 12, 170, 178f, 194b, 282,284–5
  health problems from, 284
  pollution, 238
  resistance to, 170, 284
philanthropy, 401
Philippines, 20t, 51t, 178f, 188, 194b, 205f, 247, 264, 271, 277, 306t, 314t, 333, 334t, 383, 396t, 397, 398b
phosphate(s), 283
P.L. (Public Law) 480, 407–8, 409b
Plant Breeders' Rights (PBRs), 240, 241
plant genetic material, 249t
Poland, 72t
political
  power shifts, 303
  rents, defined, 376
  self-interest, 394
  system, effect on agriculture, 155
pollution
  chemical, 170
population, 69–86, 400
  distribution of, 70–2
  growth, 10, 69–76, 100–1
  projections, 80, 80f
portfolio investment, 395
Portugal, 71, 72t
Posada, Rafael T., 235
positive externalities, 126
potash, 283

potatoe(s), 53, 132, 201f, 247, 249t, 285b
pests of, 285b
potatoes, sweet, 133b, 137, 249t
poverty, 10, 17b, 25–43, 78, 385
alleviation of , 39–43, 127
causes of, 36–9
chronic, 27–9
defined, 17b, 26, 28
index, 28b
lending approach, 295–6
measurement of, 17b, 27, 28b
monetary indices of, 28b
-related problems, 4–5
rural, 29
transitory, 27–9
traps, 29
power, provided by livestock, 141
PPF = Production Possibilities Frontier
Prebish, Raul, 119
pressure groups, 376–7
price
ceilings or floors, 303–4, 304f
efficiency, 100
elasticity of demand, 52–4, 91–2
intervention, 302–9
policy, 57b, 155
pricing policies, 301–11
effects of, 309–11
influences on, 301–2
Production Possibilities Frontier (PPF), 158
production
choices, 95–100
function, defined, 95
function(s), 95–7, 96f, 97f, 101b
productivity, 91, 118, 185
effect, 230
growth rate, 252
improvements, 228–31
input, 229f
measures of, 136
program food aid, 409–10
PROGRESA program, 201
project food aid, 410
property rights, 172, 178, 275
protectionism, 119–20, 328b
protein
animal, 423
deficiency, 32t
Public Law 480, 407
public
goods, 125
public, *continued*
marketing agencies, 340
sanitation, 10
pulses, 51t, 153
pumpkins, 133b
purchased inputs, 155

Q

quota(s)
quantitative restrictions, 351
rights, 345
trade, 338, 341, 359

R

random migration, 150
Ranis, Gustav, 116
rationality, 136–7
rationing, 305
Raup, Philip M., 260
Reardon, Thomas, 319, 320
recession, 385, 390
recombinant DNA research, 243
redistribution of land, 270–4
regional
development banks, 402
disparities, 234–5
relative price of food, 6
remittances, 395–7, 398b
research, agricultural, 227–58
activities in Ecuador, 233b
biological and soils, 240
categories of, 241–3
effects
distributional, 231-–38
nutritional, 231–38
impacts, 228–31
mechancal/chemical, 240
outputs, 227
public vs private, 240
results, 227–8, 237–8
resource
sustainability, 161–83
use, 161–83
respiratory diseases, 10
results of aid, 404–5
Ricardo, David, 113-4, 329
rice, 6, 7f, 41, 51t, 57b, 61, 87, 142, 150, 153, 208, 210, 234, 247, 249t, 257, 303, 306t, 314t, 317, 423
African variety, 228
fertilizer-responsive varieties, 217b

rice, *continued*
harvesting systems, 217b
rate of return, 232t
research program benefits, 235
semi-dwarf, 236b
ripper tiller, Tanzania, 196b
risk, 12–3, 136–7, 226–7, 291
Robinson, Sherman, 349
Rockefeller Foundation, 247, 401
Romania, 72t, 268b
Romer, Paul, 120
roots and tubers, 51t, 150, 153, 249t, 333
Rosegrant, Mark W., 69
Rostow, Walt W., 115
rotational grazing, 177f
rubber, 333, 344t
ruminants, 153
run-off, caused by livestock, 141
Runge, C. Ford, 69
rural
finance, 289–97
labor markets, 278
rural-to-urban migration, 81–4
causes of, 81–2
consequences of, 82–4
Russia, 71t, 72t, 372, 388
Ruttan, Vernon W., 207
rye, 22b

S

Sachs, Jeffrey, 112, 113, 393
safety nets, 40
Sahel, The, 51t, 164, 166, 284, 424
salinity, salinization, 166, 283
sanitary, -tation, 10, 41–2, 355
and phyto-sanitary measures (SPS), 355
savage growth stage, 114
savings (credit source), 289
schistosomiasis, 283
school fees, 189
schooling, years of, 15
Schramm, Gunter, 161
Schultz, Theodore W., 136, 211, 227
Scobie, Grant M., 235
seasonality, 134–5, 276
seed(s) as input, 282–3, 2287
Senauer, Benjamin, 24, 69
Senegal, 361
Serbia, 72t
settled agriculture, 151f, 152–3, 195
share lease, tenure, 216, 264
sharecropping, 265b, 277
sheep (ruminant), 139, 153, 249t
shifting cultivation, 150, 151f, 195
short
fallow cultivation, 154b
leases, 175
Schultz, Theodore W., 227
siltation, 162–4
caused by livestock, 141
Singapore, 333, 334t
Singer, Hans, 119
slash and burn cultivation, 150
Smartwood, 180
Smith, Adam, 106, 113
social
institutions, 102
justice, 197–9
safety nets, 27, 29
science research, 223
soil
degradation, 162–4
erosion, 12, 150, 162–4, 167f
caused by livestock, 141
Solow, Robert, 116, 120
Solow model of development, 120, 127
Somalia, 8, 396t
sorghum, 150, 153, 193b, 249t, 314t, 344t
Soros, George, 401
South
Africa, 278, 319
America, 34, 71, 166, 194b, 208, 319, 358
Asia, 148, 166
Korea (Republic of), 20t, 51t, 266, 270, 332, 333, 334t, 372, 396t, 399
Vietnam, 408
Soviet Union, 164, 264, 270, 408
soybeans, 60, 61, 333
specialization, 92, 105–6
Spriggs, John, 317
SPS = sanitary and phyto-sanitary measures, 355
Sri Lanka, 13, 40–1, 79, 198, 306t
Staatz, John M., 24
STABEX, 361
stabilization, 345–6
stages of development, 114-5
State Bank of Bangladesh, 292
state farms, 266b
structural adjustment, 342, 378
strucuralist perspective, 119–20, 329

subject-matter specialists (extension), 255
Sub-Saharan Africa, 4, 5, 8, 10, 28b, 30, 51t, 71, 142, 148, 169, 195, 229, 253t, 286, 313, 316b, 381–2, 385, 390, 395, 415, 423
subsidized
  credit, effects of, 294–5
  irrigation water, 175
subsidy, -ies, 345, 369
  fertilizer, 287
  food, 305
  price, 304, 339
subsistence family farms, 262
substitutes, defined, 53
substitution effect, 53
Sudan, 306t, 361, 396t, 409
sugar, 41, 57b, 192, 306t, 331, 333, 338, 358, 359
sugarcane, 60, 140, 153, 175, 335
superior goods, 52
supermarkets, growth of, 321
supply
  curve, 61, 62f, 63f
  interactions with demand, 61–5
  shifts (food), 7
  -side factor, 92
surplus labor model, 116-9
sustainable development, defined, 14
sustainability, 161–82
Swaziland, 10, 1138
sweet potatoes, 133b, 137
Syria, 166

T

T&V system, 255
  = training and visit system
Taiwan, 138, 248, 266, 270, 396t
Tajikistan, 398, 399
Tanzania, 150, 167, 196b, 198, 314t, 340, 341, 361
tariff(s), e338, 341, 354, 357, 359
taxes, taxation
  collection, 368–9
  export, 155, 307, 308f, 341–5, 343t
  indirect, 341
tea, 41, 306t, 333, 341
technological
  innovation theory, 120-1
  progress, 105, 417–20
telecommunications, 313–5
tenancy, tenant farmers, 234, 264–5, 266b
testing research, 243, 252
Thailand, 13, 20t, 51t, 57b, 141f, 208, 254, 306t, 371, 388
Thorbecke, E., 28b
Tigris River basin, 166
Timmer, C. Peter, 3, 301, 319, 320
Togo, 340
total product curve, 95
trade, 105–6, 327–46
  agreements, 124, 357–8
  barriers, 255, 349–511, 354
  deficit, 371
  developing country experience, 332–6
  effects, 335, 336b
  external constraints to, 351–8
  historical roots of, 328b
  impediments, 227–46
  liberalization, 356, 358
  need for, 327–8
  negotiations, 352–5, 356
  policy, 331–2
  protectionism, 119-20
  quotas, 359
  restrictions, 329–32, 338–42, 344–5
  terms of, 119–20, 358
trademarks, 240
trading blocs, 353
traditional agriculture, farms, 131–43
  size of, 132–4
Tragedy of the Commons, 152
training and visit system (T&V), 255
transaction costs, 113-21, 126, 216–24, 267, 291–3, 419
  defined, 218
transferability of research, 250
transformation, economic, 89–95
  causes of, 90–2
Transforming Traditional Agriculture, 211
transgenics
  crops, 245
  research, 243
transparency in government, 350
tree crops, 232t, 333
tropical pastures, 249t
Truman, President Harry S., 398–9
Turkey, 51t, 164, 166, 201, 372, 396t
Turner, Ted, 401
Twain, Mark, 14
two-gap model of development, 116

U
Uganda, 20t, 72t, 150
UK Department for International Development (DFID), 399
Ukraine, 72t
UNCTAD = United Nations Conference on Trade and Development
UNDP = United Nations Development Program
unemployment, 116–9
unit elastic, defined, 52
United Kingdom, see Britain
United Nations, 353
  agencies for assistance, 403b
  Children's Fund (UNICEF), 403b
  Conference on Trade and Development (UNCTAD), 353, 354, 357
  Development Program (UNDP), 248, 403b
  Education, Scientific, and Cultural Organization (UNESCO), 403b
  Fund for Population Activities (UNFPA), 403b
  Millenium Goals, 400
United States (U.S.), 20t, 28b, 60, 71t, 74f, 93f, 94, 103, 214, 254, 328b, 331, 333, 339, 343t, 352, 353b, 356, 371, 371, 379, 380, 389, 394–5, 408, 425
  Agency for International Development (USAID), 197, 236b, 285b, 399
  Congress, 408
  Department of Agriculture (USDA), 28b
  farm products, 385
  Federal Reserve, 390
urbanization, 10, 80–4
Uruguay, 251
Uruguay Round, 353, 354–5
USAID = United States Agency for International Development

V
vegetable, -s, 133b, 142, 153, 313, 333, 335, 338, 346
  marketing in Nepal, 320b
Venezuela, 386
Vietnam, 337, 396t, 408
village agent model, 255
Vitamin A, 41
  deficiency, 32t, 34
von Braun, Joachim, 415

W
wage
  employment, 266b
  minimum, 374–5
  rates, 117–18, 374–5
Wallerstein, Immanuel, 119
WARDA, see Africa Rice
Warford, Jeremy J., 161
water, 283–4
  management, 211, 283
  quality, 10
  supplies, 12
Wealth of Nations, The, 106
weed control, 285, 424b
weeding, 133b, 134
WFP = World Food Programme
wheat, 6, 7f, 22b, 51t, 153, 164, 191f, 211, 232t, 234, 247, 249t, 251, 257, 305, 306t, 314t, 325, 333, 339, 344t, 359, 424b
WHO = World Health Organization
wireless communications, 313–15
women
  education for, 38
  invisibility of, 192–5
  opportunities for, 79
World
  Agroforestry, 249t
  Bank, 28b, 36, 197 , 255, 351, 386, 402
  Commission on Environment and Development, 14
  Fish Center, 249t
  Food Programme (WFP), 403b
  Health Organization (WHO), 10, 32, 38, 403b, 421
  Trade Organization (WTO), 339, 350, 352, 353, 355–7, 388
  Vegetable Center, 248
  Vision International, 401
World War I, 328b
World War II, 270, 316b, 352, 378, 398
Wortman, Sterling, 281

X

Y
Yellow River basin, China, 164
Yemen, 72t

Z
Zambia, 133–4b, 167, 3006t
Zamorano, Honduras, 188
Zimbabwe, 180, 272b, 277, 278